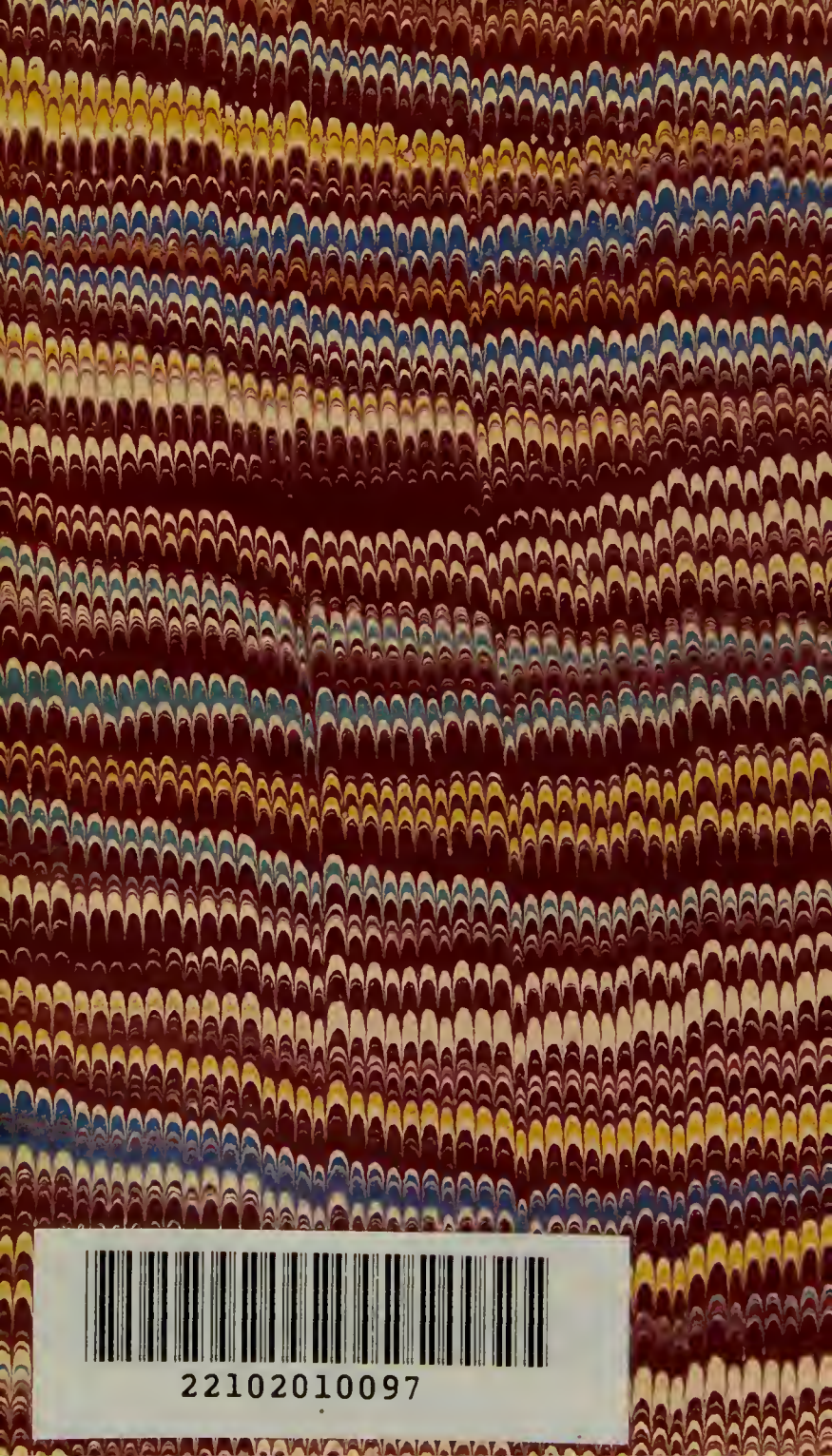
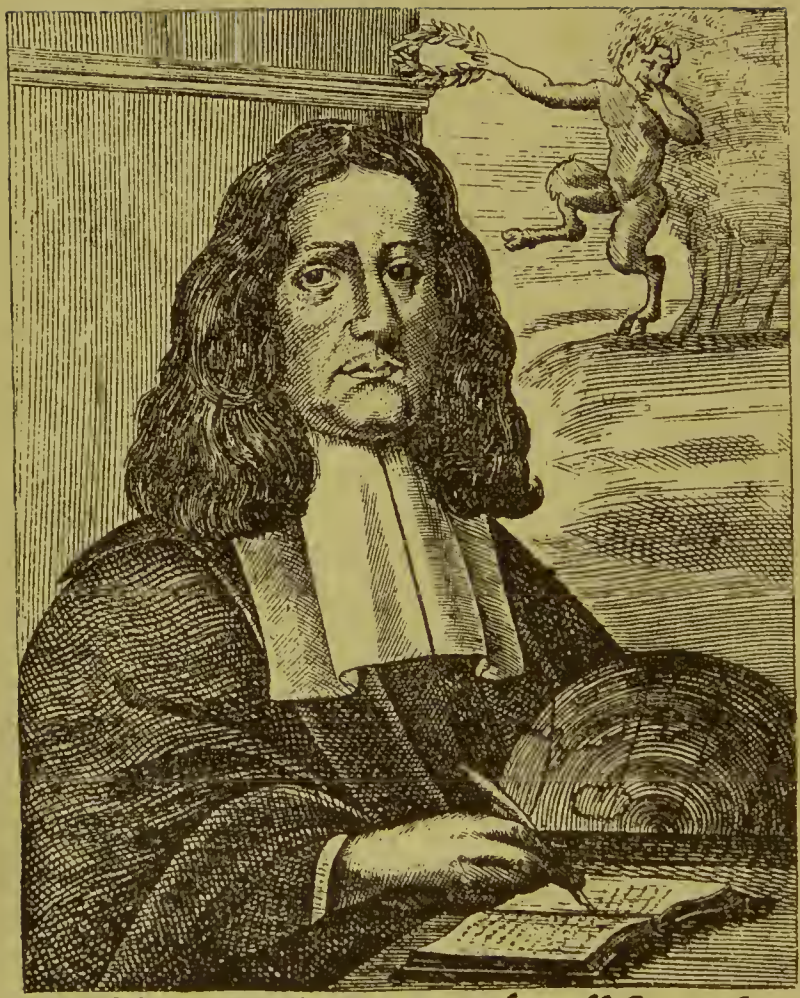

22102010097



ZPB.41 (2)

4101
357

HEAD (Richard) & KIRKMAN (Franc



The Globe's thy Study e; for thy boundleſs mind
In a leſs limit cannot be confind.
Gazing, I here admire: thy very Lookes
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.
He that Shall Scan thy face, may judge by it,
Thou haſt an Head peece that is throngd with wit
I. F

THE

English Rogue:

DESCRIBED,

IN THE

LIFE

OF

MERITON LATROON,

A Witty Extravagant.

Being a Compleat Hiſtory of the

MOST

Eminent Cheats

OF

BOTH SEXES.

Read, *but don't* Practice: *for the Author findes,*
They which live Honeſt *have moſt quiet mindes.*

Dixero ſi quid forte jocoſius hoc mihi juris
Cum & eniâ dalis.

London, Printed for Henry Marſh, at the Princes Arms in Chancery-Lane. 1665.

1874

ZPB.41(2)

WELLCOME
HISTORICAL
MEDICAL
LIBRARY

THE

PREFACE.

Beloved Country-men,

HAd I not more reſpect to my Countries good in general, than any private intereſt of mine own, I ſhould not have introduc'd my *Friend* upon the common Theatre of the World, to act the part of a *Rogue* in the Publick view of all. *Rogue!* did I call him? I ſhould recal that word, ſince his Actions were attended more with Witty Conceits, then Life-deſtroying Stratagems. It is confeſt, the whole bent of his mind tended to little elſe then *Exorbitancy;* and *Neceſſity* frequently compelled him to perpetrate *Villany*: And no wonder, ſince he lived in the infectious Air of the worſt of moſt *Licentious*

Times. But ſtill I blame my ſelf for ſtigmatizing him with ſuch an *Opprobrious Title*, ſince in the declination of his days, the conſideration of his former *Wicked Courſes* hath wrought (I have ſo much charity for him to believe it) in him cordial contrition, and unfeigned repentance: and the truth of it is, Man ſhould be regarded not for what he *was*, but what he *is*.

Since his *Reformation*, I have taken very great delight in his Converſation, and never went from him but with great ſatisfaction in the *Ingenious Relation* of the tranſactions of his youthful days: And frequently revolving them in my mind, Reaſon ſuggeſted to me, the *Hiſtory of his Life* could not but be as profitable as pleaſant, if made *publick*. For herein you may ſee Vice pourtrayed in her own proper ſhape, the uglineſs whereof (her *Vizard-Maſk* being remov'd) cannot but cauſe in her (*quondam*) Adorers, a *loathing* inſtead of *loving*. Wherefore, with my *Friends* free conſent, and being inſtigated thereunto by many *perſons* inferiour to few, either for *Birth*, *Education*, or *Natural Parts*, I attempted this *Eſſay*.

If any be ſo curious to know what the (*Actors* you have in the Title) *Authors name is*, let me crave his pardon for his concealment, and anſwer him with *Plutarch* to an inquiſitive Fellow, *Quum vides velatum, quid inquiris in rem abſconditam?*

It was therefore covered, becauſe he ſhould not know what was in it. It is enough that the *Actor* hath ſhown himſelf willing to declare *freely*, and without *mincing* the *truth* of what he hath done, without *knowing* who writ it; if the *Contents* ſhall as well *pleaſe* as admoniſh, no matter what I'm call'd. But if you are ſo deſirous to know what the *Writer* is, I ſhall briefly inform your *curioſity:* But I doubt I have *undertaken* what I *cannot perform;* for if to know a mans ſelf be more then an *Herculean Labour*, then without doubt it is beyond the limits of my power to tell you what I am; neither can *any man* truly *know another*, unleſs he firſt *knows* himſelf.

For ſome few years, the World and I have had a great *falling out;* and though I have uſed all *probable* and *poſſible* means, we remain yet *unreconcil'd.*

My only comfort is, I have a ſmall treaſure in *Minerva's Tower*, by which I ſubſiſt; and by the benefit thereof, can walk abroad, not without taking *Obſervation* both from what I *hear* and *ſee;* and returning home, *Tam Aulæ vanitatem, quam Fori ambitionem ridere mecum ſoleo.* I can with *Democritus* laugh at the *Actions* of men, extracting *Wiſdome* from their *Follies*, and afterwards *laſh* them with a *Rod* of *Experience* made of their own *fond inconſiderateneſs.*

As for my part, I am onely a *Wiſe-acre*, (a Retort once put upon *Ben Johnſon*), for I have no *Acres of Land*. But therefore don't be ſo unadviſed, (as too many are of late) to regard not ſo much the *worth* of the Work, as the *dignity* of the Perſon. *Qui ſimiliter in legendos libros atq; in ſalutandos homines irruunt, non cogitantes quales, ſed quibus veſtibus induti ſint.* They mind not ſo much *what*, as *who writ* it; not the Quality of the *Thing*, but the Quality of the *Author*, and a *Perſon of Honour* (now adays) being ſet in the place of the *Writer*, makes the Book received with a general applauſe. Pardon as well my Satyrical as Cynical Humour. If any diſlike what I have writ, let them let it *alone*, or publiſh themſelves ſomething of a better *Compoſition*. I ſhall not value any ones Cenſure, for I have already *Antidoted* my ſelf againſt it, by my own *diſ-eſteem* I have hereof, I am ſo far from being *Opinionative*, that you cannot ſpeak worſe then what I judge of it.

Naſutus ſis uſq; licet, ſis deniq; Naſus,
Non potes in nugas dicere plura meas.

Bark, foul-mouth'd carping Momus, *if thou durſt:*
What I have writ is Bad; Now do thy worſt.

Thus you ſee, as I will not *arrogate*, ſo I ſhall not *derogate*: for as I am ſo many *Paraſanges*

after ſuch a one, yet I may be an *Ace* above thee, if thou art too *Cenſorious*.

But ſome may ſay, That this is but *actum agere*, a Collection out of *Guzman*, *Buſcon*, or ſome others that have writ upon this ſubject; *Crambem bis coctam apponere*; and that I have onely *ſqueez'd* their *Juice*, (adding ſome Ingredients of mine own) and afterwards *diſtill'd* it in the *Lymbeck* of my own *Head*. *Non habes confitentem reum*, I ne'er *extracted* from them *one ſingle drop of Spirit*. As if we could not produce an *Engliſh Rogue* of our *own*, without being beholding to other *Nations* for him. I will not ſay that he durſt vye with either an *Italian*, *Spaniſh*, or *French Rogue;* but having been *ſteept* for ſome years in an *Iriſh Bogg*, that hath added ſo much to his *Rogue-ſhips* perfection, that he out-did them all by out-doing one, and that was a *Scot*; I need not uſe the Epithite *Roguiſh*, ſince the very name proves it a *Tautologie*. If I have borrowed any thing, it was not from what paſt the *Preſs*; but what I have taken upon the *ſcore* in Diſcourſe, *&c.* I here repay with Uſury, but not in the ſame *Commodity*. *Etiamſi apparet unde ſumptum ſit, aliud tamen quam unde ſumptum ſit, apparet.* I have not done as the *Romans*, who robb'd the whole Univerſe to enrich their ill-ſited City; *Rome* I mean. I skimm'd not off the Cream of other mens Wits, nor Cropt the flowers

in others gardens to garniſh my own *Plots*; neither have I Larded my Lean Fancy with the Fat of others *Ingenious Labours;* but from the dictation of my own *Genius*, I have expreſt *quicquid in buccam venerit*, what came next, without much premeditation or ſtudy. Gramercy *Sack*, if happily I have hit the mark.

I am no *Aquæ potor*, an implacable *Enemy to Small Beer;* all the *Purchaſes* I can boaſt of, lies in *Wine*, which is by *Moderns* highly eſteemed for improving good Wits, *infuſing* Elogies and *Hyperbolical Exornations*, forming ſuch hard Words in the *Brain*, as ſhall, like *Aceſta's arrows*, catch fire as they flie. But I have *wandered* from that *common rode*, reſpecting more the *matter* then *words*. For my Stile is *plain* and *familiar*, rejecting bombaſt *Expreſſions*, thinking them moſt *happy* when moſt eaſily to be underſtood.

As for the *Matter* it ſelf, if it be faulty, or the *Method* rude and indigeſted, conſider, *Quod nihil perfectum vel ſingulari conſummatum induſtria*, No man can obſerve all things; neither is it to be imagined that all *Rogueries* can be perform'd by one man. Not but that when you have read him, you will find him *Notorious* enough.

Some men are not content to *commit Villany* themſelves, and boaſt of it too, but they

will rob others of that which they ſhould be *aſham'd* to own. In this there is little or no *Fiction*, I'll aſſure you; and there is no *Story* therein which doth not carry with it more then the bare *probability* of *truth*. Should I ſpeak much more, it is to be fear'd ſome will argue from hence, that I am conſcious to my ſelf of its various defects; and therefore I ſhall deſiſt from Apologizing for it, or my ſelf.

Senſible I am, that if ought be omitted or added, which the Reader likes or diſlikes, he will account me *Mancipium pancæ lectionis*, an Idiot, an inſipid Aſſe; *nullus ſum, vel Plagiarius*, a very Thief, and that I ſtole other mens Labours. Thus do I know I ſhall be vilified and undervalued even by ſuch, that are ſo far from being capable of judging of *Ingenuity*, that they know not how to write Orthographically ſix words of ſence in their own Mother-tongue. Yet I muſt confeſs, what is writ, is neither as I would, nor as it ſhould, it being uſher'd into the world as it was firſt written; whereas I ſhould have done with this, as a *Phyſitian* adviſed ſhould be done with *Lapis Lazuli*, to be waſht fifty times before uſed: had not immergent Affairs hindred me, I would have licked this *Cub* into a more *comely Form*. But ſince 'tis otherwiſe, I ſhall onely complain with *Ovid*:—

Cum relego ſcripſiſſe pudet, quia plurimo cerno,
Me quoq; ; quæ fuerant Judice digna lini.

All the favour that I ſhall deſire, is, That the *Reader* would not account the *Printers* literal or verbal Eſcapes *mine ;* and withal paſs a candid interpretation on each Line ; and I ſhall endeavour in a ſhort time to become more ſatisfactory, and ſtudy how I may be always ſerviceable to my Country.

When I read o'er what I have writ, then ſhame
O'erſpreads my face, becauſe it ſtabs my Name.

ON

THE ENGLISH ROGUE.

WHat others writ, was ta'en upon the Score;
Thou art in Re, *what they but* feign'd *before.*
They did but liſp, or worſe, *ſpeak through the Noſe:*
Thou haſt pronounc't, and liv'ſt in Verſe *and* Proſe.
Guzman, Lazaro, Buſcon, *and* Francion,
Till thou appear'dſt did ſhine as at high Noon.
Thy Book's now extant; thoſe that Judge of Wit,
Say, They and Rablais *too fall ſhort of it.*
How could't be otherwiſe, ſince 'twas thy fate,
To practiſe *what they did but* imitate.
We ſtand amaz'd at thy Epheſian Fire;
Such purchas'd Infamy *all muſt admire.*

N. D.

On the ensuing Subject.

What more Rogues ſtill? *I thought our happy Times*
Were freed from ſuch, as from Rebellious Crimes.
But ſuch will be: i' th' beſt of Times *we find*
The worſt of men; *the* Law *can't* lawleſs *bind.*
It might be ſo, ſince Nature thought it fit
To give ſome nought but Lands, *to others* Wit
But no Eſtates, *beſtowing ſuch a mind*
That can't within due limits *be confin'd.*
Hence Depredations, Thefts, *nay worſer facts,*
Cheating *&* Whoring, *with unheard-of acts:*
For Swimming *for their* Lives, *theſe* miſrules *think,*
'Tis better catch *at any thing, then* ſink.
Such was this Rogue, *eſteem'd the worſt of men;*
Liv'd by his Sword, *his* Pregnant Wit, *and* Pen.
In ſhort, Pray pardon if I ſpeak amiſs;
I never read ſo arch a Rogue *as* This.

A. B.

The Preface to the Reader.

WHen this piece was firſt publiſhed it was uſhered into the World with the uſual ceremony of a Preface, and that a large one, whereby the Authour intended and endeavoured to poſſeſs the Reader with a belief, that what was written was the Life of a *Witty Extravagant*, the Authours Friend and Acquaintance. This was the intent of the Writer, but the Readers could not be drawn to this belief, but in general concurred in this opinion, that it was the Life of the Authour, and notwithſtanding all that hath been ſaid to the contrary many ſtill continue in this opinion. Indeed the whole ſtory is ſo genuine and naturally deſcribed without any forcing or Romancing that all contained in it ſeems to be naturally true, and ſo i'le aſſure you it is, but not acted by any one ſingle perſon, much leſs by the Authour, who is well known to be of an inclination much different from the foul debaucheries of the Relations, & if the Readers had read the *Spaniſh* Rogue, *Guſman;* the *French* Rogue, *Francion;* and ſeveral other by Forraign Wits, and have upon examination found that the Authors were perſons of great eminency and honour, and that no part of their own writings were their own lives; they had happily changed their opinion of the Authour of this; but they holding this opinion cauſed him to deſiſt from proſecuting his ſtory in a Second Part, and he having

laid down the Cudgels I took them up, and my deſign in ſo doing was out of three conſiderations, the firſt and chiefeſt was to gain ready money, the ſecond I had an itch to gain ſome Reputation by being in Print, and thereby revenge my ſelf on ſome who had abuſed me, and whoſe actions I recited, and the third was to advantage the Reader and make him a gainer by acquainting him with my experiences. This were the reaſons for my engaging in the Second part, and the very ſame reaſon induced me to joyn with the Authour in compoſing and Writing a third and fourth Part, in which we have club'd ſo equally, and intermixt our ſtories ſo joyntly, that it is ſome difficulty for any at firſt ſight to diſtinguiſh what we particularly Writ and now having concluded the Preface, which ſhould never have been begun but that I had a blank page, and was unwilling to be ſo ill a husband for you, but that you ſhould have all poſſible content for your money, and withal to tell you that I would not have you as yet to expect any more parts of the book, for although a fifth and laſt part is deſign'd, yet i'le aſſure you there is never a ſtitch amiſs, nor one line Written of it, and if you deſire that, you muſt give me encouragement by your ſpeedy purchaſing of what is already Written ; and thereby you will ingage

Your Friend,

Francis Kirkman.

The Epiſtle to the Reader.

Gentlemen,

IT hath been too much the humour of late, for men rather to adventure on the Forreign crazy ſtilts of other mens inventions, then ſecurely walk on the ground-work of their own home-ſpun fancies. What I here preſent ye with, is an original in your own Mother-tongue; and yet I may not improperly call it a Tranſlation, drawn from the Black Copy of mens wicked actions; ſuch who ſpared the Devil the pains of courting them, by liſting themſelves Volunteers to ſerve under his Helliſh Banners; with ſome whereof I have heretofore been unhappily acquainted, and am not aſhamed to confeſs that I have been ſomewhat ſoiled by their vitious practices, but now I hope cleanſed in a great meaſure from thoſe impurities. Every man hath his peculiar guilt, proper to his conſtitution and age: and moſt have had (or will have) their exorbitant exiliencies, erronious ex-

curſions, which are leaſt dangerous when attended by Youthfulneſs.

This good uſe I hope the Reader will make with me of thoſe follies, that are ſo generally and too frequently committed every where, by declining the commiſſion of them (if not for the love of virtue, yet to avoid the diſmal effects of the moſt dangerous conſequences that continually accompany them.) And how ſhall any be able to do this, unleſs they make an introſpection into Vice? which they may do with little danger; for it is poſſible to injoy the Theorick, without making uſe of the Practick.

To ſave my Country-men the vaſt expence and charge of ſuch experimental Obſervations, I have here given an accompt of my readings, not in Books, but Men; which ſhould have been buried in ſilence, (fearing leſt its Title might reflect on my Name and Reputation) had not a publick good interceded for its publication, far beyond any private intereſt or reſpect.

When I undertook this Subject, I was

deſtitute of all thoſe Tools (Books, I mean) which divers pretended Artiſts make uſe of to form ſome Ill-contrived deſign. By which ye may underſtand, that as neceſſity forced me, ſo a generous reſolution commanded me to ſcorn a *Lituanian* humour or Cuſtom, to admit of *Adjutores tori*, helpers in a Marriage-bed, there to engender little better than a ſpurious iſſue. It is a legitimate off-ſpring, I'll aſſure yee, begot by one ſingly and ſoly, and a perſon that dares in ſpight of canker'd Malice ſubſcribe himſelf

A well-willer to his
Countries welfare,

Richard Head.

On the approvedly-ingenious, and his loving Friend, Mr. *Richard Head*, the Author of this book.

(writ,
WHat Guſman, Buſcon, Francion, Rablais
I onee applauded for moſt excellent wit:
But reading Thee, *and thy rich Fancies ſtore,*
I now condemne, what I admir'd before.
Heneeforth Tranſlations *paek away, be gone;*
No Rogue *ſo well writ, as our* Engliſh *one.*

M. Y.

To his reſpected Friend, the Author.

COuld I but reach Bayes *from* Apollo's Tree,
I'd make a Wreath *to* Crown *thy* Work *and* (Thee;
Which yet is needleſs, now I think upon't;
Thy own great Pen *deſervedly hath don't.*
Of all who write of Thee, *this is my Vogue,*
None ere writ better of, and is leſs Rogue.

W. W.

On his deſerving friend the Author.

FLetcher *the* King *of* Poets *of his age*,
In all his writings throughout every page
Made it his chiefeſt buſineſs to deſcribe
The various humours of the canting-Tribe:
His Beggars-buſh, *and other of his* Playes
Did gain to him (deſervedly) the Bayes.
Nature *and* Art *in* him *were both conjoyn'd;*
None could ere ſay that his Wit was purloyn'd:
Neither is thine: *he did all fancies fill,*
From Kings *and* Queens, *unto the* Maid o' th' Mill;
And ſo canſt thou, *for thou haſt here diſplay'd*
The Vices of each Sex, *and every* Trade.
Wherefore what he in his time wore, do thou
Put on, a Wreath *of* Bays *t' adorne thy* brow.

F. K.

TO THE

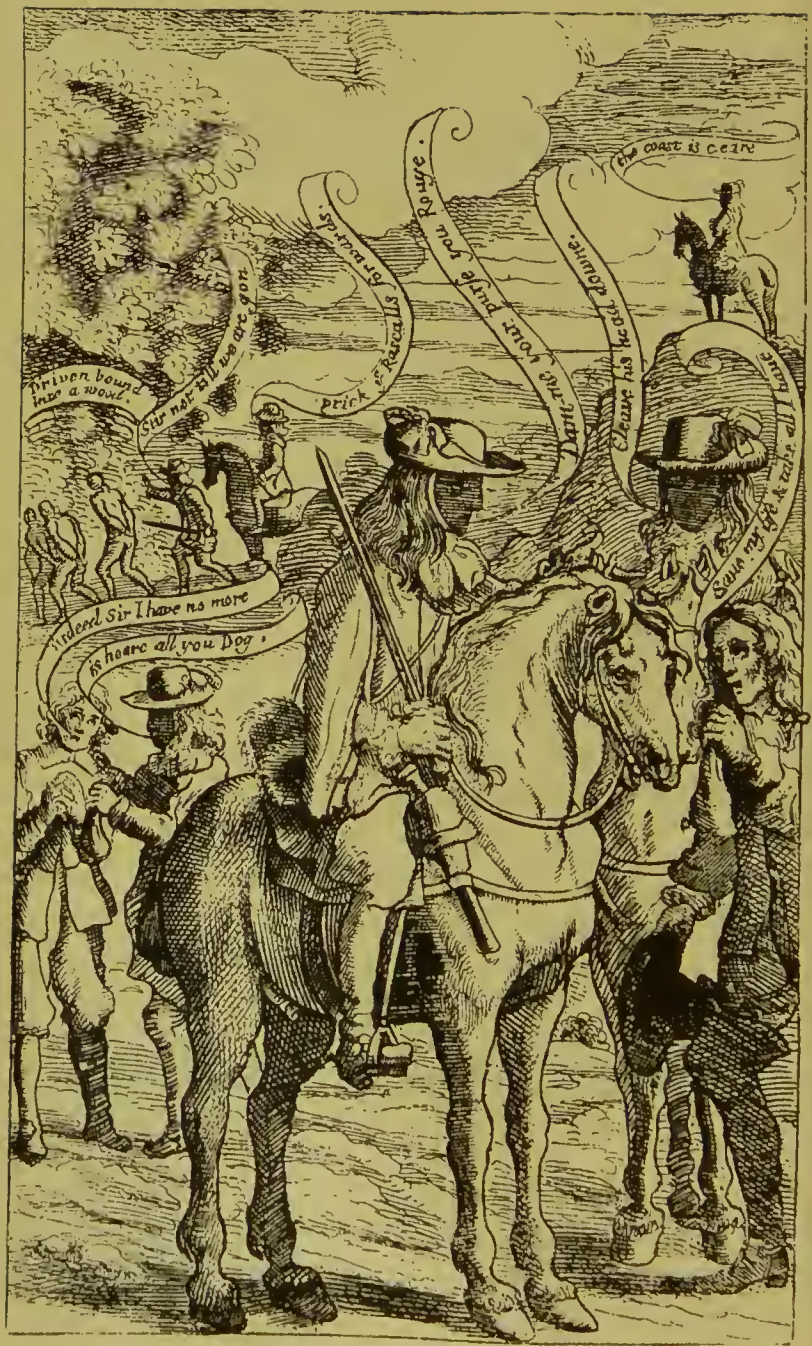
READER,

In ſtead of the

ERRATA.

This Rogue *hath had his faults, the Printers too;*

All men whilſt here do erre; *and ſo may* you.


Driven bound into a wood.
Sir nay Sir we are gon
prick on Rascalls forwards.
Hurra your purse Rougue.
Cleare as a bell.
the coast is cleare
Sawe my life I have
Indeed Sir I have no more
is heare all you Dog.

THE

ENGLISH ROGUE,

Deſcrib'd in the Life of a *Witty Extravagant.*

CHAP. I.

What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity. His miraculous Eſcape from the hands of Iriſh Rebels. His brother being at that very time murdered by the mercileſs hands of thoſe bloody Butchers.

AFter a long and ſtrict Inquiſition after my Fathers Pedegree, I could not find any of his Anceſtors bearing a *Coat*: ſurely length of time had *worn* it out. But if the *Gentle Craft* will any wayes ennoble his Family, I believe I could deduce ſeveral of his Name, Profeſſors of that laſting Art, even from *Criſpin.* My Fathers Father had by his continual labour in Huſbandry, arrived to the height of a Farmer, then the Head of his Kindred: ſtanding upon one of his own Mole-Hills, Ambition ſo ſwelled him, that he ſwore by his Plow-ſhare, that his eldeſt Son (my Father) ſhould be a *Scholhard*: and ſhould

learn ſo long, till he could read any printed or written hand; nay, and if occaſion ſhould ſerve, write a Bill or Bond.

It was never known that any of the Family could diſtinguiſh one letter from another, neither could they ſpeak above the reach of their Horſes underſtandings. Talk to them in any other Dialect but that of a *Bag-pudding of a Peck*, or *a piece of Beef*, (in which their teeth might ſtep wet ſhod) and a man were as good to have diſcourſed with them in *Arabick*. But let me not abuſe them; for ſome underſtood ſomething elſe that is to ſay, The Art of Whiſtling, Driving their Team and to ſhoo themſelves as well as their Horſes; how to lean methodically upon a Staff and through the holes of their Hat, tell what it is a Clock by the Sun.

The ſymmetricall proportion, ſweetneſs of features, and acuteneſs of my Fathers wit, were ſuch (though extracted out of this lump of *red* and *white marle*) that he was belov'd of all. As the lovelineſs of his perſon gain'd always an intereſt in Female hearts; ſo the quickneſs of apprehenſion and invention, and the acquired quaintneſs of his expreſſions; procured him the friendſhip of ſuch as converſed with him. A Gentleman at length taking notice of more then ordinary natural Parts in him, at his proper charge ſent him to School contrary to the deſire of his Father, who was able enough to maintain him at School; and to ſay the truth this Gentleman offered not my Father his patronage upon any charitable account, but that he might hearafter glory in the being the chief inſtrument of bringing up ſuch a fair promiſing Wit, which he queſtioned not with good cultivation would bring forth ſuch lovely fruit as would anſwer coſt, and

fully ſatisfie his expectation. Being admitted into the Grammar-School, by the ſtrength of his memory, to his Maſters great amazement, in a very ſhort time he had *Lillies Rules* by heart, out-ſtripping many that for years had been entred before him; his Maſter perceiving what a ſtupendious proficiency he had made, was very glad that this fair opportunity offered it ſelf, that he might be idle, and in order thereunto would frequently appoint my Father to be his Uſher or Deputy, when he intended to turn Bacchanalian, to drink, hunt, or whore, to which vices he was over-much addicted. My Father having now conquered in a manner the difficulties of that Schools learning began now to lay aſide his Book, and follow the ſteps of his vicious learned Maſter, the examples of a Superior proving oftentimes guides to inferior actions,

Regis ad exemplum——

Beſides his ſpringing Age (wherein the blood is hot and fervent) ſpur'd him on, and the natural diſpoſition of his mind, gave him wings to flye whither his unbounded, licentious, ſelf pleaſing will would direct. His Youth introduced him into all ſorts of vanity, and his Conſtitution of body, was the Mother of all his unlawful pleaſures. His Temperament gave Senſe preheminence above Reaſon. Thus you ſee (which experience can more fully demonſtrate) how the heat of Youth gives fewel to the Fire of Voluptuous Enjoyments; but without a ſupply of what may purchaſe thoſe delights, invention muſt be Tenter-hooked, which ever proves dangerous, moſt commonly fatal. My Grand-father too indulgent to his ſon, ſupply'd him continually with mony; which he did the more freely, ſince he was exempted from ſuch charges

which neceſſity required for my Fathers maintenance, he having now more than a bare competency, he not only conſents to the commiſſion of evil, but tempts others to perpetrate the like. And now following his own natural proneneſs to irregular liberty, diurnaly ſuggeſts matters of innovation, not onely to his own, but others reaſons, *Lectum non citius relinquens quam in Deum delinquens, non citius ſurgens quam inſurgens.* No ſooner relinquiſhing his bed, but delinquiſhing his Creator, No ſooner riſing than riſing againſt his God. In ſhort, I know not whether he prevailed more on others, or others on him, for he was facile; the beſt Nature is moſt quickly depraved, as the pureſt fleſh corrupts ſooneſt, and moſt noiſom when corupted. Yet notwithſtanding theſe blooming debaucheries, he neglected not his Study ſo much, but that he capacitated himſelf for the Univerſity, and by approbation was ſent thither by his Patron. He applyed himſelf cloſe to his Book for a while, till he had adapted himſelf a companion for the moſt abſolute critick could be ſelected out of any of the Colledges: in the aſſured confidence of his own parts, he ventured among them, and left ſuch remarks of his cutting wit in all companies he came into, that the Gallants and moſt notable Wits of *Oxford*, coveted ſo much his company that he had not time to apply himſelf to his Study, but giving way to their ſollicitations, being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclinations, plunged himſelf over head and ears in all manner of ſenſuality. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked practiſes, and deteſtable behaviour, he was at laſt expelled the Colledge.

Now was he forc'd to return to his Father, who

with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cauſe of his coming down : But to palliate his villanies, informed his father that he had learned as much as he could be inſtructed in ; and now and then would Sprinkle his diſcourſe with a *Greek* or *Latine* Sentence ; when talking with the poor ignorant old Man ; who took wonderful delight in the meer found thereof. When my father ſpake at any time, they were all as ſilent as midnight, and then would my Grandfather with much admiration becken to the ſtanders by, to give their greateſt attention, to what the *Speaker* as little underſtood as his *Auditors*, not caring what non-ſenſe he utter'd, if wrapt up in untelligable hard words, purpoſely to abuſe thoſe brutiſh Plough-jobbers. In oſtentation he was carried to the Parſon of the Pariſh to diſcourſe with him ; who by good fortune underſtood no other Tongue but what his mother taught him ; My father perceiving that, made *Shoulderamutton* and *Kapathumpton* ſerve for very good *Greek* ; which the Parſon confirm'd : telling my Grandfather further, that his Son was an excellent Scholar ; proteſting that he was ſo deeply learned, that he ſpake things he underſtood not ; this I have heard him ſay, made him as good ſport, as ever he receiv'd in the moſt ingenious Society.

He had not been long in the Country, before a Gentlewoman taking notice of his external and internal Qualifications, fell deeply in love with him ; and preferring her own pleaſure before the diſpleaſure of her wealthy Relations, ſhe *incontinently* was married to him. I ſhall wave how it was brought about in every particular, but only inſtance what is therein remarkable. Doubtleſs the geſtures he uſed in his preaching (when ſhe was preſent) might

ſomething avail in the conqueſt of her affections; beginning with a *dearly beloved* paſſionately extended, looking full in her face all the while, and being in the time of the Kingdomes alteration and confuſion, a temporizing Miniſter, he had learned all thoſe tricks by which thoſe of his Sect and coat uſed to bewitch a female ear. But that which chiefly effected his deſires, was the aſſurance of an old Matron, that lived near my mother, who for profit ſcrupled not to officiate as Bawd; this good old Gentlewoman contrived waies to bring them together, unſuſpected by any, by which means they obtain'd the opportunity to perform *Hymens* rites, Sans Ceremonies of the Church. My mother finding impregnation, acquainted my Father therewith, who (glad to hear how faſt he had tied her to him) urged her to the ſpeedy Conſummation of a Legal marriage, which ſhe more longed for than he did himſelf, but knew not how to bring it to paſs, by reaſon of thoſe many Obſtacles which they ſaw Obvious, and thwarting their intentions. As firſt the vaſt diſproportion between their Eſtates; Next, the Antipathy her Parents bore to his Function. Joyning theſe to many other Obſtructions, with Fancy and Knowledge preſented to them, they concluded to ſteal a Wedding and accordingly did put it in execution: much troubled her Parents were at firſt, to hear how their daughter had ſhip-wrackt her fortune (as they judged it) in the unfortunate looſing her maiden-head but time, with the interceſſion of Friends, procured a Reconciliation between them, and all parties well pleaſed. The old people took great delight in their fortune, hopeful thoughts and expectations of their Son in law, but he more in the reception

of a large Sum of Money they paid him, and my mother moſt of all (as ſhe thought) in the continual converſation and enjoyment of my Father, which ſhe equally ranked with what might be eſteemed the beſt of things.

His eminent Parts natural, (and what he attain'd unto by his country ſtudies, being aſham'd to have loſt ſo much time) introduc'd him as a Chaplain to a Noble man, with whom he travel'd into *Ireland*. He took ſhipping at *Myneard*, and from thence ſayled to *Knock fergus*, where he lived both creditably and comfortably. Experience had then ſo reformed his Life to ſo ſtrict a religious courſe, that his Obſervers gain'd more by his example than his Hearers by precepts. Thus by his piety in the purity of his practice, he ſoon regain'd his loſt credit.

By this time my mother drew near her time, having conceiv'd me in *England*, but not *conceiving* ſhe thus ſhould *drop* me in an *Iriſh Bog*. There is no fear that *England* and *Ireland* will after my deceaſe, contend about my Nativity, as ſeveral Countreys did about *Homer*; either ſtriving to have the honour of firſt giving him breath. Neither ſhall I much thank my Native Country, for beſtowing on me ſuch principles as I and moſt of my Country-men drew from that very air; the place I think made me appear a Baſtard in diſpoſition to my Father. It is ſtrange the Clymate ſhould have more prevalency over the Nature of the Native, than the diſpoſition of the Parent. For though Father and Mother could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, *&c.* yet the Son (as the conſequence hath ſince made it appear) can (according to the common cuſtom of his Country-men) diſſemble and ſooth up his adverſary with expreſ-

ſions extracted from Celeſtial Manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruine him: For to ſpeak the truth, I could never yet love any but for ſome by-reſpect, neither could I ever be perſwaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never reſting ſatisfied till I had accompliſht a plenary revenge, which I commonly effected under the pretence of great love and kindneſs. Cheat all I dealt withal, though the matter were ever ſo inconſiderable. Lie ſo naturally, that a Miracle may be as ſoon wrought, as a Truth proceed from my mouth. And then for Equivocation, or Mental Reſervations, they were ever in me innate Properties. It was alwayes my Reſolution, rather to dye by the hand of a common Executioner, then want my revenge, though ever ſo ſlightly grounded. But I ſhall deſiſt here to characterize my ſelf further, reſerving that for another place.

Four years after my Birth, the Rebellion began ſo unexſpectedly, that we were forced to flee in the night, the light of our flaming Houſes, Ricks of Hay, and Stacks of Corn guided us out of the Town, and our Fears ſoon conveyed us to the Mountains. But the Rebels, wandering too and fro, intending either to meet with their friends, (who flockt from all parts to get into a Body) or elſe any Engliſh, which they deſigned as Sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that Nation, met with my Mother, attended by two Scullogues, her menial ſervants, the one carrying me, the other my brother. The Fates had decreed my brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the *faithful Infidel* being butchered with him. The ſurviving ſervant who carried me, declared

that he was a Roman Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling *Chram a Cress,* for St. *Patrick a gra,* procured my Mothers, his own, and my ſafety.

Thus was I preſerv'd, but I hope not reſerv'd as a ſubject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendered me culpable before Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative from *Adam.* But ſince, the concatenation of ſins various links hath encompaſſed the whole ſeries of my life. Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to my ſelf Abſolution (according as it is promiſed) upon unfeigned Repentance, and ingenious Confeſſion of my nefarious Facts, I ſhall give the Readers a Summary Relation of my Life: from my Non-age to the Meridian of my dayes, hoping that my Extravagancies and youthful Exiliences, have in that ſtate of life, their declination and period.

CHAP. II.

A ſhort Account of the general Inſurrections of the Iriſh, Anno 1641.

BUt though the mercy of theſe inhumane Villains extended to the ſaving of our lives; yet they had ſo little conſideration and commiferation, to expoſe our bodies (by ſtripping us) ſtark naked to the extremity of a cold winter night, nor ſo much as ſparing my tender age. Thus without Shooes or Stockings, or the leaſt Rag to cover our nakedneſs, with the help of our Guide, we travelled all night through Woods as obſcure as that black darkneſs that then environed our Horizon. By break of day we were at *Belfaſt*; about entering the skirts of the Town, this honeſt and grateful ſervant, (which is much in an Iriſh man) being then aſſured of our ſafety, took his leave of us, and returned to the Rebels.

Here were we received with much pitty of all, and entertain'd, and cloth'd and fed, by ſome charitable minded Perſons; to gratifie their ſouls for what they had done for my mothers body, and thoſe that belong'd to her, my Father frequently preacht, which gave general ſatisfaction, and continued thus in inſtructing his hearers, till the *Sark* or *Surplice*, was adjudged by a Scotiſh Faction, to be the abſolute Smock of the Whore of *Babylon*. Then was he conſtrain'd to flee again to *Linſegarvy* taking his charge with him.

Before I proceed, give me leave to digreſs a little in giving you a brief account of the *Iriſh* Rebellion. Not two years before it broke out, all thoſe ancient Animoſities, Grudges, and Hatred, which the *Iriſh* had ever been obſerved to bare unto the Engliſh, ſeemed to be depoſited and buried in a firm Conglutination of their Affections, and National Obligations, which paſſed between them, for theſe two had lived together forty Years in peace, with ſuch great ſecurity and comfort, that it had in a manner conſolidated them into one body, knit and compacted together with all thoſe Ligatures, of Friendſhip, Alliance, and Conſanguinity, as might make up a conſtant and everlaſting Union betwixt them there. Their Inter-marriages were near upon as frequent as their Goſſippings and Foſterings, (relations of much dearneſs among the *Iriſh*) together with all Tenancies, Neighborhoods and Services interchangeably paſſed among them. Nay, they had made as it were a mutual Tranſmigration into each others manners, many Engliſh being ſtrongly degenerated into Iriſh Affections and Cuſtomes, and many of the better ſort of Iriſh ſtudying as well the Language of the Engliſh as delighting to be Apparel'd like them. Nay, ſo great an advantage did they find by the Engliſh Commerce and Cohabitation, in the profits and high improvements of their Lands, as Sir *Phelim O Neal*, that Rebellious Ringleader, with divers others eminent in that bloody Inſurrection, had not long before turn'd off their Lands, their Iriſh Tenants, admitting Engliſh in their rooms; who are able to give far greater Rents, and more certainly pay the ſame. So as all thoſe circumſtances duly weighted & conſider-

ed with the great increaſe of Trade, and many other evident Symptoms of a flouriſhing Commonwealth; it was believed even by the wiſeſt and moſt experienced in the affairs of *Ireland*, that the Peace and Tranquility of that Kingdom was fully ſettled, and moſt likely in all humane probability to continue, eſpecially under the Government of ſuch a King as *Charles* the Firſt, whom after-ages may admire, but never match. Such was the ſerenity and ſecurity of this Kingdom, as that there appeared not any where any Martial preparations, nor reliques of any kind of diſorders, no nor ſo much as the leaſt noiſe of War whiſperingly carried to any ear in all this Lands.

Now whilſt in this great calm, the Brittiſh continued in the deepeſt ſecurity, whilſt all men ſat pleaſently enjoying the fruits of their own labors, ſitting under their own Vines, without the leaſt thoughts of apprehenſion of Tumults, Troubles, or Maſſacres; there brake out on *October* the Twenty third, in the Year of our Lord, ſixteen hundred forty and one, a moſt deſperate, dierful, and formidable Rebellion, an Univerſal Defection and Revolt, wherein not only the meer Native Iriſh, but almoſt all thoſe Engliſh that profeſs the Name of *Roman Catholicks*, were totally involved.

Now ſince it is reſolved by me to give you a particular account of the moſt remarkable Tranſactions and paſſages of my life, it will be alſo neceſſary to acquaint you with the beginning and firſt motions. Neither ſhall I omit to trace the Progreſs of this Rebellion, ſince therein, I ſhall relate ſummarily my ſuffering, and what others under went, the horrid cruelties of the Iriſh, and their abominable murders committed, as well without num-

ber, as without mercy, upon the Engliſh Inhabitants of both Sexes, and all Ages.

It was carried with ſuch ſecreſie, that none underſtood the Conſpiracy, till the very evening that immediately preceeded the night of its general execution. I muſt confeſs there was ſome ſuch thing more than ſuſpected by one Sir *William Cole*, who preſently ſent away Letters to the Lord Chief Juſtices, but miſcarried by the way. *Owen O Conally* (though meer Iriſh, was notwithſtanding a Proteſtant) was the firſt diſcoverer of this general Inſurrection giving in the Names of ſome of the chief Conſpirators. Hereupon the Lords convened and ſat in Council, whoſe care and prudence at that time was ſuch, that ſome of the Ringleaders were inſtantly ſeized, and upon examination, confeſt that on that very day of their ſurprizal, all the Ports and Places of ſtrength in *Ireland*, would be taken; that there was a conſiderable number of Gentlemen and others, twenty out of each county, were come up expreſly to ſurprize the Caſtle of *Dublin*. Adding further, that what was to be done in the Country (where *Mercury* the ſwift Meſſenger) could neither by the wit of man, or by Letter, be prevented. Hereupon a ſtrict ſearch was made for all ſtrangers lately come to Town, and all Horſes were ſeized on, whoſe owners could not give a good account of them. And notwithſtanding, there was a Proclamation diſperſt through all *Ireland*, giving notice of a horrid Plot deſigned by Iriſh Papiſts, againſt Engliſh Proteſtants, intending thereby a diſcouragement to ſuch of the Conſpirators, as yet had not openly declared themſelves. Yet did they aſſemble in great number, principally in the North, in the Province of

Ulſter, taking many Towns, as the *Newry Drummoor*, &c., burning ſpoiling, and committing horrible murthers every where. Theſe things wrought ſuch a general conſternation and aſtoniſhment in the minds of the Engliſh; that they thought themſelves no where ſecure, flying from one danger into another.

In a very ſhort time, the meer Iriſh Northern Papiſts by cloſly Perſuing on their firſt Plot, had gotten into their poſſeſſion moſt of the Towns, Forts, Caſtles, and Gentlemens Houſes within the Counties of *Tyrou*, *Donegal*, *Fermanah*, *Armah*, *Cauau*, &c. The chief that appeared in the Execution of this Plot, within the Province of *Ulſter*, were Sir *Phelim O Neal*, *Tourlough* his Brother, *Roure Mac Guire*, *Phillip O Rely*, Sir *Conne Mac Dennis*, *Mac Brian*, and *Mac Mahau*, theſe combining with their Accomplices dividing their Forces, and according to a general Aſſignation, ſurpriſed the Forts of *Dougannon* and *Moutjoy*, *Carlemant*, with other places of conſiderable ſtrength. Now began a deep Tragedy: The Engliſh having either few other than Iriſh Landlords, Tenants, Servants, Neighbours, or familiar Friends, as ſoon as this fire brake out, and the whole Country in a general Conflagration, made their recourſe preſently to ſome of theſe, lying upon them for protection and preſervation, and with great confidence truſted their lives and all their concerns in their powers. But many of theſe in ſhort time after, either betrayed them to others, or deſtroyed them with their own hands. The Popiſh Prieſts had ſo charged and laid ſuch bloody impreſſions on them, as it was held according to their Doctrine they had received, a deadly ſin to give an Engliſh Proteſtant any relief.

All bonds of Faith and Friendſhip now fractur'd, Iriſh Landlords now prey'd on their Engliſh Tenants; Iriſh Tenants and Servants, made a Sacrifice of their Engliſh Landlords and Maſters, one Neighbor murthering another; nay, 'twas looked on as an act meritorious in him that could either ſubvert or ſupplant an Engliſh man; The very Children imitating the cruelty of their Parents, of which I ſhall carry a mark with me to my Grave, given me with a Skene by one of my Iriſh Playfellows. It was now high time to flie, although we knew not whither; every place we ari'vd at we thought leaſt ſecure, wherefore our motion was continual; and that which heightened our miſery, was our frequent ſtripping thrice a day, and in ſuch a diſmal ſtormy tempeſtuous ſeaſon, as the memory of man had never obſerv'd to continue ſo long together. The terror of the Iriſh and Scotch incomparably prevailed beyond the rage of the Sea, ſo that we were reſolved to uſe all poſſible means to get on Shipboard. At *Belfaſt* we accompliſht our deſires, committing ourſelves to the more merciful Waves. This Relation being ſo ſhort, cannot but be very imperfect, if I dare credit my mother, it is not ſtain'd with falſhood. Many horrid things (I confeſs) I purpoſely omitted, as deſiring to wave any thing of aggravation, or which might occaſion the leaſt Animoſity between two, though of ſeveral Languages, yet I hope both united in the demonſtration of their conſtant loyalty to their Soveraign *Charles* the Second.

CHAP. III.

After his arrival in Devonſhire, *he briefly recounts what waggeries he commited, being but a Child.*

BEing about five years of age, Report rendred me a very beautiful Child, neither did it (as moſt commonly) prove a Lyar. Being enricht with all the good properties of an handſome face, had not pride in that my tender age, depriv'd me of thoſe graces and choiſe ornaments which compleat both form and feature. Thus happen'd, my Father kept commonly many Turkeys; one amongſt the reſt could not endure the ſight of a Red Coat, which I uſually wore. But that which moſt of all exaſperated my budding paſſion, was, his aſſaulting my bread and butter, and inſtead thereof, ſometimes my hands; which cauſed my bloomy Revenge to uſe this Stratagem: I enticed him with a piece of Cuſtard (which I temptingly ſhewed him, not without ſome ſuſpition of danger which fear ſuggeſted, might attend my treachery, and ſo led me to the Orchard-gate, which was made to ſhut with a pulley; he reaching in his head after me, I immediatly clapt faſt the Gate, and ſo ſurprized my *mortal Foe*: Then did I uſe that little ſtrength I had, to beat his brains out with my Cat-ſtick; which being done, I deplum'd his tayl, ſticking thoſe feathers in my Bonnet, as the inſulting Trophies of my firſt and lateſt Conqueſt. Such then was my pride, as I

nothing but gazed up at them ; which ſo tryed the weakneſs of mine eyes and ſo ſtrain'd the Optick Nerves, that they ran a tilt at one another, as if they contended to ſhare with me in my victory. This accident was no ſmall trouble to my Mother, that ſo doated on me, that I have often heard her ſay, *She forgot to eat* (*when I ſate at Table*) *for admiring the ſweetneſs of my complexion.* After ſhe had much grieved her ſelf to little purpoſe, ſhe conſulted with patience, and applyed her ſelf to skilful Occuliſts, to repair the loſs this face blemiſhing had done ſo ſweet a countenance, though for the preſent it eclipſed my Mothers glory and pride, yet Time and art reduced my eyes to their proper ſtation ; ſo that within ſix years their oblique aſpects were hardly diſcernable. When I was about ten Years old, I have heard ſome ſay that this caſt of my eyes was ſo far from being a detriment, that it became my ornament. Experience confirm'd me in this belief ; for they prov'd as powerful, as the perſwaſive arguments of my deluding tongue, both which conjoyn'd, were ſufficient (I ſpeak it not vain gloriouſly) to prevail even over the *Goddeſs of Chaſtity*, eſpecially when they were backt on with ardent deſires, and an undaunted reſolution. But to my purpoſe : being driven out of *Ireland*, there being at that time no place of ſafety in that Kingdom, my Mother taking me with her, being compelled to leave my Father behind, barbarouſly murdered by the Rebels for being a proteſtant Preacher) ſhe adventured to Sea not caring whether ſhe went. Foulneſs of weather drove us upon the coaſt of *France*, where we were forced to land, to repair what damage the Ship had ſuſtained in ſtreſs of weather.

From hence we ſet ſail, and landed in the Weſt of *England*, at a place called *Barnſtable* in the County of *Devon*. Here we were joyfully received, and well entertained by ſome of my Mothers kindred at firſt; but lying upon them, they at length grew weary; ſo that we were forced to go from thence to *Plymouth*, ſo called from the River *Plime*, unto which the Town adjoyneth: at that time it was ſtrongly fortyfied by new raiz'd Works, a Line being caſt about it, beſides places of ſtrength antiently built; as the Caſtle, the Fort of an hundred pieces of Ordnance, that commands *Cat-water*, and over-looks the *Sound*, Mount *Batten*, and the iſlands in the *Sound*, well furniſhed with Men and great Guns impregnable; had they been never built or demoliſhed raced aſſoon as raiſed on their Baſis, it had been much better then to have prov'd the Fomenters of Rebellion in the late Wars for a whole year, daily thundring Treaſon againſt their lawful Soveraign. We being here altogether unacquainted both with the people and their profeſſion, my Mother having an active brain, caſts about with her ſelf how ſhe ſhould provide for her charge, but found no way more expedient, than the pretention of Religion. Zeal now and Piety were the only things ſhe ſeem'd to profecute, taking the litteral ſence of the Text; *Without doubt Godlineſs is great gain*: But ſhe err'd much in the profeſſion and ſeaſonable practiſe thereof; Hers being according to the minu of the true Church, the Church of *England*, whereas the *Plymotheans* were at that time Heterodox thereunto and led away as the reſt of their Brethren called Roundheads, by the ſpirit of deluſion. Finding how much ſhe was miſtaken, ſhe chang'd quickly her Note and Coat; a rigid

Presbyterian at firſt, but that proving not ſo profitable, inſtantly transform'd her ſelf into a ſtrict *independant.* This took well, which made her ſtick cloſe to the brethren, which rais'd their ſpirits to make frequent contribution in private to ſupply her want: Here we had borrowed ſo much of the Siſter-hood, who vilely ſuſpected my Mother to be too *dearly beloved* by the brother-hood, that it was high time to rub off to another place, leſt ſtaying longer, the holy Mask of Diſſimulation ſhould fall off; and ſhe being detected be ſhameſully excluded their Congregation, and ſo delivered up to be buffeted by Satan. Before I leave the Town, give me leave to take a ſhort view thereof. Formerly it was a poor ſmal fiſhing Village, but now ſo large and thron'd with inhabitants (many whereof very wealthy Merchants) that as it may be compared with, ſo may it put in its claim for the name of a City. Havens, as there are many ſo commodious, which without ſtriking ſail, admit into the boſome thereof the talleſt Ships that be, harbouring them very ſafely, and is excellently well fortyfied againſt hoſtility. It is ſcituate alike for profit and pleaſure in brief, it wants little that the heart of man would enjoy, from the various productions of the whole Univerſe. Now farewell *Plymouth*, no matter whither we went, for whereever we came; we found ſtill ſome or other that gave us entertainment for thoſe good parts they found in my Mother ſhe being very well read both in Divinity and Hiſtory, and having an eloquent tongue, ſhe commonly apply'd her ſelf to the Miniſter of the Town; who wondering to ſee ſo much learning and perfection in a Woman, either took us to his own houſe for a while; or gathered ſome

contributions to ſupply our preſent neceſſities, with which we travelled to the next Town: And in this manner we ſtrouled or wandered up and down, being little better then mendicant Itinerants, Staying ſo little time in a place, and my mother being more careful to get a ſubſiſtance, than to ſeaſon my tender years with the knowledge of Letters, I was ten years old before I could read. Travelling through many towns unfit for our purpoſe, we at laſt took our ſeat for a while at *Biraport* in *Dorſetſhire*, here being aſhamed to go to School in this ignorance, I applyed my ſelf to my Mother, who taught me to apprehend the Alphabet in leſs hours than there are letters; ſo that in a ſhort time, I could read diſtinctly, and immediately introduc'd into the Grammar School, where I had not been long, before I became a Book-worm ſecuring as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacy ſerv'd. And to the intent that my Thefts might paſs undiſcovered, before I would vend what Book I had ſtolen, I uſually metamorphozed them: if new, I would gaſh their skin, and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale with the wounds they received; If much uſed, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces, and having ſo done, make ſale of them. This courſe I followed a long time undiſcovered, which coſt many a Boy a Whipping at home by their Parents, as well as Maſter. I had various uſes for my money I made thereof (you muſt think) but principally to bribe ſome of the upper Form to make my Exerciſes, which were ſo well liked of by my Maſter, that I ſtill came off with applauſe; and in a ſhort time ſo advanced, that I was next to the higheſt Form, when I underſtood not the loweſt Author we read.

I was forced to imploy my wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my Penſioners, leaſt they ſailing me for want of encouragement, my Maſter ſhould diſcover how much my dunceſhip was abuſed. Frequent were my truantings, which were always attended with ſome notorious fact beſides ſmall faults as robbing of Orchards, pulling the firſt and ſeconds of forty or fifty Geeſe at a time, milking the Cows or Goats into my Hat, and ſo drink the milk: And then for poultry, there was ſeldome a day eſcaped wherein I had not more or leſs, uſually I took them thus. At night I haunted the Hen-rooſts taking them off ſo quietly from what they ſtood on, that their keckling noiſe ſeldome alarum'd the reſt; if I could not conveniently carry them off, I made their Eggs compound for their heads. If I meet with any Geeſe at any time, then out came my ſhort ſtick with a ſtring faſtned to a bullet, and tyed to the end thereof, with this would I fetch in my Game by the neck, the weight of the bullet twirling the ſtring ſo many times about the neck, that they could not diſengage themſelves from inevitable deſtruction. I uſed to fiſh for Ducks, baiting my Hook with a gut or ſome ſuch traſh, and laying it on a piece of Corke, that ſwimming it might be the ſooner perceived, I could catch in a ſhort time as many as I pleaſed: Nay, I have not only thus deceived the tame fowl, but the ſame way with a longer time, I have caught Gulls and other Sea-birds. What I had gotten by theſe cunning & ſo much to be approved tricks, I carryed to a houſe that encouraged me in my Roguery, participating of the cheer, and ſo feaſting me for my pains: if I had ſtolen any thing, I had my recourſe to them, who would give me two pence

for what was worth a ſhilling, and render me good content. I knew my puniſhment for my rambling and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay for very ſmall faults I wiſhed to be whipt, knowing the rod would then be laid on gently, which carried with it a tickling pleaſure. As for my Theſts and Rogueries abroad I was careful they ſhould not be diſcovered. If any Boy had injur'd me whoſe ſtrength exceeded mine, ſo that I durſt not cope with him, I would exerciſe my revenge upon him privately, concealing the reſentment of the injury he did me. For to grin and not bite, doth but perſwade an Adverſary to knock out thoſe teeth that may prove ſome time or other injurious. One common trick I had, was to ſtick a pin on the board whereon he was to ſit: in this manner did I ſerve ſeveral, in which fact I was at laſt taken. The puniſhment my Maſter inflicted on me, was, to ſit by his desk alone and complete a copy of Verſes; there was great likelihood I ſhould perform my task, when I knew not how many feet an Hexameter required and yet I then read *Virgil.* However ſome thing I muſt attempt, and thinking *Saphicks* and *Iambicks* too difficult, I ventur'd upon *Heroicks*, ſuppoſing them the eaſier compoſition. But Lord into what an acceſs of laughter did my Maſter fall into, when he peruſed my hobling ſtrains. Surely ſaid he, theſe Verſes are running a race altogether, the firſt did not ſtart fairly, or elſe is a very nimble Gentleman, for he hath out run all his fellows four feet, the ſecond comes two foot ſhort of him, yet to forward for a true pace; here is another lame in a foot, and halts moſt ſcurvily, here is another whoſe quantity is ſhort, and hath gotten upon ſtilts to ſeem long,

and one (in contradiction to him) which is long, becauſe he will be ſhort hath cut his own Legs off: With theſe and the like ſpeeches did he pleaſe himſelf in his own wit, (which I underſtood but little) and after he had tired himſelf and me too, with prodigal talk: He then ſpake to me in a harder dialect, making me underſtand how ignorant I was, and how much precious time (irecoverably) I had loſt, which ſo much ſeiz'd on my ſpirits, that I was much griev'd and troubled, ſo that he made Vermilion tears run down my cheeks, *&c.* After he had beſtowed ſo much correction as he thought might work in me penitence for my egregious truanting he degraded me, and made me begin a new. The ſhame whereof and reproach I daily received from my School-fellows, I could not bear; wherefore I prevailed on my Mothers indulgence, to let me regain what I had loſt at home, which ſhe conſented to. But perceiving my Lecherous inclinations, by my night practiſes with her Maid, reſolved to ſend me to a Boarding School: For our Family being but ſmall, I lay with the Maid: beeing ſo young, my Mother did not in the leaſt ſuſpect me; but my too forward Lechery would not let me lie quiet, putting her frequently to the Squeak. In fine, I was ſent away a great diſtance to a very ſevere and rigid Maſter, I no ſooner commenced Scholar to this Tyrant pedagogue, but I was kept cloſe to my Book, and leſt my Wit ſhould be any ways dulled, my ſtomack was always kept ſharp; which quickned my invention to ſupply what was deficient. There is no complaint ſo inſufferable as the grumbling of empty and diſſatisfied Guts. My greateſt care was to inſinuate my ſelf into the favour of the Servant Maids, knowing they loved

to play at *a Small Game* rather then ſtick out. I performed my buſineſs ſo well that my ſtomack was always ſatiated, when the reſt of the Boarders were diſſatisfied, often going to bed in a manner ſupperleſs. Here I was depriv'd of my old pilfering way, becauſe I had no convenience for the diſpoſal of what I ſtole, it being but a very ſmall Village. However to keep my hand in uſe, I daily practiſed on Fruit. Sometimes with a Spar ſharpned at one end, I pickt the Apples out of the Baskets: other times I took with me a Comrade, and then thus would we do. I would go to the Fruiterer and bargain with him for a penny worth or more of Apples, receiving them into my Hat, pretending to draw my mony out, I did clap my Hat between my Legs my partner perceiving that (as we had afore plotted it would be) behind, ſnatcht it through my Legs and ran away with it, I thereupon did uſe to roar out as if I had been undone, and pretending to run after him to regain my Hat, we got out of ſight and then ſhared the booty. One time coming a long the Market, I ſaw a ſmall baſket of Cherries, I demanded of the woman that ſold them, what ſhe would have for as many as I could take up in my hand; ſhe looking upon it and ſeeing it was but a very ſmall one; proportionable to my Stature, two pence ſaid ſhe; with that, I laid her down her Price, and took up basket and all the Cherries therein contain'd, and in a ſober pace carried them away. The woman amazed that ſhe ſhould be thus ſurprized by ſuch a Younker followed me; and making a great noiſe, gathered a conflux of people about us, and among the reſt a Gentleman of quality, who was very earneſt to know what the matter was; Holding my purchaſe faſt

in my hands (for nothing could perfwade me to let go that booty I had ſo fair obtained, I deſired the Gentleman that he would be judge of my cauſe, whereupon I related to him in what manner I bargained with the woman, and that I had done nothing unjuſtly, but what was according to our contract; the Gentleman wondering at the Pregnancy of wit in ſo tender an age, laught heartily, and condemned the Cherries for my own proper uſe, but withal paid the woman for them. I was naturally ſo prone to pleaſe my fences ſo that I cared not what courſe I took that I might obtain my deſires, I appli'd my ſelf more to my wit and invention, than I ſhould have done, had I had anything allowed me from a Friend for a moderate expence. But my Mother thought otherwiſe, knowing by infallible ſymptomes, the extravagantneſs of my inclinations, and therefore debarred me as much as ſhe could the very ſight of money. A River confined within ſome made Bank, deterring its natural courſe, will (when that is overthrown which impeded its progreſs) flow with the greater impetuoſity: Youth may for a while be circumſcribed as to its deſires: but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of ſenſual delights, ſooner or later he will taſte their reliſh; and better early than late. Before the Noon of his days approach, Experience may reform his Life and Converſation though from the dawning Morning thereof, till the Meridian his Actions have been nothing elſe but the Extract of all manner of Debauchery. But (it is commonly obſerved): That Man which in the Declination of his Age tracks the by paths of Vice and Licentiouſneſs ſeldom deſiſts till Death cuts off his paſſage; never leaving off doting on ſuch falſe

and imaginary pleaſures, till the *Grim Pale-faced Meſſenger* takes him napping. Thus much by way of digreſſion.

Our Maſter was very ancient, however reſolved that his Age ſhould not hinder his Teaching: for if he found himſelf indiſpoſed, he would ſend for us all into his bed-chamber, inſtructing us there: A man of ſo ſtrange a temper, that he delighted to invert the courſe of Nature, lying in bed by day, and walking in the night, the rain ſeldome deterring him. On a time above the reſt, a Gentleman had ſent his Son five pieces of Gold to give his Maſter for Diet, *&c.* Our Maſter receiving them, called for a ſmall Cabinet that ſtood in the room, which I (more officious than the reſt) brought him. Having put in the Gold, he commanded me to carry it from whence I had it: which I did, well conſidering the weight thereof, being, though ſmall, very heavy. The Devil preſently became my Tutor, ſuggeſting to my thoughts various ways for the gaining this money. At laſt I reſolved to take the impreſſion of the Key in wax: which with much difficulty I obtained and carried it to a Smith four miles diſtant. The old Fellow (immediately upon my propoſal) ſuſpected me; (doubtleſs he was acquainted with ſuch kind of devices) and queſtioning me what I intended thereby, I was forced to betake my ſelf to my Legs for ſafety, not knowing what anſwer to make him. The Smith ſeeing me run, thinking to benefit himſelf by apprehending me perſued after, with a red hot iron in his hand which his haſte had made him forget to lay aſide, one ſtanding by me, (juſt as the Smith had almoſt overtaken me) ſeeing him come running with a hot iron in his hand, and fearing leſt his

blind paſſion might prompt him to miſchief me, ſtruck up his heels who in the fall gave himſelf a burnt mark in the hand which no doubt he had long ago deſerv'd; my unknown friend would not ſuffer him to riſe till I was out of ſight. My firſt ſtratagem not ſuiting with my purpoſe, I try'd a Pick-lock of mine own invention; but that would not effect my deſign neither: ſo that I concluded to take Cabinet and all, and in order thereunto watcht my opportunity when he ſhould walk abroad according to his cuſtom at night. It was not long ere I enjoyed my wiſhes. My maſters cuſtom was to walk abroad at nights, and ſleep in the day time; inverting the courſe of Nature: foreknowing his intention, I got into the Chamber and conceal'd my ſelf under the Bed: So finding my way clear, I convey'd my ſelf and purchaſe out of the Houſe; and travelled all night. In the morning I found my ſelf near a ſmall Town, about ſixteen miles diſtant from the place whence I came. Thinking my ſelf now ſecure, I thought it very requiſite here to repoſe my wearied Limbs and ſolace my ſelf with the ſight of what I had gotten; but it was not long after that I was ſo laced for it, that comparatively to my puniſhment *Bridewell* whipping is but a paſtime. The firſt Buſh I came at I went in and called for Sack, having never taſted any, & hearing much talk thereof; at which the people of the houſe much admired that ſo ſmall an Urchin as I ſhould call for ſuch coſtly liquor, they viewed me very attentively, but more eſpecially the Cabinet, which cauſed them to ſuſpect me. The Maſter of the houſe was acquainted herewith, who as the Devil would have it was a Puritan, & a Conſtable too, officious and ſevere. Without craving pardon for his bold intruſion, he deſired me I would

admit him into my Boy-ſhips ſociety. I confeſs his gray hairs and ſower countenance made me at firſt ſight, very much fear what the event of his viſit would prove. However with a ſeeming undauntednefs I drank to him, but what a difference of taſte there was in that and the firſt glaſs I drank *Solus:* at length he came to ask me divers queſtions, *Whence I came? Whither I was going? What was contained within that Caſeanet?* and the like. Before I could give the reſolution of what they demanded, the *Hue and Cry* overtook me: prefently I was laid hold on, and my treaſure taken from me: that which vext me as much as my Surprizal was, I had no further time to try what kind of taſte the Sack had. Various were the talk of the people, every one ſpending his Verdict on me. *This is a prime young rogue indeed, to begin thus ſoon*, ſaid one, *could he have ſeen, when in his Mothers belly, ſurely he would have ſtoln ſomething thence.* Another ſaid, *Forward fruit was ſoon rotten, and ſince I began to ſteal whilſt a child, I ſhould be hanged before* I *ſhould write Man.* Ready to die with fear, I was ſent back to the place whence I came and from thence to the place of execution, had not the tendernefs of my age, and fewnefs of years procured pitty from my injur'd Maſter. Confin'd I was within his houſe, lockt up cloſe Priſoner in a Chamber, till that he could acquaint my mother with what had paſt. In this time I was not debarred of my fuſtenance though my Commons were Epitomized, neither was I altogether deprived of ſociety, for I was daily viſited by my maſter attended with a Cat of Ninetails (as he called it) being ſo many ſmall cords, with which he fleyd my buttocks; and when he found me ſtubborn, or not penitent enough as he thought, after

he had skinned my podex, he would waſh it with vinegar, or water and ſalt. Within a week my Mother arrived, who hearing of my Rogueries, was ſo impatient, that ſhe would needs take me to task her ſelf; But when ſhe had untruſt me, and ſaw me in ſo woful a plight, my ſhirt being as ſtiff as Buckram with *blood* and my tender breech ploughed and harrowed, fell down as if ſhe had been about to expire: recovering my Maſter endeavour'd to ſatisfy her, by telling her that great offences required great puniſhments; and the way to bend an oak, is to do it whilſt it is young, I had once when young (ſaid he) a Spaniel which would find out the Hens neſt, and breaking the eggs ſuck them, ſo that we could never have any Chickens, at laſt diſcovering who was the maleſactor; I be thought my ſelf of this puniſhment which ſhould hinder him for ever doing the like. I got an egg roaſted ſo hard till the ſhell was ready to burn, then did I firſt ſhow the Egg to the dog, and then clapt it hot into his mouth holding his jaws cloſe, this ſo tormented him by burning, that ever after he could not indure the ſight thereof but if ſhown run away crying as if he had been beaten. Thus for the notorious fact your Son muſt be ſo ſharply chaſtized, that when he thinks of ſtealing he ſhall remember thoſe torments he once endured for it, & ſo frighten him from executing any ſuch crime. Many more arguments he alledg'd to that purpoſe, which had ſatisfied her well in his ſeverity, had not natural affection interpoſed. What to do with me ſhe knew not; wherefore ſhe conſulted with my Maſter, who told her, *He durſt not keep me longer, the Country people bringing in daily complaints againſt me.* And to aggravate my Mother the more, he briefly ſumm'd up my faults

in this manner; having had juſtly various accuſers who drew up my indictment, Thus.

Imprimis, That one of his Maids having croſt me (to be reveng'd of her; knowing ſhe was a drowſie wench, when aſleep not eaſily wak'd) as ſhe ſlept by the fire, I took my opportunity, to melt ſome glew, and gently toucht the cloſure of both her eyelids with a pencil, which well I knew would lock up her ſight. Againſt the time I intended to wake her I placed all about her Chairs and Stools. The Plot being ripe, I pretended her Miſtreſs called; The wench ſtarting up running and rubbing of her eyes turn'd topſie turvy over the chairs, getting up ſhe ingag'd her ſelf with the ſtools and ſo entangled her ſelf therein, that indeavouring to free her ſelf her coats acted the parts of Traytors in diſcovering the hidden ſecrets and *Arcanas* belonging to her ſex, and that with much ſatisfaction I had ſeen the execution of my revenge. That this wench could not be perſwaded by any means, but that as a judgement ſhe was ſtricken blind for ſome ſin ſhe had committed privately, which then her conſcience did whiſper in her ear; and undoubtedly had turn'd Lunatick had ſhe not been ſpeedily reſtored to her ſight by taking off the glew, which was done with much difficulty. That he going about to correct me for this unlucky and miſchievous fact, was by me ſhown a very *Shitten trick*, which put him into a *ſtinking condition*, for having made my ſelf laxative on purpoſe ſquirted into his face upon the firſt laſh given. That being upon boys backs, ready to be whipt, I had often bit holes in their ears. That another time ſirreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which lookt out into the yard, my aged Miſtreſs looking up to ſee who opened the

Caſement, I had like to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that little ſight ſhe had left, that another time I had watcht ſome luſty young Girls, that uſed in Summer nights about twelve a clock to waſh themſelves in a ſmall brook near adjacent, and that I had concealed my ſelf behind a Buſh, and when they were ſtript, took away their cloaths, making them dance home after me ſtark naked to the view of their ſweet hearts whom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpoſe, having given them before notice of my deſign. A great many more ſuch tricks he recounted which he knew, but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for example, on *Chriſtmaſs-day*, we had a pot of Plumb-broth. I askt the Maid to give me a taſte to ſee how I lik'd them, *I that I ſhould*, ſhe ſaid (this was the Maid I had ſo ſerv'd before with glew) and with that takes up a ladle full and bid me ſup, ſhe holding the ladle in her own hand, I imprudently opening my mouth ſomewhat larger then I ſhould ſhe poured down the ſcalding pottage through my throat: at preſent I could not tell the jade (that laught till ſhe held her ſides) how I lik'd them; but I verily believ'd I had ſwallowed the *Gunpowder-Plot*, expecting every moment to be *blown up*. I took as little notice of this paſſage as poſſibly I could, reſolving to retalliate her kindneſs when ſhe leaſt thought on't. I obſerved the maid to carry this plum-pottage pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the Jack was in the ſame yard, wound up a great height under a ſmall pent-houſe, the Jack being down I ſuddenly removed the weight, and faſtned the pot to the line, ſo going into the Kitching, wound it up to the top, and then ſtopt it,

ſor the meat was taken up. The houſe was all in an uproar inſtantly about the Pot, every one admiring what ſhould become of it: The Maid averred that ſhe ſaw it even now, and none could remove it but the Devil. Others aſſerted (which were infected with *Puritaniſm*) that it was a Judgment ſhown for the ſuperſtitious obſervation of that feſtival day; but the next day, roaſting Meat, this ſeeming miracle vaniſhed by the deſcending of the pot faſtened to the Jack-line. Another time my Maſter had reſerved in his Garden ſome choiſe Aprecocks, not above an half-ſcore; which he purpoſed for ſome friends that intended to viſit him ſhortly: The daily ſight of this delicate fruit, being forbidden, tempted me more ſtrongly to attempt their rape; but I made choice of an impropitious hour to accompliſh my deſign in; for my maſter looked out of his window and ſaw me gather them, though he knew not abſolutely whether it was I or no. Whereupon; he inſtantly ſummoned us together, being met, I quickly underſtood his intention: therefore I conveyed the Aprecocks into the next boys pocket, I had no ſooner done it, but we were commanded to be ſearched; I was very forward to be the firſt though I was moſt ſuſpected, but none was found about me, ſo that I was acquitted. But to ſee with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were diſcovered about him, how ſtrangely he looked, diſtorting his face into ſeveral forms, produced laughter even from my incenc'd Maſter, but real pity from me, for he was ſeverely whipped for that Crime I my ſelf committed. I could recite many more ſuch like childiſh Rogueries, did I not fear I ſhould be tedious in their relation, and burden the Reader with juvenile ſollies;

fore I ſhall return where I left off. Whilſt my Mother was in a ſerious conſultation with her Reaſon, how ſhe ſhould diſpoſe of me, I had not patience to wait the reſult, but gave her the ſlip, reſolved to run the risk of Fortune, and try whether mine own endeavours would ſupply my neceſſities.

CHAP. IV.

How he ran from his Mother, and what courſes he ſteered in one whole years Ramble.

IT was in *Auguſt* when I undertook this my Knight-errantry; the fairneſs of the Seaſon much favoured my enterprife: thinking I ſhould always enjoy ſuch weather, and never be pincht with neceſſity, I went on very couragiouſly. The firſt dinner I made was on Blackberries and Nuts, eſteemed by me very delicious fare at firſt, which delighted me ſo much the more, having not my liberty controul'd. When night approached it ſeemed very uncouth & ſtrange, finding inſtead of a feather-bed, no other thing to lie on but a *Haycock*, and no other *coverlid* but the *Canopy of Heaven*. But conſidering with my ſelf that I had no task to con over night, nor fear of over-ſleeping my ſelf next morning, and ſo be fetcht to School by a Guard of my fellow Schollars with a Lanthorn and Candle, though the Sun appear'd at that time in his full luſtre; I laid my ſelf down and ſlept profoundly, not without ſome affrighting dreams: The laſt was of the Cat of Nine Tails, which my Maſter laid ſo

home me thought that the ſmart thereof made me cry out, and ſo I awaked ; as then the early Larke, the winged Herald of the morning, had not with her pretty warbling Notes, ſummon'd the bright watchmen of the Night to prepare for a retreat ; neither had *Aurora* opened the Vermillion Oriental Gate, to make room for Sols radiant Beams, to diſſipate that gloomy darkneſs that had muffled up our Hemiſphere in obſcurity. In the morning I went on in my progreſs as the day before ; then began a ſhower of tears to fall from my eyes, conſidering how I had left my diſconſolate, and almoſt heart-broken Mother, lamenting my loſs, and fearing what fatal courſes I might take : it was no leſs trouble to me to think that I was travelling I knew not whither, moneyleſs, having nothing but hazel, and Brambles to addreſs my ſelf for the appeaſing of hungers approaching gripes. Now me thought I began to loath my aforenamed *Manna*, Blackberries, Nuts, Crabs, Bullies, *&c*, and longed to taſte of the *Fleſh-pots* again, but the *Devil a bit* could I get but what the hedges afforded me. All day I thus wandred about, not daring to come near any Town, having had ſuch bad ſuccess in the laſt when I firſt rambled, and now night came on, which put me in mind of procuring a lodging ſomewhat warmer than the other. A Barn preſently offered it ſelf to my ſight, which I accoſted, and without delay or fear, entred into the inchanted Caſtle, where I found accommodations for the moſt faithful and valiant Knight that ere ſtrode Saddle for Ladies ſake. Here might I take my choice of variety of freſh ſtraw, but my wearineſs would not permit to complement my good fortune one jot, and I ſo tumbled over head and ears; I had not lain there

above an hour before I heard a noiſe, and peeping out of the ſtraw, being in a great fear, I ſaw a many ſtrange Creatures come into the Barn, for the day was not yet ſhut in. My thoughts preſently reminded me, that I had heard talk of Hobgoblings, Fairies and the like, and judged theſe no other; and that which confirmed me in this belief, was their Garb and talking to one another in a Language I underſtood not, (but ſince, I underſtand it to be Canting.) I lay ſtill as long as my fear would permit me, but they ſurrounding me, I was not able to contain my ſelf longer, but cryed out aloud, *Great God have mercy on me, and let not theſe Devils devour me*; and with that, ſtarted out from among them: They amazed as much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children behind them, every one eſteeming him the happieſt man which was the foremoſt. I looking behind me, ſeeing them following me, imagined theſe Devils ran upon all four, and having ſtarted their game were reſolved to hunt a ſinful Leveret to death: Concluding them long-winded Hell-hounds, I judgd praying a ſafer way than flying, and ſo fell inſtantly on my knees: The *Gypſies* quickly overtook me, and finding me in that poſture, ſoon underſtood whence their fear proceeded. They then ſpoke to me in a Language I underſtood, bidding me not be afraid; but I had heard the Devil was a Lyar from the beginning, therefore I would not believe them. They would have rais'd me from my devotion, telling me it was enough, and that made me ſuſpect them the more; thinking they deſigned to get me out of a praying poſture, that they might have the more power of me. Nothing prevailing with me, they vowed and proteſted they would not injure me in the leaſt, and if

I would go along with them, I ſhould ſhare as deliciouſly as they did, this was a potent argument to perſwaſion, and ſo I agreed to go along with them back again. All their cry was now for *Rum-booz* (*i. e.*) for Good Liquor. Their Captain not induring to hear ſo ſad a Complaint, and not endeavour the ſupplying the want complained of, immediately commanded out four able Maunders, (Beggars) ordering them to ſtroule (wander) to the next Town, every one going apart. Some Countrey-men gave them drink fearing they might fire the houſes in the night, out of revenge, others (out of the more ignorant ſort) thought they could command infernal ſpirits, and ſo harm them that way, or elſe bewitch their Cattle, and therefore would not deny them: in ſo much, that in a ſhort time theſe four return'd laden with bub and food. It was preſently placed in the middle of us, who ſate circularly; then out came the Woodden diſhes, every one provided but my ſelf, but I was ſoon ſuppli'd by a young Rum-Mort that ſate next me intended for my ſporting mate. A health went round to the Prince of *Maunders*, another to the Great Duke of *Clapperdogeons*, a third to the Marquefs of *Doxy Dells*, & *Rum Morts*, a fourth, to the Earl of *Clymes*; neither did we forget, *Haly*, *Abbas*, *Albumazar*, *Arcandam*, with the reſt of the Waggoners, that ſtrive who ſhall be principal in driving *Charles* his Wain. Moſt part of the night we ſpent in Boozing, pecking rumly or wapping, that is drinking, eating, or whoreing, according to thoſe termes they uſe among themſelves. Jealouſie was a thing they never would admit of in their Society, and to make appear how little they were tainted therewith, the males and females lay promiſcuouſly together, it being free for any of

the Fraternity to make choice of what *Doxie* he liked beſt, changing when he pleaſed. They plyed me ſo oft with their *Rum-booz* (as they called it) and pleaſed me ſo well in giving me a young Girle to dally with, who (though in Rags, and with a skin artificially diſcolloured tawny) yet I was not ſo ignorant, as not to underſtand good fleſh, and what properties went to the compleating a votareſs for *Venus* ſervice. I was ſo tickled in my fancy with this pretty little wanton Companion, that for her ſake, I was very well content to lift my ſelf one of that Ragged Regiment. And that which added to the induceing me to this reſolution, was my want of money, and what I ſuffered in thoſe two foregoing hard dayes fare among the Nut Trees. I firſt acquainted my *Doxie* with my intent, who glad to hear thereof, gave it vent, and broacht it to the reſt, who unanimouſly with joy imbraced me ; and to gratify my inagravation *tipt* to each other a Gage of *Booz*, and ſo went round. The fumes of drink had now aſcended into their brain, wherefore they *coucht a Hogs-head*, and went to ſleep.

CHAP. V.

Wherein he relates what manner of People they were in whoſe Society he entered himſelf, diviſion of their Tribes, Manners, Cuſtomes, and Language.

AS ſoon as I had reſolv'd to travel the Country with them, they fitted me for their company by ſtripping me, and felling my proper garments, and cloathing me in rags, which they pinn'd about me, giving a ſtitch here and there, according as neceſſity required. We uſed not when we entered our *Libkin* or Lodging to pull off our clothes; which had I been forced to do, I could never have put them on again, nor any, but ſuch who were accuſtomed to produce *Order* out of a *Babel of Rags*. Being now *ale mode Taterdemallion*, to compleat me for their purpoſe, with green Walnuts they ſo diſcoloured my face, that every one that ſaw me, would have ſworn I was the true Son of an *Egyptian*. Before we marched on, let me give you an account of our Leaders, and the rancks we were diſpoſed in. Our chief Commander was called by the name of *Ruffeler*, the next to him *Upright-man*, the reſt in order thus:

Hookers, (alias) *Anglero.*
Priggers of Prancers.
Pallyards.
Fraters.
Prigges.
Swaddlers.
Curtals.
Iriſh toyle.

Swigmen,
Jarkemen.
Patri-Coes.
Kitchin-Coes.
Abram men.
Whip-Jacks.
Counterfeit-Cranks.
Dommerars.
Glymmerers.
Bawdy-Baskets.
Autem-Morts.
Doxies.
Dells.
Kitchin-Morts.

We Muſter'd above threeſcore old and young, and becauſe we were too great a company to March together, we were divided into three Squadrons. The firſt Squadron that led the Van, was ordered by our Commander, to ſtick up ſmall boughs all the way they went, that we might know what courſe they ſteer'd. For like Wild Fowl we fly one after another, and though we are ſcattered like the *quarters* of a *Traitor*, yet like water when cut with a Sword, we eaſily came together again. As the *Switzer* hath his Wench and his Cock with him when he goes to Wars: or like a *Scotch Army*, where every Soldier almoſt hath the *Geud Wife* & the *Bearns* following him: So we had every one his *Doxie* or Wench, who carried at her back a *Lullaby-cheat*, & it may be another in her Arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turnes to put them in a pair of Panniers, like green Geeſe going to Market, or like Fiſh in Doſſers coming from *Rye*. Where note, that each diviſion hath a ſmall Horſe or two, or elſe Aſſes to eaſe them of their burdens. Some of us were clad Antickly with Bells and other toys, meerly to allure the Country people unto us, which moſt commonly produced their deſired effects. In ſome places they would flock unto us, in great quantities, and then was our time to make our Markets. We pretended an acquaintance with

the Stars (as having an alliance to the *Egyptian Magi*, the founders of Aſtrologick Art) and that the Miniſters of Fate were our Familiars, and ſo poſſeſſing theſe poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their fortunes by inſpection into either hands or faces; whil'ſt we were feriouſly looking thereon, one of our *diving Comrades* pickt their pockets, or with a ſhort ſharp knife, and a horn on the thumb *nipt* their *bungs*. By asking the ſilly milk Maids queſtions, we gathered from their own mouths the propereſt reſolutions, then they would admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the Truth proceed from the mouth of ſuch as were ſtrangers to their actions, by which means, among ſome we gained a great reſpect, accompanied with fear. Did not Aſtrologers make uſe of ſuch ſtratagems, they could never acquire ſo much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities. And becauſe it falls in ſo pat to my preſent purpoſe, I ſhall beg ſo much patience from the Reader, as to give him a brief account of ſome fallacies, ſome *Star-gazing Impoſtors* uſe to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One whereof I knew, who raiſed his credit (and ſince a conſiderable eſtate) upon the Baſis of good intelligence. He kept a ſervant, who conſtantly attended below for the reception of ſuch who came for ſatisfaction in the Aſtrological Reſolution of queſtions. This mans Office was to tell the Querent, *That his Maſter was buſie above, about ſome grand concern, but if the Perſon would be pleaſed to wait a little while, till that buſineſs was diſpatched he queſtioned not but that his Maſter would render him a ſatisfactory account of what he demanded*, adding farther (to infuſe into him faith, to credit what he ſaid) *that though report had ſpoken largely*,

(and yet nothing but what this Artiſt hath merited) *yet all came far ſhort of his real deſert, having done ſuch ſtupendious things, that muſt needs (without injuſtice, be commemorized to Eternity, and admired by future ages.* In the mean time, this ſervant endeavoured to pump out of the Proponent what he came about, which being underſtood, he gave information to his Maſter, by ſo many times ringing of a Bell. This Item being given, the Querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his queſtion, this profound Artiſt prevents him, ſaying, *I know what you come about Sir, (therefore ſave your ſelf the labour to tell me that which I know already) you have loſt a Watch, a Horſe; or you would know how you ſhall proſper in ſuch a buſineſs, whither Marriage or an Imployment; or any ſuch like common queſtion.* This makes the Artiſt to be wondered at; and then erecting a Scheme, poſitively and ſurlily tells him what he muſt expect, and that he may give anſwers more exactly concerning ſtolen goods, he was in conſtant fee with *Thief-takers*, who from time to time, made him a report of what perſons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a deſcription of the Fellon. By theſe practiſes men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; ſo that his Chamber was daily ſo thronged with the report of people, that in a ſhort time his ambition pricked him on to purchaſes, with the money he had gained thus fallaciouſly. One ſtory, very remarkable, I ſhall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digreſſion. One day a young Gentleman (but of a mean eſtate) came to him, who was more credulous than wiſe, and more inquiſitive then prudent; and having not that wealth which his *prodigality* required, deſired inſtructions what courſe he

was beſt to ſteer to arrive at the Port of his wiſhes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a ſweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him a fit ſubject for Female fancies to work upon. *Sir*, (ſaid he) *I ſhall give you my beſt advice, but I ſhall crave your patience for a little while; for a matter of this weight muſt not precipitately be undertaken: wherefore if you pleaſe to ſee me to morrow, what lies in me ſhall be at your ſervice.* Being juſt gone it happened that a *Stale Maid*, who had more money than beauty, & leſs diſcretion than lechery, came to be reſolv'd of him, *When ſhe ſhould be married*: (for it ſeems by the ſequel ſhe could tarry no longer:) viewing her well, (though ſhe knew not him) he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to perſons of quality. *Madam*, (ſaid he) *I ſhall endeavour your ſatisfaction;* and ſo withdrew into his cloſet. Having ſtaid a while bringing out his Figure, and with much gravity looking thereupon, he thus unridled the myſterious meaning of the Celeſtial Bodies. *Madam, You never was much troubled with the importunate ſuits of amorous Viſitants*, (this he gathered from the deformity of her Phyſiognomy) *they all knowing your indifferency to change your condition, but upon conſiderable grounds; by which means you have almoſt fruſtrated what the Stars have deſigned for you. I hope it is but almoſt*, (ſaid ſhe) *not altogether*: for it troubled her very much to hear ſhe ſhould leave the world without taſting the ſweets of a married life. *No*, (he replied) *for if to-morrow by four of the cloek in the Afternoon, you go into* Moor-fields, *& take a turn or two in the* Uſerers-walk, *you ſhall there meet with a perſon rich & handſome, that at firſt ſight ſhall fall extreamly in love with you; ſlight him not, neither deny him his conjugal*

propoſal; if you do, it will be too late to hope for an huſband. You ſhall diſtinguiſh him from others by theſe ſigns: His Complexion is fair, his Eye ſharp and piercing, his Hair flaxen, of a middle Stature. Her joy had like to have tranſported her beyond the bounds of modeſty, which ſhe could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expreſſion of her gratitude for ſuch welcome tidings; and ſo promiſing him to follow his counſel, ſhe took her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came, who had his leſſon given him: but before he went, he made him give a Bond of 200*l.* to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that Gentlewoman; which he gladly conſented to, and paid that very ſum within ten days after, for according to the directions was given him, he met with that Gentlewoman deſcrib'd to him, as he had been before to her, who at the firſt ſight of each other, was incapable of containing themſelves, but mutually embrac'd (after three or four words paſt) as if he had been her (*quondam*) Dearly Beloved, returned from ſome long Voyage, and went not to their reſpective lodgings till their Marriage was conſummated. But to return where I left off.

Thus we rambled up and down the Countrey; and where the people demean'd themſelves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their Geeſe, Hens, Pigs, or any ſuch mandible thing we met with, made us ſatisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge moſt commonly was very bloody, and ſo mercileſs, that whatever fell into our hands, never eſcaped alive, and in our murders ſo cruel, that nothing would ſatisfie us but the very hearts-blood, of what we killed. The uſual ſacrifices of our implacable revenge, were innocent Lambs, Sheep, Calves,

&c. all which we handled more ſeverely than Priſoners are by Serjeants, when they are not paid their unjuſt Demands; Fees, I ſhould have ſaid, but that by experience I have found, they walk not according to the Rules of ancient Conſtitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their inſatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor Priſoners muſt indulge, (though they rack their ſlender credits, or pawn their Clothes) or elſe they muſt expect leſs kindneſs from them, then a Condemned perſon about to be tyed up by the Hang-man, who will ſtay till he is ready to be turned off. A Gooſe coming among us, we have a trick to make him ſo wiſe, as never to be a Gooſe again: But let the wiſeſt uſe what tricks they can, they never ſhall make ſome Serjeants honeſt men. We ſeize the prey, and leave the Tragical part to our *Morts* or women to act: the *Stage* on which they perform their parts, is either ſome large *Heath*, or *Firze-buſh-Common*, far from any Houſe. This being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houſes of reſt, which are moſt uſually Out-barns of Farmers and Husbandmen, which we make choice of in ſome poor ſtragling Village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they find their Thatcht Houſes too hot to hold them. Theſe Barns ſerve us inſtead of Cook Rooms, Supping Parlours, and Bed-Chambers: having Supt, (moſt commonly in a plentiful manner) we cannot *Couch a Hogſhead*, that is to ſay, ſleep, without good ſtore of *Rum-booz*, that is, drink; and having ſufficiently warm'd our brains with humming Liquor, which our *Lower* (Silver) ſhall procure; if our deceitful *Maunding* (Begging) cannot, we then ſing a catch or two in our own Language,

of which we had good ſtore; which for their bawdry I omit: however, give me leave to inſtance one Canting Song, and I ſhall wave the reſt, being loath to tire you too much with one thing.

BIng out bien Morts, and toure, and toure,
Bing out bien Morts, and toure;
For all your Duds are bing'd awaſt
The bien Cove hath the loure.
I met a Dell, I view'd her well,
She was benſhip to my watch;
So ſhe and I did ſtall, and cloy,
Whatever we could catch.
This Doxie Dell can cut bien whids,
And wap fell for a win;
And prig and cloy ſo benſhiply,
All the Deuſea-vile within.
The boyle was up, we had good luck,
In froſt for and in Snow:
When they did ſeek, then did we creep,
And plant in Ruffe-mans low.
To ſtrawling Ken the Mort bings then,
To fetch loure for her cheats;
Duds & Ruffe-peck, Rombold by Harman beck,
And won by Maunders feats.
Ye Maunders all, ſtow what you ſtall,
To Rome Coves what ſo quire,
And wapping Dell, that niggles well,
And takes loure for her hire.
And Fybe well jerckt, teck rome confect,
For back by glymmar to Maund;
To mill each ken, let Cove bing then,
Through Ruff-mans, jague, or Laund,
Till Crampings quire tip Cove his hire;
And Quire Ken do them catch,

A Canniken, mill quire Cuffin,
So quire to ben Coves watch.
Bien Darkmans then, Bouſe Mort and Ken,
The bien Coves bings awaſt,
On Chates to trine by Rome Coves dine,
For his long lib at laſt.
Bing'd out bien Morts and toure, and toure,
Bing out of the Rome vile bine,
And toure the Cove that cloyd your duds,
Vpon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied ourſelves with drinking and ſinging, we tumbled promiſcuouſly together, Male and Female in Straw, not confining our ſelves to one conſtant Conſort, we made uſe of the firſt that came to hand; by which means inceſts and Adulteries became our paſtimes. By this means I grew weary of their practices, and therefore reſolved to deſert them as ſoon as the firſt opportunity ſhould offer it ſelf, which was in a ſhort time; wherefore at the prefent I ſhall ſay no more of them, only give me leave to give ſome ſmall account of their Language. The firſt Inventor of Canting, as I am informed, was Hanged about four ſcore years ſince: ſuch *Gibberiſh* was never heard of before; ſince which time, there hath not been wanting ſuch, who have taken pains in the polliſhing, refining, and augmenting that Language of the *Devils Imps*. It is a confuſed invention of words; for its Dialect I cannot find to be grounded on any certain Rules; and no wonder ſince the Founders and Practicers thereof, are the chief Fathers and Nouriſhers of Diſorder. Yet even out of that Irregularity a man may obſerve ſome kind of form, and ſome words do retain ſomething of Scholarſhip, as *Togeman*, a Gown,

from *Toga*; *Pannam*, from *Panis* Bread; *Coſan*, *Caſeus*, Cheeſe. The monoſyllable *Cheat*; we uſe as a Relative, as *Nab*, a Head; *Nab-cheat*, a Hat, *&c.* *Cove* or *Cuffin* is in general terms a Man; but by adding *bicn*, which ſignifies good or well, or *Quire*, which is wicked or Knaviſh; you make the word *Cove* ſignifie an *Honeſt man*, or a *Juſtice of Peace.* Pardon the expreſſion, for they call a Juſtice *Quier Cuffin*; that is to ſay, as before mentioned, a wicked, knaviſh, or fooliſh man. To conclude, I ſhall here inſert this little Canting Vocabulary Alphabetically,

Avtem Mort	A married Woman
Abram	Naked
Abram Cove	A Tatter demallion
Autem	A Church
Bughar	A Cur
Bouſe	Drink
Bouſing Ken	An Ale-houſe
Borde	A Shilling
Boung	A Purſe
Bien	Good or well
Benſhiply	Very well
Benar	Better
Bing	To go
Bing a waſte	To go away
Bube	The Pox
Bufe	A Dog
Bleating cheat	A Sheep
Belly cheat	An Apron
Betty	An Inſtrument to break (a door
Bite the Peter or Roger	Steal the Portmantle or (Cloak-bag.)

Budge	One that ſteals Cloaks
Bulk and File	The Pick-pocket and his (mate
Cokir	A Lyar
Cove, *Cuffin*	A Man
Cuffin-Quire	A Juſtice of Peace
Cramprings	Bolt or Shackles
Chats	The Gallows
Canke	Dumb
Crackmans	Hedges
Calle, *Togeman*, *Joſeph*	A Cloak
Couch	To lye or ſleep
Couch a Hogſhead	To go to ſleep
Commiſſion, *Miſh*	A Shirt
Cackling cheat	A Chicken
Caſſan	Cheeſe
Craſh	To kill
Craſhing cheats	Teeth
Cloy	To ſteal
Cut	To ſpeak
Cut bien whids	To ſpeak well
Cut quire whids	To ſpeak evilly
Confeck	Counterfeit
Cannakin	The Plague
Cly the Jerk	To be whipt
Clapperdogeon	A Beggar born
Culle	A Sap-headed Fellow
Dimber	Pretty
Damber	Raſcal
Drawers	Stockings
Duds	Goods

Deuſea-vile	The Country
Dommerar	A Mad-man
Darkmans	Night or evening
Doxie, *Dell*	A Wench
Dock, *Wap*	To ——
Deuſwins	Two pence
Dup	To enter.
Earneſt	A part
As tip me my Earneſt	Give me my part or ſhare
Frummagem	Choakt
Filch	A Staff
Ferme	A Hole
Fambles	Hands
Famble chears	Rings or Gloves
Fib	To beat
Flag	A Groat
Fogus	Tobacco or Smoke
Fencing Cully	One that receives ſtollen (goods
Glymmer	Fire
Glaziers	Eyes
Grannam	Corn
Gentry-Mort	A Gallant Wench
Gan	A Lip
Gage	A Pot or Pipe
Grunting cheat	A Sucking Pig
Giger	A Door
Gybe	Any Writing or Paſs
Glazyer	One that goes in at the (windows

Gilt	A Pick-lock
Harmanbeck	A Conſtable
Harmans	The Stocks
Heave a Booth	To rob an Houſe
Half bord	Six pence
Hearts eaſe	A twenty ſhillings piece
Jocky	A Flayl, or mans Privities
Jague	A Ditch
Jarke	A Seal
Ken	An Houſe
Kinchin	Little
Knapper of Knappers	A Sheep-ſtealer
Kinchin Cove	A little man
Kate	A Pick-lock
Loure	Money
Lightmans	Morning or Day
Lib	To tumble
Libben	An houſe to lie in
Lage	Water
Libedge	A Bed
Lullabie-cheat	A Childe
Lap	Pottage
Lurries	All manner of Cloaths
Maunder	To Beg
Maunders	Beggers
Margery Prater	An Hen
Mill	To ſteal
Make	An half-penny
Mynt	Gold
Muffling cheat	A Napkin
Mumpers	Gentile Beggars
Milken	One that Breaks houſes
Munns	The Face
Nab	An head

Nab-cheat	An Hat
Nab	To take / Or cheat
Palliard	One whoſe Father is a Beggar born
Paplar	Milk-Pottage
Prats	Thighs
Prigg	To Ride
Peckidge	Meat
Pannam	Bread
Plant	To lay or hide
Prigging	Riding
Prancer	An Horſe
Prating cheat	A Tongue
Peake	Any Lace
Pike on the Leen	Run as faſt as you can
Perry	Fearful
Peter	A Portmantua
Prigger of Prancers	An Horſe-ſtealer
Pad	The Highway-man
Plant your whids	Have a care what you ſay
Quarron	A Body
Quacking cheat	A Duck
Quier	Wicked or Roguiſh
Quier-Ken	A Priſon
Quier-Mort	A Pocky Jade
Quier-Cove	A Rogue
Romboyle	A Ward or watch
Rome	Gallant
Rome-vile	London
Rome-Mort	A Gallant Girl
Ruffin	The Devil
Roger	A Cloak-bagg

Ridge-cully	a Goldſmith
Ruffler	an over-grown Rogue
Ruffe peck	Bacon
Rod-ſhanke	a Mallard
Rom-pad	The High-way
Rome-padders	High-way-men
Rome-Culle	a Rich Coxcomb
Swagg	a Shop
Sundge	One that lies under the bed to rob the houſe
Shop-lift	One that ſteals out of ſhops
Stampers	The ſhooes
Stock-drawers	Stockings
Stamps	Legs
Scoure	To wear
Skew	a Diſh
Slate	a Sheet
Strommel	Straw or Hair
Skepper	a Barn
Stow your whids	Be wary
Stalling-Ken	a Brokers Houſe, or an Houſe to receive ſtolen goods
Smelling cheat	A Garden
Solomon	The Maſs
Tour	To look out
Tout his muns	Look in his face
Track up the Dancers	Go up the Stayres
The Cul Snylches	The Man eyes you
Tip the Cole to Adam Tyler	Give what money you pocket-pickt to the next party, preſently
Tip the Miſh	Give the Shirt

Tib o' th' Buttery	a Gooſe
Tip	To give
The Mort tipt me a wink	The Whore gave me a wink
Trine	Tyburn
Trining	Hanging
Tick-Rome	A Licenſe
Tres wins	Three pence
Win	A Penny
Wicher Cully	A Silver-ſmith
Yarum	Milk

This much for a taſte: I think it not worth my pains to inſert all thoſe Canting words which are uſed; it is enough that I have here divulged what words are moſt in uſe. Having now deſerted this *Tawny* Crew; I reſolved to betake my ſelf to a new Trade; which you ſhall underſtand in this following Diſcourſe.

CHAP. VI.

How he went a Begging. What Rules he obſerv'd therein. What Villanies he committed whilſt he profeſt that myſterious Art.

NEceſſity is a thing better known by the effects, than its character; and of all things the moſt inſufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of diſhoneſt and dangerous actions, ſuggeſting ſtrange imaginations, and deſperate reſolutions, ſolliciting things infamous,

and attempting things impoſſible; the product of which is only diſorder, confuſion, ſhame, and in the end ruine. But when Neceſſity ſhall conjoyn with an evil diſpoſition, a deprav'd nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not inſtigate that man to perpetrate? And though he ſeeth monthly examples of perſons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiſeth, will not forbear nor deſiſt from ſuch irregular and life-deſtroying courſes, till they have brought him to the like miſerable Cataſtrophe. Neceſſity had now deeply faln in love with me; and the young Virgin Shame-fac'dneſs (once my Miſtreſs) had forſaken me: for as ſoon as I had pull'd but one thread out of her garment, all the reſt unravell'd; and ſhe not brooking her nakedneſs, changed her maſter, and ſo totally left me. Having now obtained more than a convenient boldneſs I travell'd, and begg'd with very good ſucceſs. But me thought my life was ſomewhat uncomfortable without a Companion, (all Creatures coveting ſociety, but more eſpecially Man:) at length, according to my deſires, I met with one, whoſe long practice in this Art, beſides the Obſervations of his Predeceſſors, deriving his pedegree in a direct line from *Prince Prigg*, indu'd him with ſo much skill as to furniſh me with the knowledge of anything that belonged to the liberal Art of Begging. We ſtraight betook our ſelves to the *Boozing Ken*; and having *bubb'd rumly*, we concluded an everlaſting friendſhip. Than did he recount to me the moſt material things obſervable in our Profeſſion. Firſt, he tun'd my voice to that pitch which might moſt of all raiſe compaſſion; next what form of prayer I was to uſe upon ſuch an occaſion, what upon ſuch, vary-

ing according to the humour of thoſe perſons that I begged of, gathered from their habit or geſture; then he told me when we came to *London*, he would acquaint me what places were moſt fit for our purpoſe, and what times. That I ought not to be too importunate to ſome, always wiſhing well, and loudly praying for the health and ſafety of Eſtate and Limbs of ſuch as deny'd me Alms; but more eſpecially pronounce a *God bleſs you Maſter, and let Heaven reward what you have here done on earth*, if any thing is beſtowed upon me. If any ſhould pity my nakedneſs, and cloath me in garments without holes in them, I ſhould wear them no longer than in the Donors ſight, reſerving my rags to re-inveſt my ſelf, and ſell the other, as unfit and ſcandalous to our Occupation. That we ſhould never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully ſhare the gains. Moreover, he inform'd me the way to make all ſorts of ſeeming ſores and lameneſs. That within the tatter'd rags, there be places provided for private conveyance. Some of maturer age, if they have no children, rent them of ſuch as have; but we had no occaſion for this fallacy. That if I ſaw a door open, I ſhould go in boldly; if I met any in the way, I ſhould then in a very ſubmiſſive manner implore their help in the aſſiſtance of my wants, never deſiring any thing but what was of ſmall value, one half-penny, farthing, or ſome broken cruſt, (if at a door) pretending the not eating of a bit in two days. If the paſſage was clear, whip away what was neareſt to hand. That the time of riſing in the morning be very early, ſhewing my ſelf in the ſtreets: for then will thoſe that paſs by, judge I have no other lodging but what a ſtall affords, that way pro-

curing relief from pitiful-minded perſons, and ſo continue begging till the evening; when it beginneth to be duskiſh, if any then walks ſingly, accoſt him in a begging form; coming up ſo cloſe, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, ſtill carried about for that purpoſe; which is done ſecurely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with theſe, and many more precepts he delivered, we ſet forth on our progreſs. We had not gone far, before we were furprized by the Conſtable, as two ſturdy Vagrants, and as *handſail* to my new Trade, we were both ſoundly whipt out of Town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we miſt all the towns of any conſiderable note in our way, and only frequented Villages; nay at laſt we were forc'd not only to avoid them but the High-ways too: for Travellers obſerving our garb, countenances, and weapon, which was a Battoon, ſuſpecting us, would before they came near us, ſet ſpurs to their horſes and ride as if the Devil drove them. Many petty rogueries we performed by the way, not worthy the commemoration, and therefore I ſhall paſs them over; only this I ſhall inſert.

Travelling the Field-way, we ſtumbled on a *Tinker* and his *Trull* lying by an Hedge-ſide, I knew not what to thinke at firſt they lay ſo ſtill, with much pulling and ſtirring then they awakened; I askt them what they lay there for? They anſwered me, That they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in ſtrength, and of a vaſt proportion, who had lately ſtung ſeveral as well as they. It ſeem'd very ſtrange to us, eſpecially having heard not the leaſt report hereof. To

be ſhort, I deſir'd them to ſhew us the place of his reſidence, which they readily conſented to. In ſtead of this Venomous Animal, they only brought us to its repreſentation in a ſign, where a Cup of double-brew'd Beer was ſold, notable huming geer. The people lik'd the Tinker and his Female Comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we ſhew'd them money: For our Veſtments look'd like the Gleanings of a Rag-merchants Yard. We drank ſtifly till we laid the Woman aſleep again: ſtill the Tinker bore up ſtifly, ſhe had not ſlept long, but up ſhe ſtarted, pull'd up her coats, and in our preſence piſs'd in the middle of the room and ſo ſate her ſelf down, yet awaked not: which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At laſt the Tinker fell aſleep too, having added ſo much to his former burden that he was no longer able to ſtand under it. Now had my wits enough to work on: but finding my ſelf very drowſie, for the ſtrength of the drink had almoſt over-powred me, inſomuch that I was forc'd to adviſe with my friend what courſe I were beſt take to make me a little more ſober: he was ſo well known in ſuch matters, (being an old experienced Pitcher-man) that he quickly counſelled me what to do, he himſelf being not in the leaſt diſturb'd. This was his advice which he did put in practice, he got a Pail full of water, and ſo taking me up by the heels, he clapt my head thereinto; holding me in that manner ſo long, that the *Pail* had like to have prov'd the *Ferry-boat* that ſhould waft me over the *Stygian Lake*; this ſo qualified the heat my head had contracted by my exceſſive drinking of that ſtrong ſtupifying liquor, that I found it had wrought its deſired effects.

After this, we ranſackt their pockets, but found little in the mans; but ſearching the woman in a private place between her Pocket and Placket, we diſcovered ſomething conſiderable, which we took. Having ſo done, we thought it high time to be gone, but firſt we reſolved to make ſome ſport as well as take their moneys, which was thus: I tied to each of their Girdles, behind, a Flaggon-pot, and to each a Label affixt, or a paper of Verſes, and ſo immediately tript off. The Hoſt ſeeing us go out of doors with more than ordinary ſpeed, ran into the room where the *Tinker* and his *Lady* were: he ſuddenly awaked them, telling them we were gone. Hearing this, they haſtily ſtarted up, and reeling ran to overtake us: the Maſter of the houſe ſeeing his Pots dangling at their breech, ran after the *Tinker*, crying, *Stop'em, ſtop'em, Stop the thieviſh Tinker, ſtop the Whore with my Pot.* We were wiſer than to ſtay to hear how the *Tinker* and his *Trull* came off, or to hear the laughter that we undoubtedly raiſed by this waggiſh contrivance, but directed our courſe for *London* directly; where we arrived ſoon enough, nay too ſoon for ſome. This Out-cry ſoon alarm'd the ears of his Neighbours, who with the Hoſt ſeizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our eſcape. The Lines that were about the *Tinkers* Pot, were theſe, to my beſt remembrance.

Serpents but ſting, or only bite ſo deep,
To numb the ſenſe, ſo lay men faſt aſleep.
Wit acts far greater things. I'll ſay no more:
Pay firſt for ſleeping, then the Pots reſtore.

Thoſe that were faſtened to the Womans Pot, were theſe:

'Twas not the Serpent, but ſtrong Beer that ſtung:
The vent *being* ſtopt, *the Drink wrought through the* Bung.

I had like to have forgot to give you an account of a merry paſſage that hapned upon the road we travelled on; beating the hoof we overtook a Cart, but in the name of *Rabbi Abraham*, what think you was in it? In troth even a Squadron of the *Tatterdemallion Regiment*; Some pretendedly blind, others their leggs tied up in a ſtring. A third ſort having a dead Palſy over all one ſide. A fourth ſo lame as if he never had been ſtrung with ſinews. We fell into diſcourſe, asking them whither they were bound thus carted? They anſwered us: every one for his own Country, we have been already jib'd (ſaid one) that is jerkt at the Whipping-poſt, and now enjoy the benefit of a Paſs. The Surly Rogue the Carter obſerving our familiar talk made a ſtand, ſpeaking to us after this manner. Why how now Gentlemen, how dropt you out of the Carts Arſe? what, you go on foot and your Brethren ride? It ſhall not be; eaſe your legs, come I'le lend you an hand. I was about to reply when a fellow came along who knew this Carter, and askt him what he would do, or whither he was going with them Criples. Introth ſaid he, to tell you the truth, I am going to *Kilum* (a Town it ſeems on the borders of *Oxford*-Shire.) Hearing this, I knew not what to think on't but conſulted with the aſpect of the carted crew. Their faces diſcovered nothing but ſence of danger, ſo that now I perceiv'd their thoughts were ſolely imployed about their eſcape, which they did ſoon put in execution. For forthwith the ſtrings were

cut that tied up their legs, who ſilently ſlid out of the cart one after another for fear of diſcovery, the blind could ſee their way down too, the Paralitick could run as ſwift as a Stag; The fellow drove on ſtill, not miſſing his Company preſently, at laſt looking about he ſaw one running this way, another that way, a third contrary to either, a fourth was hiding himſelf in a buſh, thus they were all diſperſt: D'ee here, d'ee here, cry'd the Carter, reſtore the leggs and eyes you borrowed, and then run to the Devil if you can. I heard one of them diſtinctly anſwer him, I'le ſee you hang'd firſt, you murdering Rogue e're I will come near you; dont you remember that you ſaid even now that you were going to Killum. Could you but imagine the various poſtures their cauſleſs fear put them in you would be a great Sharer with me in laughter, I could not retain my ſelf from; this ſtory put me in mind of the like miſtake, whoſe effects proved more fatall in the time of the inteſtine wars in *Ireland*: a Trooper met with a Sculogue or Country-fellow, and demanding of him whence he came, he anſwered from *Killwanium*: whither art a going? to *Killmore* ſayd he: (theſe are two Towns) with that the Soldier ſware he ſhould not kill more, and ſo piſtol'd him.

CHAP. VII.

Coming to London, *he enters himſelf into the ſociety of Beggars, diſtinguiſhed by theſe Titles,* Ben ſeakers, Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, *&c., with a ſhort deſcription of their Manners and Cuſtomes; as alſo a relation of a piece of Theft he committed.*

COming up to *London*, we ſtraight way betook our ſelves to *Newington-Butts*, but by the way, my Friend could not forbear calling on his Friends in *Kent-ſtreet*, there they gave me a Nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to work, to put himſelf into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit; but his chief aim was to make counterfeit Sores or Clymes, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the aſſiſtance of ſome of the Fraternity, he had in an hours time, ſuch a Leg, that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down; and thus they made it; They took unſlaked Lime and Sope, mingled with the ruſt of old Iron: theſe being well temper'd together, they did ſpred it thick on two pieces of leather, which they ap-

ply'd to his Leg, binding it thereunto very hard, which in a ſhort time did fret off the skin, the fleſh appearing all raw; then did they take blood and rub'd it all over his Leg; which being fully dried, made the Leg appear all black, the Sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or ſix matteriſh clouts. He ſoon got us a Doxie too, with a couple of children, (the fitter for our purpoſe) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing himſelf and me with a good luſty *Filch* or *Stick*, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occaſion ſhould ſerve, to filch any thing off Hedges, *&c.* Away we went into *Moor-fields*: he would have made me a *Clyme* too, or an Artificial ſore; but my ſtomack would no wayes accept of his kindneſs. Coming into the Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the *Doxie* with her *Lullaby-cheats* in another; and himſelf in a third, not far diſtant from one another, that one might catch the others *Maunding* at the rebound. I obſerv'd my *Friend* and *Rogue* diligently, what he did, for my own information. One would have ſworn he had been abſolutely lame, for (about to lie down) he ſlid to the earth by his Staff; being on the ground, the firſt thing I took notice of; was the pitious diſtorting of his face into various forms, to ſtir up compaſſion in ſuch as paſſed by him; to which he added, a moſt doleful noiſe to this effect; *For Gods ſake ſome tender hearted Chriſtians, caſt through your merciful eyes one pittiful look upon a ſore, lame, and miſerable wretch: Beſtow one penny or half-penny upon him that is ready to periſh*, &c. I knew not how to tune my voice, for hearkening to him; which he obſerving (when all the people were paſſed by) he held up his ſtick at me, a ſtrong argument of his great diſpleaſure, which

leſt I might farther incur, I was forced to tone it out to ſome purpoſe. Night approaching, we left off begging, reſolving to recreate our ſelves with what we had got: in the way home, I ſaw a very fine piece of Beef lying on a Butchers-ſtall, the woman that kept the ſhop, was telling a Goſſips tale to her neighbour ſo intentively, as I thought I might ſeize on my prey, and ſhe never the wiſer; with that I boldly ſnatched it up; which an oppoſite neighbour perceiving, ran after me, and ſoon took me. I was brought back before the woman, who was ſo wiſe (forſooth) that ſhe would not receive ſtollen goods, though they were her own; and ſo inraged ſhe was, that nothing would ſerve her turn, but I muſt go before a Juſtice; and to add to my puniſhment, ſhe made me carry the ſtollen Beef openly. Coming before his Worſhip, my accuſation was read, aggravated by many feigned circumſtances. The pitiful and ſad caſts of my eyes, were all the Rhetorick I uſed in my own vindication; which the merciful Juſtice perceiving, they were ſo prevalent, as to gain ſome favour from him; whereupon he ask'd the woman what ſhe valued her Beef at? *Why* (ſaid ſhe) *I would not have abated a penny of five ſhillings. Take heed what you ſay, good woman,* (ſaid he) *for ſhould you ſwear this, it is enough to hang him. O Lord, Sir,* (ſaid ſhe) *I would not hang him for a world*; then ſaid his Worſhip, *You muſt prize it under thirteen pence half-penny*; whereupon the Butchers Wife was content to value it at eight pence. The price being ſet, the Beef was conveyed into the Juſtices Kitchin, and the woman put to her Oath; having ſworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and therewith ſent to Priſon. The woman now thought ſhe ſhould

have her Beef ſurely, and without any danger in the reception, and therefore demanded it; but the Juſtice told her he would buy it of her, and ſo asked her what ſhe would have for it: *Sir*, (ſaid ,, ſhe) five ſhillings; I cannot afford it one farthing un- ,, der. How, how! (ſaid he) did you not ſwear but ,, even now, it was worth but eight pence, and do you ,, now talk of five ſhillings? A mear Cheat, Extor- ,, tioner, &c. Make her *Mittimus*, (ſpeaking to his Clerk) which ſo terrified the Woman, that ſhe cried out moſt pitteouſly; good your Worſhip, do not ſend me to Priſon, and do with me what you pleaſe. The Juſtice at this lookt ſtedfaſtly upon her (who was not ſo old but that he could diſcern a handſome woman when he ſaw her) and indeed generally your Butchers have jolly handſome Wives; otherwiſe they may be aſhamed to ſerve ſeven years in handling and chooſing good fleſh for others, and at laſt know not how to make choice of a fine young plump juicie bit for themſelves. I ſay, the Juſtice looking upon her, ſmiled, yet ſeemed to reprove her ſharply, and at laſt pretended he had ſomething to tell her he would not have every one hear, carried her into a withdrawing Room, where they ſtaid not long but out ſhe came and declared openly that ſhe would never deſire more juſtice done her, than that good and juſt Juſtice (as ſhe called him) had ſhown her. And as I underſtood afterwards, he did her ſo much right, that ſhe ſent him in an half dozen of Bottles of Canary, and ſupt with him on her own fleſh; I in the mean time wiſhed them both choaked in the eating thereof; for never did *Roman Catholick* endure greater and ſeverer *pennance* for eating fleſh on *Good-friday*;

then I for coveting this; I have lov'd a Capon the better for it ever ſince. For I was no ſooner gotten out into the ſtreet, but I had a hundred people about me, crying which is the young Rogue; this, this is he ſaid the Butcher, pretending to lay his hand upon my ſhoulder, but gave me a terrible nip by the ear, which made me roar out ſo loud and ſo ſuddenly unexpected, that my Gentleman Uſher that was leading me by the arm to the *White Lyon*, ſtarting, let go his hold. There was no dallying with ſo fair an opportunity, fear and love of ſweet liberty ſo wing'd my feet, that running inſtantly hereupon, I was gotten preſently a great way before them. The Harmanbeck, Huntſman or Conſtable ſeeing this, unable to run himſelf by reaſon of that great load of fleſh he conſtantly carried about him, ſet a pack of young yelping Curs to track the ſcent, but they were ſoon all at a loſs: and ſo I eſcapt their clutches.

CHAP. VIII.

Whilſt a Beggar what cunning tricks he invented to ſteal undiſcovered, and how at laſt ſerved, being caught ipſo facto.

THe next day I went into *Lincolns-Inn-fields*, where I ſaw a company of Rogues, cheats, Pick-pockets, &c., playing at Pidgeon holes (a game much practiſed there, and in More-fields, by ſuch miſchievious and lazie Raſcals) growing very hungry, I ſingled out two or three of the fitteſt for my purpoſe in aſſiſting or contriving Roguery; a little riſing graſs-plat was our counſil-table, where we conſulted what ſtratagems would beſt take and were leaſt known. Come Gentlemen ſaid I (for the Liberal Science or antient profeſſion they ſtudied was enough to gentelize them) what money have yee, *ſine Cerere & Baccho friget ingenium*, we muſt have good liquor that ſhall warm our bloods, enliven and unthaw our congealed ſpirits and make our inventions and fancies as nimble as lightning. Faith ſaid one, I have but three pence; yet that you may ſee how well quallified I am for your company, I'le have money for you preſently. He was not gone much above an half hour but merrily he came

to us; ſitting down he deſired me to put my hand down his neck between his waſcoat and ſhirt, which accordingly I did, but admired to groap out three raſhers of Bacon, which I produced to the Company. Very importunate I was with him, to know what it meant, and how they came there. Give me attention (ſaid he) and I will unravel this riddle thus. Walking along the ſtreets leiſurely, ſtrictly eying any thing on which I might ſeize ſecurely and advantageouſly: at length I ſaw a good pittiful old Woman (for ſo ſhe ſeem'd to me by her countenance) ſelling Bacon, who I obſerv'd did put what money ſhe took into a pocket made in her Apron. Upon this ſight Fancy me thought ſuggeſted to me that her money was as already as ſurely mine as if I had already confin'd it cloſe Priſoner in my leathern dungeon. And thus I wrought my deſign. Good Woman ſaid I, (ſpeaking in a whining tone,) how do you ſell your Bacon a pound? Seven pence (ſaid ſhe,) whereupon I began a lamentable oration, telling her that I would willingly have half a pound but that I had but three pence; that my Maſter was a very cruel man, half ſtarving his ſervants; come give me your money ſirrah, ſhe ſaid, for once you ſhall have it ſo; weighing it, I deſired her to cut it into ſlices and thruſt it down my back; She asked my reaſon for it, I told her that my Maſter uſually ſearcht me, and ſhould he find any ſuch thing in my pockets, he would half murther me. Alas poor boy (quoth the good old Woman) lean down thy head towards me, ſurely I will do thee that ſmall kindneſs: whilſt ſhe was larding my back, I got my hands underneath her Apron, and with this ſhort knife nipt of the bottom of her pocket, and thus have I done my part to procure yee both

food and money. As I lookt on this as baſe ingratitude, ſo I could not but tacitely within myſelf, both condemn and abhorr ſuch ſociety, remembring the words of *Juvenal.*

Ingratos ante omnia pone ſodales.

Of all perſons we ſhould ſhun moſt the ingrateful. Neither could I forbear (though I was joyful of the purchaſe) to read him a publick lecture on his ingratitude; what (ſaid I) ſhall we find gratitude in Beaſts (as in the Lyon that was healed by *Androniçus* in the wood, which afterwards ſaved his life in the Theater) and yet ſhall we be unthankful! I have read a ſtory of an *Aſp* that was kept and nouriſhed by an Husbandman at his own table, feeding him there dayly; at laſt ſhe brought forth two young ones, one whereof poiſoned the Husbandmans ſon, the old one (as my Author tells me) in the ſight of the Father killed the offender and as if aſhamed of his ingratitude departed the houſe with the other and was not ſeen after. I would have proceeded, but that they told me if I did, they would have no men of morals in their company, and ſo away we went to Beggars Hall, hard by, where we called luſtily. Fearing we should ſpend all the money, I deſired the company that ſome ſmall portion might be left in my hands as a ſtock to trade on, which they conſented to.

Having feaſted our ſelves well, before we departed, the next days meeting was appointed, when and where. Againſt the time I had made a quantity of Serpents, Crackers, &c., and brought them with me. When firſt I ſhow'd them, they all fell out a laughing to think I could improve our ſtock by ſuch de-

vices. Have but the patience to hear me (ſaid I) and then condemn me if you ſee cauſe ; Ever ſince I parted from you I have been racking my invention to find out ſome way whereby I might render my ſelf both deſerving of, and acceptable to your company, and I think this my firſt diſcovery will do it ; I would have you *Jack*, *Tom* and *Will*, take an equal quantity of Crackers and Serpents, and anon at night let us go into the Market, where each of you ſhall obſerve each of us : where ever we make a ſtand be ſure you throw a Serpent, *&c.* at that very place ; and then will we take the opportunity of the peoples confuſion and fright, and ſo march off with what we can lay hands on. This plot was very well liked of by all. The evening approaching (it being near *November*) we went to put what I had contrived to execution. The firſt that was thrown was where I ſtood, which fell into the Basket on which a Market Woman ſate, the Woman ſtarting up to extinguiſh it, ſuddenly it bounced in her face, the ſmoak whereof and powder, for a little time ſo blinded her, that ſhe could not ſee me walk off with a ſhoulder of Mutton, my comrades had the like ſucceſs with a Pig and a Gooſe. Having done enough as we thought for that time, we went to a place of our acquaintance, where we had the Mutton, Pig, and Gooſe roaſted, giving the Landlord the Pig for dreſſing, bread, and drink. We were ſo ſucceſsful for the firſt, that we made ſeveral tryals afterwards not ineffectual. But in fine, I found the Proverb verified, *The pitcher goes not ſo often to the well, but that it comes home crackt at laſt.* One time I went, and having ordered them to do as they had done before, a Serpent came flying on the Womans ſtall where I ſtood and fell into her lap,

which being bruſht off, fell underneath her coats, and there burſt, in the mean while I had gotten a loyn of Veal and was trooping off with it, the Woman miſſing it ſuſpected me by my great haſte, followed me and laying hands on me found her meat under my coat. O have I caught you Mr. Theif. Miſtake not good Woman (ſaid I) it is no ſuch matter. For as I ſtood by your ſtall, the wildfire which ſome unhappy Knaves threw, ſo ſcared me, that having your meat in my hand at that time cheapning it, I was ſo frighted that I ran away with your Veal to ſhun the danger, forgetting to lay it down, wherefore pray take it again. Taking her meat, here is a pure excuſe indeed (ſaid ſhe) but this ſhall not ſerve your turn, and with that, gave me two or three ſuch blows on my chops, that I verily thought ſhe had made me ſwallow half my teeth. Another that had heard our diſcourſe takes me to task after this: Come ſirrah, you love the fleſh well, but 'tis fit you ſhould pay for it. And it is but juſt if you will have my fleſh, I ſhould have ſome of yours. Up ſtraight he ſnatcht his Knife, and holding me by the ear I verily thought he would have markt me as he uſed to do his calves. My crying and praying ſo far prevailed, that he only kickt me to his next Neighbour and ſo from one to another, ſo that though it cannot be ſaid I ran the Gantlet, yet between the Pannyers on both ſides, I was kickt the Gantlet from the Standard in *Cheapſide* to the conduit at the lower end thereof. This unhappy adventure made me betake my ſelf to my old courſe of begging, reſolving as yet not to deal in that trade I had litle experience in.

CHAP. IX.

A Merchant ſeeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his Houſe, and entertains him as his Servant.

ONe day as I was begging, more fervently then formerly, having gotten not one penny that day, ſo that I found a civil war between my Guts and Stomack, yet knew not how to ſalve up the difference; neither would they hearken to any thing but a Bill of Fare. In the midſt of this combuſtion, a Tradeſman of no mean quality, paſſing by, took a ſtrong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleaſed with the form of my face and body. He asked me, Whence I came? what my Parents were? and what I intended? I anſwered him with well contriv'd forgeries, that ſeemed to give him good ſatisfaction: liking well both my ſpeech and underſtanding, he bid me follow him, which accordingly I did; having conducted me to his houſe, he preſented me to his Wife, my intended Miſtris, telling her his reſolutions of receiving me into his ſervice; at which ſhe bleſt her ſelf, ſaying, *Prithee, Sweet-heart, from what Dunghil didſt thou pick up this* Shakerag, *this Squire of the body? This thing dreſt up in ſippits? This Scarecrow, what ſhall I call him?* (for I am ſure I had but few cloathes on, but what were rather fit to dung ground, then to be ſent to

the Paper-mill.) Said my Maſter, *Reſt yourſelf ſatisfied, ſince it is my pleaſure, this ſhall be ſo: neither can I give you any reaſon for my fancy.* Whereupon he commanded me to be ſtript, and well waſhed; in the mean time cloaths were provided for me, a ſuit of one of his Apprentices. A great Veſſel like *Cornelius* his Tub, was filled with water to bath me, but ſo cunningly ſet by the Maids, (though privately) that they might ſee me all over naked. It was my good fortune to obſerve my Miſtreſs ſtanding in a private place on purpoſe to ſee me diſmantled; and after I was waſhed, ſhe commended the whiteneſs of my skin and well-proportioned limbs; and by the conſequent, approv'd within her ſelf of ſomething elſe, for I was then a ſtubbed Lad. Being new clothed, and raiſed to this unexpected fortune, how ſtrangely did this vain blaſt puff up my empty pate! However, I was reſolved to carry my ſelf diſcreetly, leſt I ſhould overthrow the ſtate I was then in, not yet well ſettled. Wherefore I behaved myſelf very reſpectfully towards my Maſter, and ſerved him as punctually as I could, endeavouring that my ſervice ſhould requite his kindneſs in as great meaſure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavour was not only to pleaſe my Maſter, but my Miſtreſs too, even in the meaneſt ſervices; ſo officious to her, that I was ready to perform the office of a Chamber-maid. The maid-ſervants I obliged alſo, by doing their duty, as making the fires, waſhing the Kitching, nimbly and willingly doing any thing they would have me; by which I ſo ingratiated my ſelf among them, that I always had their good eſtimation among themſelves, and good word to my Maſter

and Miſtreſs when occaſion ſerved. Very careful I was, not to report what I heard, leſt I by that means, involv'd my ſelf in the affairs of others, without advantage to my ſelf. For by meddling in others matters, I ſhould breed animoſity among them, and reap juſt hatred to my ſelf, when diſcovered to be the too too buſie intelligencer. This I looked on as an undeniable maxime, That nothing more recommends a man, then a ſilent tongue, (unleſs neceſſity required the contrary) a fair complacential carriage, and a faithful heart. My Maſter in a humour would ſometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefeſt care not to reply, knowing, that what ſhould be alleadged as to my juſt vindication, would but aggravate his ſpirits being paſſionate, alwayes punctually performing what was commanded me. To try my fidelity, he would lay a ſixpence on the Counter, or in the Window, as if it had been left there forgotten. I was wiſer then to be caught ſo, and therefore would inſtantly carry him the money. One time ſending me out to buy ſomething, inſtead of a ſhilling he gave me among other money a piece of Gold; I took no notice of it then, but being gone a little way, I came running back out of breath to reſtore him the piece; this and the like made my Maſter ſtand amazed at my ſeeming honeſty. A ſtrange alteration, you will ſay; but all this was only to get a good eſteem, whereby I might gain faſt footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and had my patience tried to the height? Yet I gain'd much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to uſe it, and the baſeneſs of my nature not perſwaded me to abuſe it. So much credit I had gotten with my Maſter, by my civil behaviour, that he raiſed me *gradatim*,

ſtep by ſtep. Being ignorant of Arithmetick; he cauſed a Maſter to come to his houſe to inſtruct me, which I ſoon apprehended, and by that means was capacitated to keep his accompts, which was the thing I aim'd at, intending thereby the profecution of mine own ends, notwithſtanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindneſs to me undeferv'd: which puts me in mind of the concluſion of an Epitaph I have read on a Tomb, which the Maſter erected for the perpetual commemoration of his fervants cordial reſpect and honeſty.

View oft his Tomb-ſtone, ſince we ſeldome find,
A ſervant faithful, and his Maſter kind.

Now to the intent I might compleat my conqueſt of his heart, I pretended my ſelf an *Independent*, not omitting any opportunity of going to their meetings; and upon all occaſions would rail againſt Steeple-houſes (as we called them) and tear the Biſhops holland ſleaves to pieces, calling them the impure rags of the Babyloniſh Whores Smock, &c. I would pray mornings and evenings ſo loud, ſo late, and ſo early, that my neighbours could hardly ſleep for me, much leſs thoſe of our own Family. Notwithſtanding all this piety, not a day paſt wherein I cheated not my Maſter. Thus did I delude his eyes with pretended ſanctity, yet concluded with the Poet,

Da mihi fallere, da juſtum Sanctumque videri,
Noctem peccatis & fraudibus objice nubem.

Let me ſeem juſt; to cheat the better ſhrow'd,
Let my deceits be hidden in a Cloud.

How much did I ſilly fool deceive my ſelf, thinking my ſelf ſecure, becauſe no mortal eye ſaw me. Be not thus cheated as I was, for aſſure your ſelf there is no darkneſs ſo thick and obſcure, which the All-over-ſeeing and Eternal piercing eye cannot penetrate——

Cernit Deus omnia vindex.

A paſſage remarkable in *Eraſmus* I read to this purpoſe concerning a young Gentleman, whom a wanton Lady tempted, who uſed this expreſſion as his laſt and beſt Refuge. *Art not thou aſhamed to do that in the ſight of thy Maker, and the Holy Angels, which thou art aſhamed to do in the ſight of men.* We are afraid of diſgrace with men, not caring for the Grace of God.

CHAP. X.

How he came acquainted with lewd and vicious Apprentices. What Trade they drove together. What places and times of meeting.

I Was as officious at home, as referved from all company, never ſtirring forth unleſs called out by my Maſters buſineſs, till my next Neighbours man intruded himſelf into my acquaintance. Who ſo farr inſinuated himſelf into my affections, that I was in a manner wholly ruled by him. He and I met on a time abroad, and would not be deny'd but he muſt needs faſten a glaſs of Wine, conducting me to a Tavern where the Drawer (as he ſaid) was his friend. After ſeveral Congratulations paſt, order was given for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, this young man began to tell me what an honeſt fellow this *Ralph* the Drawer was; which words he had no ſooner utter'd, but I heard him cry at the Bar, *A Pint of White-wine in the Roſe ſcore*; and immediately in he brings it, and in formality a glaſs, but we made no uſe of it, for he was fearful his Maſter would diſcover the cheat, and therefore deſired us to be ſpeedy in the diſpatch, and ſo we made but two draughts thereof. Away he goes again, and brings in another, not after the ſame manner, but crying it *Right*, bringing

withal a Quart-Bottle in his Codpiece: *Now, Gentleman,* (ſaid he) *uſing your diſcretion, you may ſit and talk freely, without either fear or ſuſpition,* uſing your glaſs and when your pint is empty fill him again you ſhall not want for liquor Ladds. This ſomething amazed me at firſt, till my Neighbour *Thomas* told me that this was frequent, and that he and two or three friends at any time could be drunk for ſix pence a piece. *Come, come, you are but a Novice,* ſaid he; *but if you will be ruled by me, I'll ſhew you the way to ſoften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a ſeven years Apprenticeſhip ſeem ſhort, by living as merry, nay more jovially than our Maſters. They may be deſtracted with cares how to procure neccſſaries, pay Rent, ſatisfie Creditors, whilſt we have none of theſe preſſures and diſturbances on our ſpirits. What though we have an harſh word or a ſmart blow, it may be, a broken pate? We will make his Till ſpring a leak for it, or his Goods go to Pot, and break him at laſt too. It may be his Proviſion is neither dainty nor plentiful, nay, reſtrained, from our liberty too: 'tis only by day then, we will be Maſters of our own at night, not wanting any thing that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our inſatiate ſenſes.*

I asked him how could this be done? He anſwered, *If I would ſwear to be ſecret and faithful, and become a Brother of the ſociety, he would not only tell me how all this* (afore recited) *might be performed, but would likewiſe introduce me into the place where theſe jolly Blades uſed to congregate.* I ſoon conſented, rejoycing exceedingly at this bleſſed opportunity, (as I thought it) wherein I might ſail in the Ocean of delight, bound for no other Port but that of Pleaſure or Profit, never conſidering the inevitable Quickſands which ſuch meet withal, ſteering that

courſe, having no other Compaſs to ſail by then their own Fancy. Very eager I was to have him inform my judgment with what at preſent I underſtood not, but doubted not in a little time to be as forward as the foremoſt in any moral wickedneſs. Firſt, he informed me, that I muſt inſinuate myſelf into the Maids favour, ſo that, when the occaſion ſhould require, ſhe may let you have the Key of the Street-door, or elſe ſit up for your return, making her ſenſible that ſhe doth not ſo break her ſleep for nothing. That I muſt never fail coming home to gratifie her kindneſs. If ſhe be modeſt and continent, only kiſs her, and that my behaviour ſhould not be either rude or laſcivious, that all my expreſſions ſhould favour of *Platonique*, or chaſt love, often repeating this to her; *O that I was out of my time, if it were for nothing elſe but to repay thee thy love! So great an acknowledgement I have of thy civilities, that I hope a time will come wherein I ſhall make full ſatisfaction for all, &c.* If ſhe be buckſome, or wantonly given, ſhe will never be content with hopes, promiſes, and proteſtations, vows, and ſuch like windy ſtuff; wherefore you muſt kiſs, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to ſomewhat elſe: She may put you off at firſt with a *Piſh*, a *Fye*, or *Pray be civil;* yet be ſo far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigorouſly, ſhe will prompt you herſelf, to try what mettle you are made of; if dull, ſhe will make you the Subject of her private nay and publick laughter and ſcorn. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent ſeveral ways. Now to tell you what manner of perſons we are; that are confederates; there are few among us but what are of ſeveral

Trades ſelected, as *Linnen Drapers, Mercers, Woollen Drapers, Silkmen, Hoſiers, Haberdaſhers, Merchants, Grocers, Goldſmiths, Jewellers, Ribbandſellers, Exchange-men,* to which add a *Drawer* and an *Oyl-man,* the one to furniſh us with good Liquor, and the other to prepare our pallates for it. A great many Trades there are which ſignifie nothing in our Commonwealth as *Pewtrers, Braziers, Plummers, &c.,* we are only for ſuch as will profit the body, pleaſe the Pallate & fill the Pocket. Every one brings his ſeveral Commodities at the place of meeting, then do we exchange or barter one with another for what each reſpective perſon wants; either to ſupply his own occaſion, or his Miſtreſs: for it is to be ſuppoſed ſuch a thing muſt be had; when procured, muſt be maintained, though to the deſtruction of our Maſters Eſtates, and ruine of our bodily health. Further he added, that our Maſters might not detect us in the purloining his goods, you muſt not (ſaid he) take too much of one ſort of Commodity.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promiſed to meet that day ſeven night at the place appointed; and ſo we parted. Coming home, I immediately put theſe preſcriptions into practice; firſt; taking notice of what Goods we had greateſt quantity; and whatſoever Commodity my Maſter forgot he had: I always ſecured it as mine own: nay, ſometimes I would try him; *There was ſuch a perſon enquiring for ſuch a thing to day when you were abroad, but I could not find it:* it may be he would ſay, *We had it not;* ſuiting my deſign according to deſire. Having taken a thorrow view of the Shop and Ware houſe, I ſaw ſo many ways of advantage, if aſſiſted by a cleanly conveyance, that I could ſnip as well as the moſt forward of them all.

The next thing I had to do, was to endear myſelf to the chief maid, who was one of thoſe that lay covertly to ſee me waſh myſelf in the Tub; and as ſhe confeſt ſince, took an affection to me from that hour. It required no long time to court her into a compliance; her Complexion or Temperament, forcing her acceptance of anything amorouſly inclined. The colour of her hair inclined to Red, which colour (though I know not for what reaſon) I love above any: This may be partly the reaſon, becauſe as that Complexion hath alwayes the concomitant of a a very white skin, ſo it hath two inſeperable Companions, Plumpneſs and Buckſomneſs: Her skin as the uſual attendant of Red or Flaxeniſh hair, as I ſaid) was as white as whiteneſs it ſelf: Her Cheeks naturally painted with *Vermilion;* plump were her Cheeks and Lips, with a mole thereon, and a dimple in her Chin, as the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate herſelf to the ſervice of *Venus.*

Having a fit opportunity, after ſome amorous diſcourſe, I deſired her ſhe would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having buſineſs of importance to impart to her: She condeſcended to my propoſition. As ſoon as our Maſter and Miſtreſs were gone to take their reſt, her impatience to hear what I would ſay, made her ſoon ſend the reſt to bed. The houſe being thus cleared, and all things ſilent as the Air, when Winds into their hollow grots repair, I acquainted her with the greatneſs of my affection, which I delivered with all the Rhetorick I could invent, ſtill touching that ſtring which produced Loves harmonious concord; So fervent I was in my expreſſions, and ſo ardent and hot in my deſires, that I ſoon melted the

conjealed iceneſs of her Chaſtity: But firſt there were mutual Articles reciprocally drawn and agreed unto, *viz.*

That if ſhe proved with ehild, I ſhould marry her.

That I *ſhould devote my ſelf to her ſervice, and nones elſe.*

That we ſhould both endeavour to make uſe of all opportunities for the enjoyment of eaeh other.

That to prevent diſeovery, we ſhould often fall out before people, that without ſuſpition in private we might agree the better; *throwing oftentimes bones at my head when ſitting at Dinner, beeauſe ſuſpition ſhould not deprive her of the Griſſel.* So great was our ſeeming feud ſometimes, that our maſter was called in to part us.

After this I gave her plenary inſtructions as to my affairs, which ſhe faithfully and punctually promiſed to obſerve. Then did I put my hand to the inſtrument, and ſealed the Articles with two witneſſes.

The night was come wherein I was to meet according to promiſe. I acquainted my *Amoretta* with my intention of going out at twelve a clock; and that my Maſter might not in the leaſt ſuſpect me, I went to bed, but aroſe again at the hour promiſed. The firſt time I would not carry any Commodities with me, reſolving to ſee firſt what they did. Being come to the houſe, I was introduced by my Neighbour *Thomas* into a private back-room, among the aſſociated Brethren. I was much amazed to ſee ſuch variety of Wares lie upon a long Table, as Silks, Stuffs, Cloth, Linnen and Woollen, Stockings, Ribbands, Muffs, Hoods, Scarfs, and the like. Some of them came to me,

and welcomed me as a Brother, drinking to me in a Beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar.

Moſt of the Company being met, they truckt with each other according to their convenience, furniſhing themſelves with what they either ſtood in need of themſelves or their friends. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retalliate in lieu: They told me my Credit was good, which is the Soul of Commerce; telling me they ſhould have occaſion to make uſe of me in the like nature another time. I took with me only ſuch things as might be proper to beſtow at home, on whom I had lately engaged my affections; which I prefented her with, accompanied with many expreſſions and proteſtations of a never-dying affection. She accepted of my kindneſs with much gratitude, but thought ſhe could not fully remunerate me without a re-admiſſion into her private and then particular favours, I could eaſily diſcern her inclinations by griping of my hand, kiſſing as if ſhe would devour me, the palpitation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the ſame deſires, ſo that with much facility we two clapt up a bargain. After which; I would have betaken my ſelf to my reſt in my own bed, but that was diſpleaſing to her, I perceived nothing would content her, but that we ſhould be bed-fellows. I ſoon aſſented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I deſired her to go up firſt, telling her I would follow inſtantly after. By that time I thought ſhe was in bed, up marcht I the ſtairs, which creackt as if they had conſpired a diſcovery; Coming up to the higheſt ſtair, I raiſed my foot (being fearful of making any

noife) thinking there had been another, it defcended with ſuch precipitation, that I made the houſe ecco. The Chamber wherein my Maſter and Miſtreſs lay, (the maid lying in a Trundle bed underneath them) was right againſt this Stair-head. My Maſter had taken a doſe more then ordinary of Sack, ſo that this noiſe awaked him not: my miſtreſs at the firſt hearing thereof, imagined Thieves had broken into the houſe; ſhe endeavoured to wake her Husband, by ſtirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the beſt way to lie ſtill, expecting the event. In the mean time I lay *per duc*, ſtirring not till I imagined my Miſtreſs aſleep again. The maid, concluding I durſt not adventure further by reaſon of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound ſleep. Finding (after a conſiderable time) all things ſtill and quiet, I entred the Chamber, dark as Hell, and in a low voice, groaping the contrary way, I cried, *Where art? Here, here*, ſaid my Miſtreſs, in a whiſpering tone: minding from whence the ſound came as near as I could, I directed my foot-ſteps to that place: The ſame words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that ſide of the bed whereon my Miſtreſs lay. Taking her about the neck, I kiſt her a thouſand times: uſing then all the alluring and loving expreſſions I could invent: not perceiving my miſtake, I made all the haſte I could (and all too little) to undreſs my ſelf; which was done in an inſtant: Opening the Cloths to come to bed, *Hold*, ſaid my Miſtreſs, I *have a Bed fellow already; what I have ſuffered you to do, was only as a tryal to underſtand what you intended. Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I ſhall talk with you farther to morrow.* I durſt not reply, not daring to

ſtay longer, but betook my ſelf to my own Chamber, poſſeſt with fear and ſhame, I nothing but toſt and tumbled all that night, taking not the leaſt reſt.

In the morning early I was up, ſhewing my ſelf more than ordinary diligent. But, Lord, what a confuſion I was in, when I ſaw my Miſtreſs come into the Shop? I made an hundred pretences to ſtoop behind the Counter, and rectifie diſordered Wares: So buſie I was with my back towards her, that ſhe could not have ſo much as a ſight of me. At length ſhe comes up cloſe to me, and turning me about, ſaid, *Indeed you take too much pains, you are too laborious; fair and ſoftly; there is a great while to night yet: deſiſt a little, I muſt have a word with you.* Hearing this, I preſumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed; for from thence I received a moſt alluring ſmile, inſtead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me theſe expreſſions:

Moſt reſpectful Miſtreſs, I do with ſhame confeſs my ſelf in a great error: but if you will conſider that the cauſe thereof was irreſiſtable; I hope you will in ſome meaſure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulneſs ſpeaks my Apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which ſometimes boyls beyond its bounds. Beſides the temperature of my body, (being of a Sanguine complexion) did add much fuel to that fire.

She admired to hear me ſpeak in ſuch a Dialect; but laying aſide her wonder, ſhe bid me tell her the whole truth, and what Contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuſe the maids forwardneſs, and that I only deſigned to

ſurprize her unawares. This Sophiſtry of mine did not in the leaſt prevent my Miſtreſſes prying wit, and quick underſtanding, from ſearching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at laſt, though involved in a labyrinth of obſcurities. She told me plainly ſhe knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and *deſired* me, in ſtead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, ſince her reſolution was to divorce our perſons. Adding moreover, that if I was ſo amorouſly inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exerciſe my paſſion on, I ſhould elect ſuch a one, whoſe merit grounded on Beauty, Birth, Wealth, and Power, ſhould command my love, and finally eternize my terreſtrial happineſs, and ſo vaniſht from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty five years had not totally deſtroyed her beauty, but there was ſtill remaining the ruines of a good face: Her Birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her Wealth (which ſhe had at her own diſpoſal) whiſpered in my ear more than a common felicity. Her laſt words left a deep impreſſion on my imagination, which were not ſo enigmatically delivered, but that I could eaſily interpret them advantageouſly enough to my purpoſe. I reſolved within my ſelf to acquieſce, leaving this affair to time to bring it to perfection.

CHAP. XI.

What devices he found out to Cheat his Maſter; and what ways he had to ſpend it laviſhly, at unſeaſonable hours, on Wine, Wenches, &c.

THe time being come again, for the meeting my ſnipping Brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants preſently clapt me aboard, reſolving not to let my commodities lie long on my hands, our truck was ſoon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then like true Sons of *Bacchus*, we trouled the full boles about, wiſhing him that pledged not his fellow, in a dark rainy night on a tyred Jade bare ridged in a dirty lane, with a pocky Whore behind him, and his own bones rotten, nine Miles from an houſe, not knowing one ſtep of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us tumble off whole Boles like ſo many thimbles full. Half a dozen of theſe a piece, were a *preludium* to our Supper, which uſually was compoſed of the choiceſt viands. Neither could we eat, without our female Conſorts, whom Wine and Muſick waited on. After Supper, we fell again to our old *Bacchanalian* ſport, drinking, Dancing, or privately treat-

ing our Miſtreſſes at a venereal Banquet. When we had drank our ſelves to ebriety, and ſatiated our luſtful appetites, we betook our ſelves to our reſpective habitations, our Maſters not dreaming of our night-Revellings. Our own expences were neither valuable nor comparable to what our Mad-Dames put us to, which were ſo great (though they made me rack my invention to ſupply their pretended neceſſities) that all my various endeavours could not anſwer their expectations. I had taken my Gentlewoman a chamber, for which I paid three ſhillings a week, and upon the bare promiſe of a Whore, that ſhe would prove conſtant to me, I allowed her a weekly penſion beſides; I never came to receive a private favour, but I muſt return her for it, ſome ſpecial and particular courteſie; as a Scarf, an Hood, a Ring, a Whisk, or rich Lace for her Smock. If I failed at any time of paying my promiſed Tribute I ſhould be ſeverely checked, nay, ſometimes threatned that I had undone her; at the leaſt denyed my accuſtomed Familiarity; then ſhe would pretend that ſhe had refuſed many eminent Matches mearly for my ſake, that now ſhe ſaw her ſelf meerly deluded, and would endure it no longer; and would tell my Maſter our whole proceedings. If I had performed the main, and not preſented her when I came with ſome other gratuity, as a work of Supererogation, ſhe would deride my Courtſhip, telling me, *I was an empty fellow, that I beſtowed my favours on others and that made me ſo ſparing to her.* And that ſhe ſcorned to be a copartner in my heart. When ſhe thought ſhe had ſufficiently nettled me, (fearing to ſtrain my paſſion too high) then a little comply, clapping me on the cheeks, calling me Smock-face Rogue; come hither Sirrah,

I know what you would have, I'le ſave your longing. Such ſweetned words ſoon over powered my my ſourneſs: and notwithſtanding my intended hardneſs, I could not forbear melting in her arms. We durſt not take much time in dalliance, my duty calling me home; but I regarded not that ſo much as to preſerve my Maſters good opinion of me. Now ſince opportunity offereth it ſelf ſo appoſitly, give me leave to lay open this ſubtle Female, on whom a ſtrong aſcendancy of *Mercury* and *Venus*, had beſtowed ſo liberal a Talent for Whoring, and Cheating, that few eſcaped her circumvention that came into her company. The Relation I ſhall give of this miracle of Female ſubtilty, will be much advantagious to all ſorts of perſons. By this thoſe that are viciouſly inclined may be adviſed into a Reformation before they have occaſion for Repentance: And they who defying all Admoniſhment, and are reſolved to be wicked in ſpite, may out of an apprehenſion of the enſuing danger and puniſhment, be deterred into caution, *&c.*

A SHORT SURVEY OF A CUNNING WHORE.

WHen firſt I made my ſelf acquainted with her, I thought my happineſs not inferiour to the Grand Seignors, for although he had in his Seraglio the injoyment of an hundred or more of the moſt ſelect beauties of the Univerſe, yet did I fancy all thoſe external glories contracted into one, and poſſeſſed my matchleſs Miſtreſs. As ſhe was fair, ſo well featured, ſprightly and young, four dangerous advantages, when they are accompanied with Wit, Diſſimulation, Craft and Impudence, with a covetous deſire of injoying of what others poſſeſt. She could not be ignorant of her trade, ſince her Mother was a profeſt Bawd from the time ſhe brought her into the world. Taking notice of her extraordinary handſomneſs even from the Cradle, ſhe reſolved to dedicate her to the ſervice of *Venus*, not doubting but the bent of her nature would render her very capable of that employ. Being about thirteen years of age, her beauty was ſo much taken notice of, that her lovers ſwarmed about her. The old Bawd her Mother was ſo overjoyed to ſee ſo large and goodly a Troop of *Cupids* Lanciers, her daughters life-guard, and doubt-

ed not now but that ſhe ſhould obtain the plenary fruition of her hopes, and therefore entertained them all, yet watching them ſo narrowly, that none ſhould taſte her fruit unleſs they bought the tree at a dear rate. She ſo well obſerved her daughters natural policy that ſhe was well aſſured her inſinuations would in a little time command both the hearts and purſes of thoſe who courted her. Her deſign proved as fortunate as ſhe could wiſh, in as much as among the many that languiſhed for her, there was one ſo wealthy as that he never knew the want of a thouſand pound, whoſe heart was inflamed by her eyes.

She had now aſſumed the title of Madam, which one ſhould think belonged to none but who are nobly extracted, however, why ſhould ſhe baulk it, ſince it is an honour coſts little or nothing, and as ſoon conferred as ſpoken. This Gentleman was ſo inſnared by the witchcrafts of a lovely face, that though he knew the profeſſion and practice of the Mother, and the daughters want of honour, honeſty and wealth, yet he reſolved upon a marriage within few days without the tedioufneſs of Treaties. When there was a firm contract concluded between them before witneſſes, the charitable Bawd his intended Mother in law, came to him, and told him if his ſtomack was raw and could not ſtay ſo long till the meat was ſerved up with the uſual ceremonies; he ſhould have a bit for a ſtay, and taſte beforehand, the propoſition was not unwellcome to him, wherefore he inſtantly took earneſt of the happineſs he vainly believed would bear him company *durante vita*. Not long after they had their nuptials celebrated, and that he might not diſparage himſelf in the worlds eye, as to his inconſiderable

choice; he bought his wife at his proper charge, new cloaths, splendid enough you may guess, with the appendixes of gallantry, rings, jewels, &c. and so brought her home to his house in much state. She had not long lived with him, but she followed the dictates of a luxurious disposition, and a libertine, hating to have her liberty circumscribed or bounded, especially by one so remote to her nature and unsuitable in years, wherefore under pretence of visiting this friend and that couzen, she so blinded her old Husband by this plausible excuse as that she made her frequent sallies abroad pimp for her desires. Her Husband observing her often gaddings and profuse expences, could do no less then suspect more then he was willing to understand, and therefore not only abridged the liberty she took, but devested her of those ornaments he had bestowed upon her, which so animated her to revenge, that she resolved not to let slip the first opportunity. She soon got acquainted with one suitable to her purpose, a person as much ingaged in debauchery, as his credit was in the world, yet so pleasant he appeared in her eyes, as that a little courting made her wholly at his devotion. Hence we may observe the dangerous consequences of disproportion of age in matching. Surely there can be no agreement between fire and water, between freezing Winter, and Scorching Summer. Besides when a Woman comes once to have mean *thoughts* of her Husband (upon any *account* whatever) She is then in the way to affect any body else. She now not only slighted, but hated him, which made her launch out into all the excesses that exasperated, and vicious Woman-kind can imagine or con-

trive, from whence ſhe may either derive fatisfaction or advantage, neither could ſhe want aſſiſtance or councel, as long as the old experienced Bawd her mother lived.

This good old Dotard finding himſelf ſo abuſed, that the whole world muſt needs call his reaſon in queſtion; if he ſuffered any longer his looſe wife to Career thus in Luxury and Wantonneſs, reſolved within himſelf to call her to a ſevere accompt, intending withal to reduce her by kindneſs, as well as ſharpneſs, and ſo equally to temper his frowns with ſmiles, that ſhe ſhould not tell which of thoſe two ingredients were moſt powerful in the effecting the cure of his luſt ſick-wanton.

Returning one evening from her revels abroad, the old Cuckold took her to task; ſharply reproving her for her Gaddings, her Tavern meetings, with debauched and licentious perſons; her laviſh expence in paying the Recknings where ever ſhe came, but eſpecially her ſupplying the neceſſities of luſty younger Brothers, which reſupplyed hers. The old man had ſo ſpent his ſpirits and breath, in ſchooling his Lecherous Truant, that he was forced to conclude his wormwood Lecture in an exceſſive cough; the inſeperable Companion of him and Age. My buckſome Madam fearing he was ſtreining for more of that unpleaſing ſtuff, which had ſo lately offended her ears, left him half ſtrangled with a Tyſick.

In this Interval, a female Neighbour of his came in, a Gentlewoman of that worth; that Virtue and Gentility contended in her for priority: *How is it I pray Sir* (ſaid ſhe) *I am much troubled to ſee you in this condition?* You lie, you lie, you Whore (ſaid he) his ears being ſo furd by Time, that he

could not diſtinguiſh this Gentlewomans voice from his Wifes, neither could he ſee, his violent coughing having forced down ſuch a torrent of moiſture into his eyes; that his ſight was totally drowned: Continuing his railing; *See me in this condition?* I believe you would be glad to ſee me out of it, you Strumpet, Lump of Lechery, Cheat, ſhe Devil, what ſhall I call thee; there is no name too bad: And then cought again ſo violently, that it was in vain to ſpeak to him; but when this violent fit abated, ſhe reſolved to ſay ſomething, though her amazment to hear what ſhe neither deſerved, nor expected, would hardly give her permiſſion. At laſt ſhe ſpake to him, and reaſoned with him, why he ſhould thus ſtain her honour which was hitherto ſpotleſs, undefiled; that her actions had ever been ſo far from rendring her, what he unworthily repreſented, that they made her famous, and lookt on as a good example for her Neighbours to follow and immitate. I, I; infamous you mean (ſaid he) and let me alone to make you ſuch an example, that you ſhall have followers enough to ſee you Carted, you Bitch whore. Why, who am I ſaid the Gentlewoman, that you thus abuſe me? *Am I,* (ſaid he) you are Touch-wood, Tinder, Salt peter, Gunpowder, Wildfire, nay, worſe then all this, my Wife.

By this the Gentlewoman verily concluded him to be mad, and fearing leaſt his frenzie might be converted into fury, was thinking to ſlip from him juſt as his cough left him, and his eyes again reſtored to him, with the inſight of his miſtake; which made him much condemn his fallacious age, that had put this trick on him.

Apologies (as many as this old mans ſterile in-

vention could frame) were not wanting to excuſe this abſurdity and errour: Neither was his Wife without the height of mirth behind the Hangings, to hear how much her doting fool was miſtaken; who had not patience any longer to diſcourſe his Viſitant, but abruptly left her in queſt of his abuſed Wife as he now ſuppoſed, imagining from this grand miſtake, that what ever before he had either ſeen or heard of his wife, was nothing but the genuine product of his own idle and jealous brain. After he had made a ſtrict enquiry through the whole houſe for his wife, he at length found her out cloiſtered in a Garret, into which ſhe had conveyed her ſelf coming ſoftly behind the Hangings, wherein ſhe had hid herſelf; and the better to colour her intended Villany, hearing her Husband aſcend the Stairs, ſhe put her ſelf into a praying poſture.

The old man ſeeing her on her knees, had like to have broke his neck for haſt, not minding ſo much the diſturbance he would give her (pretended) devotion, as the ſatisfaction he injoyed to ſee his miſtake confirmed. Being out of breath, his diſcourſe was abrupt and broken, neither did he know which was moſt expedient, either firſt to queſtion her, or crave her pardon: at length he threw himſelf at her feet (for indeed he could hardly ſtand upon his feeble Legs;) and hanging down his Head (I knew not whether he cried) a ſalt Rhume guſhed through the port holes of his Head, which looked like ſcalding Teares; and ſo they might be, for by their burning heat, any might conclude the loſs of the hair of his Eyelids, and that thereby the ſhriveled skin of his Countenance was parcht. It was a long time ere he could ſpeak, and no wonder, ſince this

was the ſecond time of his Infancy; but at length with much ado, with a look as pittiful as his Rhetorick, he asked forgivneſs. She ſeemed ſtrangly ſurprized and not only wondred at, but taxt him for the Irrationality of his Petition. The pretence of her ignorance in what had paſt, made him the more eager to diſcover his ridiculous folly. In ſhort, he gave her to underſtand, that ſince he was miſtaken in a thing ſo palpable, he might very well queſtion whither all former reports, and his own evil opinion of her, might not be poſited on the ſame baſis of falſhood. That for the time to come, he would never admit of jealouſie within his breaſt, and to give a full confirmation to what he proteſted; he inſtantly delivered her his Keys, committing to her truſt what he had of greateſt value. This cunning Quean would not accept this kind proffer, but with much preſſing, and then ſealing his pardon with a kiſs, an everlaſting affection was ſeemingly agreed upon. For two or three months after ſhe behaved her ſelf ſo well, that had her Husband had *Argus* his hundred eyes, he could not perceive any thing that might blemiſh her Reputation, or trouble his head.

Her Cue being come to enter and act her part on the Stage of deceit, ſhe appeared and managed her buſineſs to the purpoſe. For having given her Mother a Catalogue of thoſe rich things ſhe had in her poſſeſſion; ſhe never left her daughter till they had conveyed all away which might be carried in the day time without any notice taken; and at an appointed night getting the Servants to bed and delivering the Key of the ſtreet-door to the old Bawd her Mother, ſhe played the part of a Woman

in general, by lulling her Husband in bed by diſſimulation and flattery, into a fond opinion of her cordiality to him, whilſt her agents then were leaving him as naked of goods, as he was at that time of Apparel. In the morning ſhe arofe by times, before the old man was ſtiring, and went inſtantly to her mother who had provided her lodgings. Then did ſhe change her name to hinder detection; and that ſhe might add to her ſecurity, ſhe never went abroad but with her Vizard Mask, and in as many varietys of Suits as there are months in the year, which though but thirteen, yet did ſhe make them ring as many changes as *BOW BELLS*.

Not long after ſhe had played this exploit, it was my unhappineſs to be acquainted with her, by coming accidentally to our Shop, where buying ſome wares, it was ſo ordered that I muſt bring them to her Chamber. According to the time appointed I waited on her, but found myſelf extremely miſtaken in my Chapwoman. For inſtead of paying me for my commodity, ſhe would have truckt with me Ware for Ware; which I would no ways aſſent to; finding me no fit perſon for her purpoſe, ſhe diſmiſt me by diſcharging the debt. This paſſage did ſo run in my mind, that I could not be at quiet till I had purpoſed a time to viſit her, and indeed I was forceably prickt on thereunto by thoſe matchleſs features I ſaw in her incomparable face. My Maſter riding out of Town I found a very fit opportunity to make my addreſs to her, which I thought would be the more welcome by bringing a preſent with me.

Her memorie was ſo good that ſhe knew me again and ſhrewdly gueſſed at my Errant, and indeed I was not long in the diſcovery thereof: There were

but two words to a bargain, and ſo ſtruck up the buſineſs: So much delight I took in her at that time, and ſhe in me, that we interchangably promiſed each others conſtancy of affection.

Mine and my females extravagancies, made me invent as many ways to cheat, as we had ways to ſpend what was this way gotten. If I had heard any friend ſay, they muſt buy a Gown, I had my Mercer ready for that purpoſe: If a Suit and Cloak, my Draper, and the like; ſometimes telling my friend, That I was acquainted with one that would ſell me a far cheaper pennyworth than any one elſe: other times, that ſuch an one owed me ſome moneys, and that this way I could both pleaſure my friend, and hedge in mine own debt. Though I drove a great trade this way, receiving ſtill ready caſh, yet this would not do alone. As an aſſiſtance, I gueldcd the money-box every day, receiving my part firſt, before my Maſter ſhould take his, which uſually he did every night, putting it into his Till. I could not ſleep for thinking how I might be intimately acquainted with the inwards of this ſame Till. Several projects I made tryal of, but none ſuited my purpoſe ſo well, as a Barbers pair of Curling irons. I got a File from a Smith, and to work I went with my Curling irons, filing them to ſlip in eaſily, and to turn round. The firſt Eſſay I made thereof, had like to have put me into an Extaſie for joy. I laid them upon their edge, opened them wide, I pinched the money below; holding faſt, I turned them on their ſide, and ſo drew up the money to the mouth of the Scotch: now becauſe there was many times ſo much, that it would not come through, with

a knife I would ſlide away piece after piece, till I had fitted the money to the narrownefs of the paſſage. I feldom brought up at a time lefs than three ſhillings, a good draught, not ceaſing till I had gotten twenty or thirty ſhillings at a time, or more, according to the quantity of the ſtock. Finding my Engine act according to my deſires, I could not be content without congratulating my ſuccefs. My Maſter was feldom at home, wherefore I askt my Miſtrefs to go out for an hour, promiſing her not to ſtay beyond my limited time: She confented, and I overjoyed, pickt up a Rambler or two, and away we went to honeſt *Ralph.* Being glad to fee us, he planted us in a convenient room fit for his purpoſe. There was never a Pint he ſcored at the Bar, but he had a Quart-Bottle in his Breeches for it. They all wondred to fee me ſo frollick, but I thought it wifdom to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank very ſmartly, I came home, tranſgreſſing but a little beyond my time. My Miſtrefs was very well pleafed, telling me, *I ſhould have leave another time, ſince I was ſo punctual.* Thoſe Bottles of Sack we drank, ran perpetually in my minde, for it was the very flower of Wine. In the commemoration of my Friends courteſie, and the goodnefs of that Liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characterize a Bottle of Canary, thus.

THE CHARACTER OF

A Bottle of *Canary.*

HE is Gentleman I aſſure you well extracted, which once lived like a Salamander in the midſt of the flames; and had he not been burnt, he have never proved found. He ſeems a Prodigy: For that which we live by, decays him; hating Air, as *Bacchus* hates ſmall Beer. He will lie ſtill if you ſmother him, and is never ſo well, as when his breath is ſtopt. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet neat: Though Nobly born, he ſcorns not to wear a green Coat, with a badge on it; and you cannot injure him worſe than to pick a hole in his Coat. Though he wears for the moſt part one ſort of Garb, yet he is never out of faſhion, acceptable to the beſt of company, not regarding his outward dreſs, but valuing his inward worth: However, his Suit is made of admirable Stuff, for his outſide never grows barer, and his Linings are the freſher for wearing. So choice he is in his Cloathing, that he rather chuſeth to have his brains knockt out, than to have a rent in his Garment. He wears an *a la mode* Hat, as light (and almoſt as little) as a Shittle-cock, which he puts off to none; but like the Quaker when brought before a Magiſtrate, hath it taken off for him.

As for his Pedegree, I now not how to derive it; for he hath had in him the beſt and pureſt of

the *French* blood, but will now acknowledge his Race onely from the *Spaniard*, whom he imitates, being ſtately, and ſtanding always upright; treads for the moſt part on Carpets, and never ſtirs abroad but when he is carried, yet full of activity. If he runs faſt and long, the more wind he gets. If he chance to fall, which is ſeldom, for many look to him, he will be extreamly moved, yet (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, the leſs hurt he receives: his credit is large, never paying for what he wears, running on the ſcore perpetually; his conditions are a riddle, there is in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the quinteſſence of love, and the venome of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thouſand quarrels in a year, yet a very Coward; for he ſuffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any ones pate, but when company was by. He is very facetious in ſociety, and will ſpend himſelf freely to the laſt drop, if a Ladies ſoft and warm hand will raiſe him. He is a brisk Spark, and therefore Courtiers adore him; he is ſmooth in his expreſſion, and therefore Ladies delight in him; he is filled with nimble fancies, therefore the Wits frequent him, exhauſting his radical moiſture, to diſtil it into Poetical Raptures; for conceits never run faſter from the Limbick of their brains, than when this Gentleman adds fuel to the Furnace. He whets wit, yet dulls it; creates new Fancies, and ſtupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue, and makes him ſpeechleſs. Gives a Poet feet till he cannot go. And as he helps Miniſters to preach, ſo he likewiſe ſilenceth more than the Spaniſh Inquiſition. He hath a great many tricks in him: He

will make a Faulkner fly high within doors; Make a Huntſman catch a Fox by the fire-ſide. Whatever he holds, is made good; and unleſs you mind him well, much good matter that falls from him, may be loſt: for he is often fluent beyond meaſure. All Tongues court him; and thoſe that look narrowly unto him, ſhall find him no dry Fellow. The truth is, he is too profound for ſhallow brains to meddle with him: He will pour out quaint expreſſions and hard words ſo thick, that the beſt Scholars are glad at laſt to give him ſomething to ſtop his mouth: Yet hold him up fairly, and you may get all he hath out of him. He is exceſſively beloved, and reliſhes all Company, being pleaſant, and full of admirable humours. He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and incorporateth with their Wives daily. His Kiſſes are ſo ſweet, that they lick their lips after him; and though his breath be ſtrong, yet it is not offenſive. He is a true *Good-fellow*, drinking till he hath no eyes to ſee with: Good Liquor is his Life and Soul, and he is never muſty but for want of it. He will drink till he be filled up to' the very throat, and gape whilſt others put it in. He will bear as much Sack as any man in *England* of his bulk; yet he will be ſoon drunk in Company. But if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his Liquor and drink freſh, till all the Company be forced to leave him. Drinking is his hourly exercife, ſeldom lying out of a Tavern. Hs is the main Upholder of Club-meetings, without fear of being broke. He picks mens pockets, yet is never made more reckoning of than by ſuch perſons. As for his Eſtate, I can onely ſay

this, That all he hath he carries about him; yet generally he is reputed rich: What he hath, he holds upon courteſie; but what he gives others, is held *in Capite.* What he poſſeſſeth, is commonly upon Sale; yet more for plenty, than for want; and if you can purchaſe him you purchaſe all.

I could never endure Idleneſs, I was ever in action; either writing, or contriving, or putting in execution my contrivances; I thought it better *male agere quam nihil agere:* my brains or hands were continually working, and very ſeldom but effectually. My pen was generally ſo happy in diſcoveries, that my wit was much applauded by the moſt cenſorious: much reſpected I was, & my company much importuned by the Tankerd-bearers of *Helicon*, by which means I ſo ſwelled with pride, that I thought my ſelf little inferior to *Apollo.* I called *Mercury* Pimp, the nine Siſters Whores, whom I had frequently layn with, and might when I pleaſed: the beſt title I could beſtow on *Pegaſus* was Hackny-Jade. In the height of this my opinionativeneſs, my Cooler (our Maſters maid) came to me where I was alone; and after many heart-fetcht ſighs, told me ſhe found her ſelf with child; which news had like to have deprived me of my underſtanding: but knowing that Vexation never remedies but rather adds to trouble, I was reſolved to bear it patiently, and ſtudy ſome means to preſerve her and my Credit. I framed a Letter as from her Father, deſiring her to come down into the Country ſpeedily, if ſhe intended to ſee him alive; and according as we had laid the Plot, ſhe ſhews it her Miſtreſs, deſiring her leave to ſhew her

duty to her dying Father. Our Miſtreſs moſt willingly conſented thereunto, as knowing that there was more than ordinary love between us; the maid had ſtaid as long as poſſibly ſhe might without diſcovery, Lacing her ſelf very ſtreight, and keeping down her belly with three Busks: but now ſhe made haſte to rub off: I had provided a Midwife that ſhould be her Bawd too: but this could not be done without extraordinary coſt. After her Delivery, I found the keeping of her and the Child very expenſive: then did I begin to conſider what a vaſt charge, and how many various troubles this momentary lecherous pleaſure draws upon a man: how furiouſly he is upon the onſet, and how quickly ſatisfied, loathing that Object he a little before longed for. Well, I bethought my ſelf how to be rid both of Cow and Calf. I told her I would get together what moneys I could, and ſo marry her, upon condition ſhe would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her onely deſire: I informed her of my intention to go for *Virginia;* and the reaſons that induced me thereunto.

Firſt, her diſgrace would not be known there: Next, my Maſter could have no power over me, inſiſting further on the pleaſantneſs of that Continent, and the plenty of every thing, &c.

She aſſented to all I propounded, relying her ſelf ſolely on me, to diſpoſe of her as I pleaſed. To palliate my deſign, I went with her to *Graveſend*, pretending as if I was then going with her beyond Sea, for no other end but to clear my ſelf from her there, knowing that after ſhe had paſt examination or ſearch of the Block-houſe, ſhe would meet with no more. Being aboard, I ſuddenly ſeemed to have forgot ſomething aſhore; having well

laid my Plot upon the Baſis of a good Sum of money I had diſtributed among the Sea-men, with a conſiderable preſent to the Maſter, and telling my *Laudabris* I would return to her inſtantly, I got into the Boat; and immediately after the Ship weighed Anchor, and quickly was under Sail. I confeſs, notwithſtanding the Devil had at that time the total poſſeſſion of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done ſo hard-heartedly and cruelly. A flood of tears had ſo overwhelmed my ſight, that I could not diſcern the Ship in which ſhe was: ſo ſenſible I was of the wickedneſs of this Fact, that *Dido*-like, I could have thrown my ſelf into the Sea after her, had not a good Woman, whoſe Husband was in the ſame Ship, prevented me. Obſerving my tears, *'Tis probable, Young Man,* (ſaid ſhe) *you have lately taken your leave of ſome dearly beloved Friend; and I gueſs, by your earneſt looking after yond Ship under ſail, the perſon was in her.* I told her it was truth. *My Husband is in the ſame Veſſel,* (ſaid ſhe) *and therefore I have as much cauſe to grieve as you. Come, be of good comfort, Man, Friends muſt part; and it is better to part here than at the Gallows. Go along with me, and we will waſh down ſorrow; and with a Glaſs of neat Canary, antidote our hearts againſt any thing that may diſturb them.*

With that I lookt intentively in her face, and found it correſpondent with a jolly temper. An Eye black and piercing; and Eye-brows black alſo, and each as big as a mans thumb comparatively: a ſign that never fails to denote that Woman capable of giving a man the greateſt delectation. She was every way compleatly handſome, and ſuitable to the deſires of the moſt curious Critick in Love-affairs.

I thought it a ſhame to deny ſo kind a proffer, and a crime in Youth unpardonable not to embrace that opportunity, that ſhall lead him by the hand into *Venus* her Bed-chamber. With that I addreſt my ſelf to her, (and afterwards undreſt together) declaring that the force of her Rhetorick, aſſiſted by her external beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to forget my onely dearly beloved ſhe-friend, and to become her Profelyte, her abſolutely devoted convert, and would proſtrate my will to be guided by hers and her command. With that we concluded to folace ourſelves at the next Tavern: I applied my ſelf to my old way of inſinuation: which ſoon melted her, ſo that I ſaw I might when I pleaſed ſtamp loves impreſſion on her. Returning to *Graveſend*, we ſoon lodged our ſelves conveniently for our intended purpoſe: having ſo done, I ſo ordered the matter, that there was not anything wanting that might pleaſe our ſences. Yet fearing leſt her love ſhould cool again, there was no Art forgotten that might ſerve to entertain it. Delays in love-affairs are dangerous: Women love not to be too long Tantalized; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination; which if you punctually obſerve, you ſhall aſſuredly reap the fruits of your deſires; if not, you may perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the Iron glowing hot, I thought good to ſtrike: to enliven my ſpirits, ſhe ſent for a noiſe of Muſick, ordering them to play in the next Room. And in the end we began to think of ſome repoſe, agreeing before to lie in two Chambers contiguous to each other; which were accordingly provided. As ſoon as I thought all the Houſhold were in bed, I repaired to my Miſtreſs, who eagerly expected my coming;

approaching the bed-ſide, ſhe claſped me in her arms: As ſoon as day broke, I aroſe, beſpeaking a fat Capon ſwaddled with Saffages, and a Quart of Buttered Sack. I got all ready by the time of her riſing: ſhe was extraordinarily well pleaſed in my double dilligence of ſerving her: having applauded my induſtry and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a Glaſs of Canary. She told me ſhe would never part whilſt ſhe had a penny left, having about her ſome Thirty Pieces of Gold. *Well* (ſaid I) *my Dear, ſince it is thy reſolution, a match; but let me be Steward:* Which ſhe agreed unto, delivering into my hands what Gold ſhe had. For two or three hours I ſhewed my ſelf very officious in my place; but conſidering that when this money was ſpent, we ſhould not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want than two; beſides, I had lately ſurfeited on a Medler, and therefore my ſtomack nauſeated the very thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me word juſt as the *Graveſend* Barge was going off; which accordingly he did, by a private ſign concluded betwixt us. I then pretended an excuſe to go down, under the notion of providing ſomething novel, which ſhould be conducible to our mirth and jollity. I had juſt ſo much time below to write her theſe lines in ſtead of a ſolemn leave taking, leaving them with the Drawer to preſent her, and ſo went aboard the Barge for *London.*

Madam, I'm gone, no wonder, for you know,
Lovers encounters are but touch and go.

Arriving at *Billings-gate*, I went ſtraight to a Tavern, where I had an intereſt with the Drawer, reſolving there to conſult ſeriouſly with my ſelf what

courſe to follow, being as yet unreſolved what to do. After I had raiſed my dulled ſpirits with a a glaſs or two, I concluded to hazard my Maſters good opinion, nay, and & my Miſtreſſes affection too; which though at that preſent it only ſmoaked, I might eaſily divine, that in proceſs of time it would burſt forth into a flame. Being before confined to my Maſters time, I began to conſider what an excellent thing Liberty was, equally eſtimable with Health; which two, though they are the greateſt and moſt precious gifts (next our Redemption) the Creator of the World hath beſtowed on mankind; yet we poor mortals value them not till we are ſenſible of their want, by being deprived of them. This is an infallible maxime, *That the deprivation of a thing ſhall be ſo much the more evil, as the poſſeſſion thereof is good.* Now if Liberty be ſuch an excellent & delectable thing when enjoyed, how miſerable are thoſe that want it?

Having moneys in my Pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of ſuch delights the nature of young men is moſt inclinable to. Now man being a ſociable Creature, I thought I ſhould reap but little ſatisfaction to my ſelf in the expence of my moneys, without an Aſſociate: Wherefore I ſent to an Apprentice of my intimate acquaintance contemporary with me, and who had often prompted me to ramble with him. This Lad was his Maſters Caſheer, which I knew would much aſſiſt my deſign. I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world: Though it had been formerly his own motion, yet he ſeemed at the firſt ſomething ſtartled; but all his doubts I reſolved; adding moreover, That to have our wills inſlaved to other mens, was

a thing infupportable, ſince that we were, as well as they, created free Denizens of this world. That ſince our great Grand-Father was Emperor of the whole world, we could not ſtile our ſelves leſs than Princes, and therefore debaſed our Birth by a voluntary ſubmiſſion to Service and Slavery. I had no great occaſion to make uſe of many Arguments to this purpoſe; for his own inclination was ſufficient to perſwade him. The reſult of our diſcourſe was a firm reſolution to become two Knights-errant. I adviſed him forthwith to go home and bring with him what Caſh he had in his poſſeſſion; which he readily performed, and indeed more then I could expect, being 200*l.* the Fates having ſo decreed to favour this our firſt bold exploit, as a tryal of what we durſt attempt.

CHAP. XII.

How he frequented Bawdy-houſes; what exploits he committed in them; the Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trapan; their manner of living; with a Detection of their wicked lives and Converſations.

BEing full fraught with money, we undertook our Progreſs, promiſing to our ſelves all delight imaginable, but not conſidering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleaſure, but among the chief we ranked *Brothel-houſes*, which were our Repoſitories. We ſeldom were ſeen in the Streets by day, for fear of diſcovery; confining our ſelves cloſe Priſoners to ſome *Bubbing-houſe;* at night (like ſuch as cloſely delighted in deeds of darkneſs) we would ſometimes flutter abroad. Our paſtime was to hire Coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our eſcape. One time leaping out of the Boot, my Cloak chanced to tangle in the ſpokes of the Wheel: the Coachman not perceiving we were got out, drove on; by the wheels continually turning, my Garment was ſo ingaged, that I verily believed my ſins had now conferred upon me the juſt puniſhment of being executed on the wheel, which I could hardly have avoided, had I not ſpeedily unbuttoned my Cloak: I was loath to bid the Coachman ſtop, thinking I ſhould have it at laſt; I ran Lacquy-like a long way, but all my endeavours to ſhift it, proved ineffectual; ſo that at length I was forced to cry

out, *Hold Coachman.* The Coachman coming out of his Box, ſoon perceived the fallacy, and ſtraightways demanded his money for his hire, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Cloak, he told me, *I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him:* And ſaid moreover, *That my Cloak would not look like a Livery, unleſs it were laced; and with that, with his whip, laſhed me well-favouredly.* Another ſort of Paſtime we uſed, was to kick the old Watchmens Lanthorns about the ſtreet; and it may be ſometimes confer a blow or two on their ſleepy noddles, and then flie for it, but we had worſe ſucceſs with this than the former. We practiſed this foolery ſo often, till at length we were met with, and rightly ſerved. It was thus: In *Paternoſter-row*, we found a fellow at noddie upon a ſtall, with his Lanthorn and Candle by him; having firſt ſeized on that, and thrown it into the Kennel, we proſecuted our abuſe by falling upon him, and beating him. As ſoon as we had done this manful act, we betook our ſelves to flight; but here we miſtook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepid Watchman, and one that had little uſe of his eyes, without thoſe in his Pocket; whereas to our coſt, we found him as nimble and as light footed as a Stag, who overtaking us, ſurprized us; and as he was carrying us before the Conſtable, we met with the grand Round, who, without much examination, committed us as Rats to the Counter. The chiefeſt thing that troubled us, was the apprehenſion of our Maſters knowing where we were. But we reſolved to drown that care: we had not been there long, before other Rats, Male and Fe-

male, were brought in to bear us company. Some of the men were all bloody, and their Mobs Scarfs and Hoods all rent, and none of them ſober: Damming and Sinking were the conſtant flouriſhes of their diſcourſe; calling for drink was the Argument they held, and roaring in diſtracted notes was their Harmony. Though I was my ſelf comparatively wicked, yet I bleſſed my God I had not arrived to that height theſe ſuperlative Villains had attained to. Being in their company, I thought myſelf in the Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dreſſed up in ſpecious pretences, may be entertained as a Companion; but when it appears in its own ſhape, it cannot but ſtrike horror into the Soul of any, though deſperate, if not ſtupified. Wherefore me thought I was ſo far from aſſociating my ſelf with them, that I proteſt, the leudneſs of their Actions were ſo repreſented to me with ſuch deformity, that I knew not which I loathed moſt, them or the Priſon. I cannot make appear to the world what they were, nor my reſentments, unleſs I ſhould ſtuff a page or two with all manner of horrid Oaths, Execrations, Blaſphemies and ſuch like ſoul-infecting & deſtroying Plague-ſores; wherefore I ſhall onely take leave to anatomize the Place that deteined us from our freedom. Then look upon a Priſon as in it ſelf, and it may be fitly termed a temporary Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned Souls, the Gates thereof ſtanding always wide open; ſo this refuſeth the reception of none, though never ſo wicked a miſcreant. Though my durance in this place was but ſhort, yet I could not but take ſome obſervations, imploying from thence the faculties of my Soul to draw up the definition of a Priſon. Hell

is a very proper denomination for it, ſince it is a place compoſed of nothing but diſorder and confuſion; a Land of darkneſs, inhabited by calamity, horror, miſery, and confuſion; a bottomleſs Pit of fraud, violence and ſtench. A Priſon is the Baniſhment of Courteſie, the Centre of Infamy and Diſparagement, the Deſtruction of good Wits, the Treaſure of Deſpair, the Fining-Pot of Friendſhip, a Den of Deceivers, a Foreſt of Ravenous Beaſts. Here you may ſee one Weeping, another ſinging; one Sleeping, another Swearing; every one variouſly imployed; one Eating in a corner, and another Piſſing juſt by him; another Lowſing himſelf between both; it may be heretofore a military man, and therefore loath to forget his Art, but rather exerciſing it in the killing of his bodily Enemies, bearing the blood on his nail, as the Trophies of his Victory.

It is, to ſpeak moſt properly, a living Tomb or grave to bury men alive in, wherein a man for half a years experience may learn more Law, then he can in three Terms for an hundred pound.

It is a little Wood of woe, a Map of miſery, a place that will learn a young man more villany, if he be apt to take it, in ſix months, than at twenty Gaming Ordinaries, Bowling-Allies, or Bawdy-houſes; and an old man more policy, than if he had been Pupil to *Machiavel*.

This Place hath more diſeaſes predominant in it than the Peſt-houſe in a Plague-time; and ſtinks worſe than my LordMayors Dog-houſe.

It is a little Common-wealth, although little wealth common there; it is a deſart, where deſert lies hood-winkt.

The Place is as intricate as *Roſamond's* Labyrinth, and is ſo full of Meanders and Crooked turnings, that it is impoſſible to find the way out, except he be directed by a Silver Clue ; and can never overcome the Minotaur, without a Golden-ball to work his own ſafety. The next day, paying our Fees, and receiving ſome checks, with good admonitions from the Juſtice, we were diſcharged. This misfortune made us not a jot more cautious, but as ſoon as we were at liberty, we went upon the ſcent to mother *Cr.* formerly famous for the Good Citizens Wives that frequented her houſe; who ſtill rides Admiral of all the reſt of her function about the Town. I hope the next time I go to viſit her, ſhe will not get me clapt for the pains I take in praiſing her. The truth of it is, of all the Bawds I know, ſhe merits moſt, having an houſe fit for the accommodation of the beſt. As for her walking Utenſils, they are compoſed of refined mettal, always neatly kept ; which, becauſe they are not uſed upon all ſlight occaſions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. Aſſoon as we had entered the door, I could hear a ruffling of Silks in ſundry places ; I conceive it was their policy, by ſeeming modeſty to ſet a ſharper edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handſome Room ; bottles of Wine were brought up, both Spaniſh and French, with ſalt meats to reliſh the Palate, though we gave no order for them ; but it ſeems it was the Cuſtom of the houſe, a chargeable one : but without a Piece ſpending, you ſhall know little of their practices. At length, up came the old Matron ; after the performance of our Devoir, ſhe ſeats her ſelf by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking

me under the chin, calling me her *Son Smock-face.* Having well warmed our ſelves with Wine, and the good Gentlewoman perceiving that our bloods began to heat, *Well,* ſaid ſhe, *I gueſs at the intent of your coming hither, neither ſhall you go away unſatisfied. Nature will have its courſe; and if in Youth it be ſtopt, it will but, Torrent-like, flow with the greater impetuoſity. Come, I ſee by your countenances that ye were born ſons of mirth and pleaſure; ſhew then what ſtock ye came of. If you want Subjects to exerciſe your parts on, we'll have more Wine; and when ye are inflamed, ye ſhall have the benefit of a Cooler.* With that ſhe leaves us; but another of the fame Sex, though three degrees different in age, fupplied her place. At firſt view I ſeemed very well pleaſed: handſome ſhe was, and very proportionable; but withal ſo impudent, that I was antidoted againſt lechery. *Iſta fœmina quæ limites verecundiæ ſemel exceſſerit, oportet illam eſſe graviter impudentem.* If once a woman paſs the bounds of Shameſac'dneſs, ſhe will ſeldome ſtop till ſhe hath arrived to the heighth of Impudence. I muſt needs deal ingeniouſly, at the beginning the Needle of my Microcoſm was toucht by Loves Loadſtone. But upon further acquaintance, if I might have had a hundred pounds, I could not have meddled with her.

Though ſhe had baited her deſires with a million of proſtitute countenances and enticements, yet I lookt upon her rather a Companion for an Hoſpital, and ſtood more in need of a Chyrurgions acquaintance than mine. My Friend had nibbled at the bait; but when I heard them capitulating about the price, I thought ſhe wanted a Fee for the Doctor. Well, had ſhe not over-traded, ſhe had

not broke ſo ſoon; for her trade is oppoſite to all others: for ſhe did ſet up without credit, and her too much cuſtome undid her; and ſo let her go, without either ſhame, or hope of repentance.

We deſired to ſee another: 'Tis variety that Man chiefly takes delight in: One conſtant ſort of Food, without participating of any other, though Manna, will cauſe the ſtomack to long for the Fleſh-pots: Neither can the crime be greater in the enjoyment of diverſe perſons then one alone, provided Matrimony make not the act Legitimate. I do not approve of theſe conſequent lines tending to this purpoſe; yet give me leave to inſert them, that you may underſtand how viciouſly minded ſome are in this frothy age.

Born under ſome ill Planet, or accurſt,
Is he that loves one ſingle Whore;
Who with one draught can always quench his thirſt,
Ty'd to one Miſtreſs, and no more.

This nauſeating thing being removed, up came one of *Venus* her chief Darlings; excellent Fleſh! and ſhe her ſelf the Cook that dreſt it, ſpending moſt of her day-time about it, that ſhe might with the better appetite be taſted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was impatient till I had conſummated my deſires: withdrawing into another room, to heighten my thoughts, ſhe declared to me her birth and Education; that as the one was well extracted, the other had occaſioned much coſt and expence. That for her part, ſhe aſſociated

with none but perſons of quality, whoſe long patience and intreatments firſt procured a familiarity, and in fine, freedom in the exerciſe of love-affairs: and ſo would have (ſeemingly) put me off upon this ſcore, that it was not uſual for her to admit of any to her imbraces, but ſuch whoſe long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a Crown, which ſhe refuſed with indignation; telling me, that ſhe was not yet reduced to ſo low a condition, as to become ſo poor a Mercenary Proſtitute. At laſt, with much perſwaſion, I faſtned on her an half piece; and ſo ſtriving with her, (ſhe onely ſeeming averſe) I accompliſht my ends. And preſently in came a fellow, whoſe very face would have enlightned the room, though in the darkeſt night; for indeed it appeared to me a blazing Comet, and his Noſe (for miraculouſly he had preſerved it) was the bruſhy Tail. Laying his hand on his ſword, he looked fiercer then a *Spaniſh Don* inſulting over an *Indian Slave.* The bulk of his body began to heave like an Earth-quake, whilſt his mouth, *Ætna*-like, belcht out all manner of Sulphurous Oaths, which roared ſo loud, as if his belly had contained a barrel of Gun-powder, and the Linſtock of his Noſe had fired it. His courteous Salutation to me, was, *How dareſt thou, Son of a Whore, preſume in this nature to diſhonour me, in the abuſing of my Wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or diſſipation into Atomes? But I have ſomething here ſhall tame thy inſolence; and now I am reſolved to ſet thy blood abroach.* With that he ſeemed to make a paſs at me: Now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the ſafeguard of my Life, I took up a

Joynt-ſtool, and received his point in the ſeat; and following it home, tumbled him down the ſtairs; and not being able to recover my ſelf, fell with him. My Comrade came running down at the noiſe to aſſiſt me; but he ſeeing me rather make uſe of my heels then hands, followed my example, and ſo built a Sconce, leaving the old Bawd to condole her great loſs; for the Reckoning was very conſiderable.

Now becauſe I have often met with theſe *Hectors* or Trepanning Villains, I think it will not be unſuitable to this preſent Diſcourſe, to inſert their Character.

The

CHARACTER

OF

An *HECTOR* or *TRAPAN.*

A Bawdy-houſe is his Cloyſter, where he conſtantly ſays his Mattins. He is an Whores Protector, pretending himſelf more valiant then any of the antient *Heroes*, thereby thinking to take off the ſuſpition of a Coward from himſelf: For the opinion of Valour, is a good protection to thoſe that dare not uſe it. His frequent drawing his Sword upon any ſlight occaſion, makes the ignorant ſuppoſe him Valiant; whereas he durſt not do it, but when he is confident no danger will enſue thereon. He never ſtrikes any, but ſuch he is ſure will not return his blows. In Company he is wonderful exceptious and cholerick, thinking in the fray ſome booty may be obtained: but his wrath never ſwells higher then when men are loth to give him any occaſion: but the onely way to pacifie him, is to beat him ſoundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, proteſting he always honoured you. The more you abuſe him, the more he ſeems to love you: if he chance to be quarrelſome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper.

Every man is his Maſter that dares beat him; and every one dares that knows him; and he that dares do this, is the onely man can do much with him. Yet if he knows a Coward, he will purpoſely fall out with him, to get Courteſies from him, and ſo be bribed into a reconcilement. Yet I cannot ſay but that he may fight, (if with great advantage) being ſo accuſtomed to the ſight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuſe ſomething of a conceit into him; which he ſo magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Proweſs is no leſs then a Mountain. This little he hath, he is no Niggard in diſplaying; reſembling ſome Apothecaries Shops, full of Pots, though little contained in them. His Eſtate lies in Contrivancies; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter-days, he hath three hundred ſixty and odd to receive the fruits of his Stratagems. He is well skilled in Cards and Dice, which help him to cheat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reaſon he uſually gives for it, is, *A Woodcock muſt be pluckt ere he be dreſt.* If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Miſtreſſes, and ſo both joyn to plume this Fowl: if there be not ready money to anſwer expectation, a Bond of conſiderable value ſhall ſerve turn, atteſted by two ſhall ſwear any thing for half a Crown. No man puts his brain to more uſe then he; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a meer ſtratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever paſt but an *How do you?* between him and another, it ſhall ſerve ſeven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out

of his abundance of joy to ſee you, he offers a pottle of Wine; and in requital of his kindneſs, can do no leſs then make you pay for it: whilſt you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pockets, (as School-boys with their points, being about to be whipt) till the Reckoning be paid, and ſays, *It muſt not be ſo*, yet is eaſily perſwaded to it; and then cries, *Gentlemen, you force me to incivility.* When his Whores cannot ſupply him, he borrows of any that will lend him ought; of this man a ſhilling, and of another as much; which ſome lend him, not out of hope to be repayed, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him ſo long, till he force a good nature to the neceſſity of a quarrel. He loves his Friend as one doth his Cloak that hath but one, and knows not how to get another; he will be ſure to wear him thread-bare ere he forſake him. Men ſhun him at laſt as infection; nay, his old Companions, his Cloaths that have hung upon him ſo long, at length fall off to. His prayer in the morning is, That his Cheats may take effect that day; if not, that he may be drunk before night. He ſleeps with a Tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and he dreams of nothing but Villany. If any miſchief eſcapes him, it was not his fault, for he lay as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a ſerious thought, leſt he hang himſelf; but if ſuch melancholy ſeize him, the Drink is his refuge, and Drunkenneſs cures him. Laſtly, he commonly dies like a Malefactor on the Gallows, or like *Hercules* with fire in his bones. When hanged, if begged for an Anatomy, it would ſerve to convert Tobacco-ſmokers from delighting in the ex-

ceſs thereof: for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furred and choakt up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoyced exceedingly that we thus ſo narrowly eſcaped, reſolving to houſe our ſelves in the next Bubbing-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. A place (pointed out to us by the Devils Finger) ſoon preſented it ſelf to our Eyes, which we with more than good ſpeed entered; and coming into the Kitchin, I was not a little amazed at the ſight of a thing ſitting in a Chair by the fire-ſide, with a Pipe of Tobacco in its mouth, and a Quartern of Strong-waters by its ſide. This Tun of Fleſh reſembled an Elephant for the bigneſſe of her Waſte, had there been the leaſt appearance of a Tooth: A Noſe ſhe had (which with all wonder be it ſpoken that ſhe had any) ſo long, as that it was a fit reſemblance of the Elephants *Proboſcis* or Trunk. But, as I ſaid before, her Teeth were faln out; and as loving Neighbours to reconcile them, her Chin and Noſe reſolved to meet about it. She bids us Welcome as well as ſhe could ſpeak. Go, I think ſhe could not; but opening her mouth, Lord, what ſtrong imaginations my fancy ſuggeſted to me! Me thought I ſaw Hell gaping to devour me; and within that bottomleſs Concave, I could diſcern infinite numbers of Souls whoſe damnation ſhe was acceſſory to; and coming ſomewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bituminous, and ſmelt of Brimſtone. She might fitly be compared to old-Coal that hath been well burnt, that with the leaſt ſpark will re-kindle, and fire any thing

near it. But her fitteſt likeneſs is the Devil, her Envy running parallel with his. All that the Devil endeavours, is to bring Mankind into the ſame ſtate with himſelf; and a Bawds aim is to make all fair women like her: now becauſe their youth perhaps will not admit of it ſo ſoon, ſhe hurries them on to it by degrees, by drinking. ſmoaking, painting, and dayly exceſs in venery. I lookt about her houſe very inquiſitively, but I could not judge her Moveables (ſetting aſide her quick Cattle) to be worth an Inventory. Her bedding I doubt me too is infectious, few coming near it, but they are preſently taken with a fit of the falling-ſickneſs. This old Beldame, being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had got a Whiſtle, on which ſhe uſed ſeveral Notes; which Muſical language her Girls underſtood very well. We called for drink; the old Bawd replyed ſhe would ſend for ſome, though ſhe had it not in the houſe: this was to be ſure of our Moneys. Herein I obſerved their temperance, not ſuffering us to have too much meaſure. Wenches we had plentifully; one more eſpecially I took notice of, to have the Swartheiſt ſkin I have ſeen Engliſh born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very ſweet. When I ſaw my opportunity, I askt him, craving his excuſe) *What Trade he was?* Pat as I would have it, he anſwered me, *That he was a Tanner. I concluded ſo, Sir*, (ſaid I) *by your dreſſing of that Calf's-skin there.* This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me, *His Trade was a good Trade, and I need not undervalue it.* I told him, *I did*

not, ſince there was ſome analogy between my Trade and his. Why what Trade are you? (ſaid he,) *(I may ask you a queſtion, as well as you me.)* I replyed, *That I was a Cuckold-maker. How can that be like my Profeſſion?* quoth he. *In this,* ſaid I, *You dreſs the skins, and I trim the Horns.* The Bawd at this fell into ſuch an extream fit of laughter, that down fell her Pipe, and up came the Strong-waters that ſhe had ſwallowed: but that was not all, for having not her retentive faculty, ſhe let flie: ſurely ſhe was overcharged, which made her recoyl, and ſo blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned; how ſweet, I cannot tell you. We fell into diſcourſe again: I aſkt her, *How long ſhe had liv'd in this houſe? Two years* (ſaid ſhe) *a longer time then any houſe I have lived in this twenty years*: with that I concluded ſhe was in fee with the Juſtices Clerk. My ſtomach being wateriſh, I would needs have ſome Eggs and Bacon: but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! deſiring me to deſiſt, for ſhe ſhould die at the ſight of them. I askt her the reaſon: *O,* ſaid ſhe, *it puts me in mind of one* Shrove-tueſday *eſpecially, on which the Apprentices pulled down my houſe; and ſick, ſick as I was, pulled me away violently from a Caudle I had prepared to comfort me: But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devils Dam take the Rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains, after they had dragged me ſufficiently, and worried me (as a Maſtiff would a Cat) till they were weary of the ſport: fearing I ſhould catch cold, they out of pity covered me warm in a Bogg-houſe.*

But the worſt was, after this kind uſage, I was to go through a long ſtreet before I could come to an acquaintance of mine wherein I could ſafely ſecure my ſelf from the out-rage of theſe Hell-hounds. All along as I went, a thouſand Dogs barkt at me, the ſtreet was filled with people looking and laughing at my ſad diſaſter, but none daring to come near me. They ſay I left ſo ſtrong a ſcent behind me, that ſeveral of the Inhabitants left their dwellings upon it, and that the ſtrong ſavour remained in that place above ſix days. I ſeemed to pitty her much, promiſing to viſit her often; and ſo we left her.

CHAP. XIII.

What a Trick he ſerved his Comrade; how himſelf was Trapan'd; his own Cloaths taken from him; the Bawd out of pretended pity, inveſted him with an old petticoat and waſtcoat; his admittance into a Boarding-School; his getting many of the Gentlewomen with Child; his diſcovery, and his flight.

FRom one Bawdy-houſe to another, was our dayly Travel, ſtill finding out ſome variety that might pleaſe us. About the twylight, coming along by a well-built houſe, I ſaw a Gentlewoman richly Attired ſtanding by the door, who, as I paſſed by, very civilly ſaluted me, and ſo withdrew her ſelf. I followed her in, as very well underſtanding how to interpret ſuch actions. She brought us into a ſpacious Inner-room, and then with much civility and good carriage, invited us to ſit down. She called to her ſervant to bring ſome bottles of Wine, reſolving to make us pay dearly for her extraordinary Favours. By our habits ſhe took us for no leſs then perſons of Quality; for we had gallantly accoutred our ſelves; and I thought that Fortune now had deſigned me her chiefeſt favorite, in throwing this unexpected bleſſing upon me. She cauſed her Lute to be brought her, to which ſhe ſung ſo harmonically,

that the Muſick of the Sphears are no more to be compared to it, then a Scotch Bagpipe to an Organ. This ſo intoxicated my Comrade, with the Wine together (not but that they had a great operation on my ſelf) that he fell faſt aſleep, (*alias* dead drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a Rival in my intention: and to the intent I might remove all *Remora's* or Impediments that might hinder my ſole enjoyment of this Lady, I conſulted with my ſelf what to do with him: I was not long about it, but ſtreight found out this cunning Plot, which was to ſend him home to his Maſter. Love to a Woman is ſo forceable, that what will it not do? to ſum up all, make a man betray his Friend. I made an Apology to the Gentlewoman for his incivility, and requeſted the favour to have her ſervant procure me a Porter; whilſt ſhe was gone to execute my deſires, I ſearcht his Pockets, and took away all his Gold; for we had converted all our money into that metal, which we always made our *Vade mecum.* To ingratiate my ſelf with this Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my deſign; which ſhe heartily laughed at. I farther deſired of her, that I might have a Card and a piece of paper. On the Card I wrote a ſuperſcription, and pinned it on his back, directing the thing to his Maſter, living in ſuch a place: with the paper, I wrote a Letter to him to this effect.

SIR,
Lately I found your Gooſe upon the way,
I took him up, as one that went aſtray.
To recompence my pains, I pull'd his feathers;

Such pretious down will warm me in all weathers.
His fleſh I love not; it belongs to you:
The gibblets though I keep; and ſo adieu.

I gave the Porter inſtructions, that he ſhould but juſt put him within the doors, and leave the Letter, and ſo with all ſpeed to come away, to prevent examination: he brought me word he had performed my order: what diſcants were made hereon, I ſhall leave the Reader to imagine. By this time I had gained my Miſtreſs with a ſhower of Gold, which had ſo far prevailed on her, that ſhe proteſted ſhe was wholly and ſolely at my devotion. I would have had her to have gone immediately to bed; but ſhe told me, *There would be time enough before morning to ſport in, and that we ſhould be both tired, if we went to bed ſo ſoon.* Wherefore, to divert our ſelves, we drank and ſung together in parts, I my ſelf having indifferent good judgment. Having ſpun out the time ſo long till it was time to go to bed, ſhe then conducted me to the Chamber where ſhe intended we ſhould lie. Though ſhe made what haſte ſhe could to undreſs her ſelf, yet me thought ſhe was purpoſely tedious. I commended before, her Vocal and Inſtrumental Muſick; but then I eſteemed no other Muſick ſweeter then what the Tag made againſt her Bodice when ſhe was unlacing her ſelf. About two a Clock in the Morning, three or four fellows ruſhed into our Room; at which I awakened, but made as little noiſe as a *Perdue*. My Miſtreſs leaping out of the Bed, they ſeized on her, gagged and bound her; and then opening the two leaves of the Window that was the entrance into

the Belcony, they came in all haſte to the Bed, and in a trice, had rowled up the Bed ſo cloſe, that they had like to have ſtifled me in the middle on't: though they dragged me in the Bed from off the Bedſteed, rudely letting me fall on the ground; yet I felt no harm; every part of me was ſo well guarded, that in that condition, I might have bid defiance to a Canon-Bullet. But when I heard them talk of flinging the Bed over the Belcony to their Companions, I thought I ſhould have died inſtantly for fear, knowing I muſt of neceſſity go with it. Whereupon I cryed out as loud as I could, and ſtruggling, I got a little place open, and then I roar'd like *Phalaris* his Bull. They ſeeming to be ſurprized with my unexpected noiſe, fled, faſtning a Rope to the Belcony, and ſo ſlid down into the ſtreet. Perceiving they were all gone, I groped about the Room (for it was very dark) ſpeaking very lowly, Where are you Madam? repeating it often; but much wondring I could not hear her anſwer me. As I was feeling round the Room, ſtretching forth my hands, I chanced to run one of my hands againſt her, and one of my fingers into her mouth: I thought my finger had ſtrayed at firſt, miſtaking the place; but ſearching farther, and finding teeth, I knew then whereabout I was, and diſcovered withal a ſtick in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as Butchers do their Sheep with a Gambrel. But having removed this obſtacle of her ſpeech, ſhe begged me to untie her hands; which having done, ſhe her ſelf untied her feet; and with that, ſhe would have claſped me in her Arms; but I hung an arſe, being ſenſible of the ſtinking condition

that the fear had put me in. She was very inquisitive after my welfare, asking me again and again, *Whether I had received any harm from the Rogues.* I told her no: *Nay, then I care not for my own ſufferings, or what loſs I have ſuſtained by them*, ſaid ſhe, and ſo ſpeedily went for a candle. As I was thinking to Apologize for my naſtineſs, up ſhe came with a light, viewing me, and perceiving what a condition I was in, ſhe kept at a diſtance; *Sir*, ſaid ſhe, *my fancy ſuggeſts to me, that you now reſemble* Nebuchadnezzar *when Metamorphozed into a beaſt, and lying in his own dung, when you ſhall have reaſſumed your humanity, I ſhall preſume to approach nearer to you.* I made my Sirreverence to her, wiſhing they had gagged her breech too ſo wide, that her guts might have a paſſage through her poſteriours. For I plainly perceived, notwithſtanding all her ſpecious pretences, ſhe was the ſoundreſs of this Plot. Well, ſhe cauſed water to be brought up, with which I cleanſed my ſelf; and becauſe my ſhirt had too ſtrong a ſent of *Stercus humanum*, ſhe lent me a Smock, which preſaged ere long I ſhould wear Coats too. Having ſhifted my ſelf, I looked for my Cloaths, but there was a *Non eſt inventus* out againſt them, all my ſearch could afford me not the leaſt comfort: my Miſtreſs ſeemed much diſturbed at my loſs; but when I told her I had loſt ſuch a conſiderable quantity of Gold, her ſorrow ſeemed to be redoubled, and I am ſure her inward joy was increaſed. She comforted me with a great many friendly loving expreſſions, deſiring me to be patient, and indeed neceſſity forced me to it. I asked her advice what I ſhould do in this naked condition: *There is no remedy*, (ſhe replyed) *you*

muſt be content to cloath your ſelf in Womans apparel, as for mans I have none to furniſh you withal. I conſented to it, and preſently ſhe dreſt me up in one of her Gowns, with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging. The ſlenderneſs of my body, whiteneſs of skin, beauty, and ſmoothneſs of face (having no hairs thereon) added a ſuitableneſs to my garb. I muſt ingeniouſly confeſs, when I conſulted with a Looking-glaſs, I thought the tranſmutation of Sexes had been verified in me; but when I walked, I found ſomething pendulous, which eaſily perſwaded me to the contrary belief of my ſelf. I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come I was to take my leave of her: going to falute her, I committed a foul miſtake, indeavouring to pull off my hood in ſtead of my hat, and making a Leg (as the vulgar term is) in ſtead of a Curchy; but ſhe adviſing me to rectifie that miſtake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu. In this diſguize I traverſed the ſtreets, it being almoſt impoſſible for any to diſcover me, my voice being ſo effeminate, that I was confident that would never betray me. As I walkt, I conſulted with Reaſon what was moſt expedient. My invention (as at all times) was now ready to aſſiſt me; and thus it was. Finding a Bill on a door, I knocked, deſiring to ſee what Lodgings they had; I was very civilly intreated to come in, and was ſhown ſeveral Rooms with much reſpect, for my female habit was very gallant, and ſo it had need, for it coſt me dearer than ſo much cloath of Gold. I pitch'd at laſt upon a Chamber extraordinary well furniſhed; I never ſcrupled the

price, (becauſe they ſhould look on me as a perſon of Quality) but agreed to my Landlords own terms. I told him I was lately come out of the Country, and that my Trunks were not yet ariv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent fuſpition. At firſt I intended to take for no longer time, than I could contrive a way to diſpoſe of my ſelf, and procure mans Apparrel; but perceiving how agreeable my Feature, Stature and Geſture were to my Female Weeds, I reſolved to trie ſome projects in them. There was a young Gentleman that lay in the houſe, and took ſpecial notice of me as ſoon as I entered it, and as he told me next day, was over joyed that I had determined to be a Lodger there. This young *Bravo* (which had more money than wit) had prepared a Banquet for me, and requeſted the favour of me, that it and himſelf might be received into my chamber: I alleadged I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore deſired to be excuſed; but he preſt me ſo far (getting alſo his Landlady to intercede for him), that at laſt (though with much ſeeming unwillingneſs) I condeſcended thereunto. Very merry they were, but I thought it prudence to be reſerv'd. My Amoriſt ſo gazed on me, that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kiſſing me ſometimes, which had like to have made me diſgorge my ſtomack in his face. For in my opinion, it is very unnatural, nay loathſome, for one man to kiſs another, though of late too cuſtomary I know it is; yet I look on ſuch as uſe it, inclining to *Sodomy*, and have had the unhappineſs to be acquainted with ſeverall, who uſing that unnatural action, found it onely the Prelu-

dium to a more beaſtly intention. In three dayes time we grew ſo intimately acquainted, that at laſt he became impudent. One time as I paſt by him, he catch'd at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where he had no intereſt, but he did it ſo rudely, that I verily thought he had ſpoiled me; I believe he imagined that he had caught me by the buſk, which ſome Ladies wear very long to hide their riſing bellies. I ſhowed my ſelf much diſpleaſed at him for ſo doing, expreſſing my reſentment in imbittered words for ſo great a Crime. Next morning, he courted me to a Reconciliation with a Gold Watch: by that he ſhould have been well skilled in gaining female affections; for there is nothing prevails on them more than preſents; and nothing gains ſooner over them a total conqueſt, than the hopes of enjoying a fair promiſing Fortune. With much importunity I accepted his Peace-offering, conditionally, that he ſhould never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, then how to dreſs my ſelf when my cloaths were off. I durſt not lay two things together, for fear I ſhould miſtake; there were ſo many baubles, I wiſhed for a Pen and Ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the Table together, they repreſented to my thoughts Babel, or a great confuſion, and nothing but a miracle could produce Order out of them. I had ſo improv'd my ſelf by hourly practice, when none was with me, and obſervation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modelled my ſteps, my former being too large by three quarters; I could advantagiouſly caſt my eye, ſet my face in a plat-form, and diſſect

my words; my feet were my only Traytors, and therefore I alwayes kept them cloſe Priſoners, for their greatneſs (like the Devils cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my Widgeon. Having a fit opportunity, there being none preſent but himſelf and I, I pretended diſappointment of money, and that my Rents were not yet due, and therefore deſired him to lend me 10*l.* for eight days; at the termimination of which time, I ſhould not fail to return it him with gratitude. He was much joy'd, that I would favour him ſo far, as to accept his ſervice; & with that flew like Lightning, fearing he would have fractured his Leg-bone for haſte to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully. I cauſed a Coach to be call'd, pretending I had buſineſs into the City. My Cully would have waited on me, which I utterly refuſed, telling him without privacy my affairs would prove ineffectual; whereupon he deſiſted.

Coming into *Burchin-Lane*, I went to a Saleſman, and bought (pretendedly for my Maid) an ordinary yet handſome Petticoat and Waſtcoat, furniſhing my ſelf with all the Appurtenances requiſite for a Servant maid.

In ſtead of returning to my Lodging, I cauſed the Coachman to drive me to one of the principal Nurſeries of *Venus*, *Whetſtones Park*. For I lookt upon it as a matter of ſmall import, to take my leave either of my young Gallant at home, or my Landlord, ſince I had not left the leaſt Mortgage behind me for ſleeping.

Mother *Cunny* (to tell the truth) was the Nick-

name of that Corpulent Matron, that with much demonſtrations of joy received me into her houſe; neither could ſhe forbear expreſſing her great ſatisfaction, in that her civil and honeſt deportment was ſo generally taken notice of, as that it ſhould be an inducement to ſtrangers to ſhelter themſelves under her Tutelage, preferring her as a Guardian or Tutreſs, before ſo many throughly tried, and long experienced antient Gentlewomen, both in City and Suburbs. She highly applauded both the Features and Complexion of my Face, not forgetting the right colour of my Hair, which was flaxen: the Stature of my Perſon infinitely pleaſed her, which was ſomewhat of the talleſt: In ſhort, nothing diſliked her, but that ſhe ſaid I lookt as if I had a greater mind to beat, than buſs; and to fight, than delight my Amoretes with ſmiling inſinuations.

I had not been long in her houſe, before a roaring Damme entred the houſe, (a conſtant viſitant) who meeting with my Guardian, was informed that there was a rich treaſure diſcover'd in her houſe, and that none ſhould attempt to ſpring the Mine, till he had made entrance by the firſt ſtroak. In ſhort, he was brought into the Chamber where I was, who at firſt behaved himſelf indifferently civil, and treated me nobly: But O Heavens! how great was my confuſion and diſtraction, when ſtrength of Arguments and force of hands would not repel the fury of his luſt, and that nothing would ſerve his turn but lying with me. I defended my ſelf manfully a long time; but ſeeing it was impoſſible to hold out any longer, and that I muſt be diſcovered, the next aſſault he made,

forced me to cry out: this ſo alarumed my Gentleman (concluding this outcry proceeded not from modeſty and chaſtity, but out of ſome trapanning deſign) that he drew his ſword, and made toward the Stair-caſe, and running down with more haſte than good ſpeed, overturned my kind Governeſs (that was puffing up the Stairs to my relief) and ſo both tumbled down together: fear had ſo diſpoſſeſt this huffling fellow of his ſenſes, that he miſtook my old Matron for the *Bravo* he thought did uſually attend me, and ſo without once looking behind him, made his eſcape into the ſtreet, leaving the piece of Antiquity not ſo much defaced by time, as by this diſmal accident ſo near extinguiſhing, that ſhe was half undone in the vaſt expence of her Strong-waters, to bring her tongue to one ſingle motion.

Coming to her ſelf, you may imagine how I was treated by her; but to be brief, I told her I could not brook ſuch a courſe of life, wherein all injoyments were attended by ruine and deſtruction, although habited and cloathed in the ſeeming ornaments of real pleaſure; adding moreover, that I would ſpeedily leave her houſe, inveſting my ſelf with a meaner garb, beſtowing thoſe I wore on her in part of ſatisfaction for what ſhe ſuffered through my means. This propoſition ſo well pleaſed her, that I had free liberty to do as I thought moſt convenient herein.

Exchanging my fine *Madamſhip* for plain *Joanſhip*, my equipage being ſuitable for ſervice, I reſolved to apply my ſelf to a Boarding School; and the rather, having obſerved it to be more thronged with Beauties, than any other: My addreſs proved

as ſucceſsful as I could deſire, for inſtantly upon my motion, I was received in as a Menial of the houſe. But when I came to uſe the Tools of the Kitchin, I handled them them ſo ſcurvily, it made thoſe teething Giglers my fellow ſervants, even ſplit with laughter. To add to my misfortune, thoſe Varlets one time when we had ſome meat to roaſt, on purpoſe got out of the way for a while, to ſee how I could behave my ſelf; and then I did ſpit the meat ſo monſtrouſly ſtrange, that coming into the Kitchin, they could not tell at firſt ſight what thoſe joynts were called at fire. My actions had proclaimed my ignorance in all Domeſtick Affairs, ſo that my Miſtreſs could not but take notice of me; and told me, that I was altogether unfit for her ſervice, and that ſhe could do no leſs than diſcharge me.

Fearing that my deſign was now fruſtrated. and my fair hopes of delight annihilated, I could not contain my tears from bedewing my face. My blubber'd eyes wrought ſo powerfully with my Miſtreſs, that I judged it now the fitteſt time in broken Accents to mollifie her anger, and ſtill reſerve my place in her ſervice. Whereupon I told her a great many formal and plauſible lies, well methodized; that I had all my life time lived in an obſcure Village amongſt rude and ill-bred people, and therefore knew nothing; that it was my deſire to learn, not ſo much valuing wages as experience, and that it was for that intent I had tendred my ſervice. The good old Gentlewoman being much pleaſed with my freedom, preſently ordered the Maids that without their grinning and gigleting, they ſhould ſhew me any thing I underſtood not.

By diligent obſerving, I gained ſhortly an indifferent knowledge: Though I lay with one of my fellow ſervants every night, yet I judged it no prudence to diſcover to her my Sex (though much againſt the hair) till I had by external kindneſſes indeared her to me. I went through my buſineſs pretty handily, giving a general ſatisfaction, gaining daily an intereſt upon the loves of the young Gentlewomen.

O the fine inexpreſſible petulances that dayly, nay, hourly paſt between me and ſome other of them; and ſo crafty I was grown, that I perfectly did counterfeit a modeſt maiden. Sometimes we would retire three or four of us into a private corner, yet not ſo obſcure but that we intended to be ſeen by ſome man or other we had afore diſcovered; and then as if affrighted by an unexpected ſurprize, ſqueak out, and then with ſtrange haſte endeavour to hide our pretended ſhamefacedneſs. Thus concurring and ſuiting my ſelf to their humours, I had all the freedome I could deſire.

And now I thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about; for indeed fleſh and blood could hold out no longer. One night I perceived my Bedfellow could not in the leaſt cloſe her eyes, continually ſighing and tumbling to and fro, ſometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me within her arms, as if I had been in a preſs. At firſt I thought this commotion or perturbation proceeded from Sympathy, as queſtionleſs in part it did; for I found experimentally by my ſelf that my heart did beat as if it would have forced its paſſage through my breaſt.

I thought I could do no leſs than ask her what ſhe ailed that ſhe was thus reſtleſs. At firſt, ſighs were her onely anſwers, till at laſt (I preſſing her much) poor thing ſhe melted into tears. As ſoon as her eyes had given over deluging, and that her heart would give her leave to ſpeak; *Jone* (ſaid ſhe, for ſo I called my ſelf) if thou wilt keep my ſecrets, I will tell thee my whole heart. Having promiſed to do that, whereupon ſhe began thus to relate her ſtory. Our Coachman for ſeveral years hath ſhown me more then common reſpect, and indeed though I have concealed that affection I ever bore him, yet I could not but now and then give him ſlight occaſions of hope: as the moneths wherein we lived together added to our age, ſo did it add true life & vigour to our loves, which increaſed ſo much and faſt, that I could hide mine no longer. But herein conſiſts my miſery, that our affections aim at different ends; I fain would marry him; he is onely for preſent enjoyment, and finding me obſtinate, and not in the leaſt yielding to his amorous ſollicitations, begins to ſlight me, and toys with ſuch before my face, that I know will ſurrender their Maiden ſorts upon the firſt Summons. Now Dear *Joan*, let me tell thee, I can hold out no longer, but am reſolved to give him all the opportunity of privacy I can invent, upon the leaſt motion offered, I will entertain it. I diſſwaded her from this raſh reſolution with as much reaſon as I could utter; inculcating the danger of being gotten with child, with all its aggravations: that having obtained his ends, his love would be converted into loathing; and he having rejected her as his object, none that knew her would chooſe

her as an object that may make an honeſt wife; for who would marry a whore, but to entail the Pox on his progeny? What ever I alleadged, ſhe valued not. Seeing ſhe was fully bent, I thought this the critical hour to diſcover my ſelf to her, *Come, come* (ſaid I) *I will quickly put you out of conceit with* John, *and cure this love that ſo much troubles you*; and ſo I did, after which I enjoyned her ſilence; which I thought ſhe would have done, for her own intereſt ſake; which ſhe did for a while. I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the cuſtome almoſt every night for the young Gentlewomen to run skittiſhly up and down into one anothers Chambers; and I was ſo peſtered with them, that they would not let me ſleep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come in to us, reſolving to monopolize all the ſport to her ſelf. It was good ſport to obſerve how this Maid always followed me as my ſhadow, and whatever I was doing of, ſhe would have a hand in it with me. What an endleſs work we made in making the beds! Our Miſtreſs ſaw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my Bedfellow; and indeed not without cauſe: for her mind was ſo employed about thinking on night, that ſhe did little all day; which my Miſtreſs perceiving, turned her away; which was no ſmall joy to me, if for no other conſideration then her extream fondneſs, which I knew would betray us both in the end.

After the departure of my Bedfellow, the young Ladies pittying my lonenefs in the night, redreſt that ſolitude by their welcome preſence. The firſt that came had like to have ſpoiled all; by her

ſqueaking; but ſome of her Aſſociates running to know what was the matter, ſhe readily told them ſhe *thought* there was a Mouſe in the bed: thus ſatisfied, they departed; and I enjoyned her as I did the other, ſilence; but alas! all Injunctions on Women to keep a ſecret, are but as ſo many perſwaſions to divulge it. Notwithſtanding I had ſo enjoyned her ſecrecy, yet ſhe made it known to ſome that ſhe entertained a peculiar reſpect for, intending they ſhould participate with her in the pleaſure ſhe enjoyed. This diſcovery did put me to an extream hard task; I ſhould never have undergone it, had not variety of ſuch ſweet ſmelling Roſebuds encouraged me.

Thus frequently each night did I repeat
My uncontrouled paſſions; and for heat,
And active livelineſs, I thought that none
Could ſtand with me in competition.
Twas then, forgetful wreteh, that I a kiſs
Did oft prefer before a greater bliſs.
What did I eare? my earnal joys did ſwell;
So ſlighted Heaven, and ne're feared Hell.
But let me heneeforth learn to ſlight thoſe toys,
And ſet my heart upon Celeſtial joys.

In the very height of theſe my jollities, I cou'd not forbear thinking ſometimes on my eternal condition; but cuſtome and opportunity had ſo abſolutely inſlaved me, that good thoughts which were but ſeldom, wrought little good effects upon me. But if my ſouls welfare would not deter me from theſe foul and wicked acts, yet love to my preſent mortall condition, compelled me for a

while to deſiſt, and by flying thoſe embraces I lately ſo hotly purſued, ſhun thoſe complicated miſchiefs which were appropinquant, the undeniable effects of my immoderate and deſtructive wantonneſs. My approaching danger was too viſible, for I obſerved that ſome of the Gentlewomen began to find ſtrange alterations in their bodies, with frequent qualms coming over their ſtomacks, which made me ſick to be gone; and in this manner I did plot my eſcape. My Miſtris having a Son much about my ſtature, and one time finding a fit opportunity, I got a ſuit of cloaths of his, with other perquiſits, which I put on, reaſſuming my proper ſhape and habit, and ſo with flying colours marched off, inſulting over the conqueſt of ſo many Maidenheads, leaving the *quondam* poſſeſſors thereof to deplore their enſuing miſery, and condemn their own raſh folly.

CHAP. XIV.

What a Trick he ſerved a young man of his Acquaintance, whom he met withal accidentally; how he was pinched with hunger, and what wayes he invented to kill it.

I Made all the ſpeed I could to *London*, knowing the largeneſs of that Vaſt City would afford conveniency for my concealment. But then my cloaths much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me ſooner than they. Whilſt I was ſtudying all imaginable wayes for my preſervation, ſuch an opportunity preſented it ſelf, that therein it was plainly ſeen the Fates had decreed of old to favour my enterprizes. As I ſaid, walking the ſtreets, and ruminating what was beſt to be done, I met with a young Man of my acquaintance, who ſeeing me, ran and caught me in his Arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and ſo as is uſual when Friends meet we muſt drink together. Over our cups, I began to inquire after his condition: He ſhook his head, and ſo related to me a ſad ſtory, which in effect was to this purpoſe in his own words.

Deareſt Friend, ſince laſt I ſaw you, never was young Man ſo unfortunate as my ſelf, the cauſe thercof I can impute to nothing more than ſelf-conceit, and over-much credulity; which by the ſcquel you will plainly underſtand. For pereciving that my Miſtreſs ſhewed me more then a eommon reſpect, I eoncluded that ſhe

had entertained ſome private favour for me within her breaſt, ſo that I began to be puft up with conceit; neglecting my duty, and now deſpiſing the Chamber-maid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly my oraizons too; withal, I carried my ſelf ſo imperiouſly, that my Maſter was not very well aſſured whether he durſt command or no. My Miſtreſs would ſometimes heartily laugh, to ſee how ridiculous I carryed myſelf; which I looked upon as a ſingular favour, miſtaking her ſmiles for tokens of her love, when they were no other than the apparent Symptomes of her deriſion. Obſerving how affable and pleaſing ſhe was, I never conſidered the generality of it, ſo that my ſelf-flattering noddle ſuppoſed this carriage particular to me, and thereupon interpreted this her complacencie ſtrong affection; and by reaſon ſhe was frequently merry and jocoſe, I concluded her ſalacious or Lechcrous. Thus by the falſe lights of miſconſtruction and eaſie belief, I was led into Loves Labyrinth; My Maſters affairs was leſs regarded than my Miſtreſs ſuppoſed affection. In fine, I judged it abſolutely neceſſary to make her acquainted with my Amorous Paſſion, and no expedient better than by Letter. My Miſtreſs (as it is cuſtomary with Citizens Wives to light the Candle of their Husbands Eſtates at both ends) had her Country-houſe, to which I was ſent by my Maſter, with ſome bottles of Wine, preparatory for a Feaſt intended for the accommodation of ſome ſpecial Friends: arriving, I found my Miſtreſs had ſent her Maid to London *about ſome buſineſs, at which I bleſs'd my propitious ſtars, to direct me thither in ſuch a fortunate and moſt deſired hour.*

After I had delivered my Meſſage, I began to talk very familiar with my Miſtreſs: ſhe with a ſmiling countenance, ask'd me, What I meant? *not in the*

leaſt checking my preſumption, which made me more arrogant and bold; telling her, I was her eternally devoted Servant; *ſhe anſwered me,* I was bound to be her Servant for a time, and that I muſt, when commanded, obey her pleaſure: *to which laſt word, I added in my thoughts the* Epithite Venereal, *ſuppoſing ſhe meant not to have left it out; with that I replyed,* Miſtreſs, I ſhould not deem my ſelf worthy to be your Servant, if my reſolution had not ingaged me to be ſo perpetually; as for my affection, it ſhall dayly anticipate your deſires; you ſhall not need to lay your commands on me, ſince my thoughts ſhall be ſolely imployed in contriving wayes how we may injoy each other, to the mutual ſatisfaction of us both. *At which words, ſhe fell into an exceſs of laughter, (which I judged the effects of joy) and then asked me,* Whether I was Mad? *I anſwered,* No, unleſs too much love had made me ſo; Deareſt Miſtreſs, read but this Paper, and I hope that will better inform you.

Here he ſtopt, pulling out of his pocket a copy thereof, which was to my beſt remembrance to this purpoſe.

Deareſt Miſtreſs,

FRequently revolving in my thoughts the condition I now am in, Deſpair ſtands ready to ſeize me; but the conſideration and knowledge of your commiſerating Nature, draws me out of its ruinating Jaws. When I reflect again on the diſparity of our Fortunes, and that it is your Indentured Vaſſal that thus proſtrates his affection at your feet, I fear one blaſt of your juſt indignation will ſuddainly ſhipwreck all my hopes. I con-

feſs my error is overmuch confidence, for which I may expect ruine, which commonly attends raſh Attempts; eſpecially daring to ſail in the narrow Seas, without any other Pilot than blind Love; and if I ſhould arrive at my deſired Port, I cannot deliver my Goods without ſtealing Cuſtome. But waving all difficulties of this Nature, conſider that Love muſt needs be quinteſſential, that is not drawn from any other intereſt than reciprocal enjoyment; and it muſt needs be exceeding ſtrong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greateſt hazards. Signifie my Pardon by one gracious ſmile, for what I have ſo boldly (yet forceably) diſcovered, and I ſhall eſteem my condition little inferior to what is Celeſtial; which is no happineſs to me, without the auſpitious beams of your favour ſhine on me. And ſo ſubſcribe my ſelf according as your ſentence ſhall be, either the

Moſt happy, or moſt miſerable.

The Verſes that were annext to the Letter, he told me he got a Rimer to compoſe for him, which afterwards he found ſtoln out of ſeveral Authors; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and ſo with the courſe thred of his brain botch'd together; which were theſe:

Cupid did wound my heart; I hid the grief
Long time, but durſt not ſeek for your relief;
I found the ſmart increaſed on that ſcore,
For wounds, if not well ſearch'd, but rankle more.
O cure me quickly then, or elſe I die;
Deny not, ſince there's none but you and I.

I withdrew as ſoon as I had delivered my Paper, giving her leave to read in private, what my Love

had dictated. About a quarter of an hour after ſhe called me to her, aſſuring me in a day or two I ſhould receive an anſwer to the purpoſe; and ſo abſconding her diſpleaſure, ſhe ſent me with all expedition home again. After the expiration of three dayes, ſhe came home to her City-houſe: at night ſhe pretended ſome indiſpoſition of body, and deſired to lie by her ſelf; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my ſuppoſed happineſs; ſhe takes an occaſion to tell me, *About twelve at night I might come to her Bed-chamber, the door whereof ſhe would leave open for me on purpoſe.* In the mean time, ſhe ſhewed my Maſter the Letter, acquainting him with the whole buſineſs. According to the time appointed, I entered the Chamber in my ſhirt; approaching the Bed, I began to pour out my Amorous Expreſſions; and as I had one leg upon the Bed-ſide, ready to enter the Bed, where I thought my Miſtreſs had attended my pleaſure, I thought the Devil had waited on my Poſteriors, correcting me for not making more haſte. The firſt laſh was ſeconded with three or four more in an inſtant, which made me caper up and down ſo nimbly about the Room, that for my life I could not find the door; at laſt I did; ſpeed was now the onely Guardian I had left, and ſo without pauſing long upon it, I made but one ſtep of the firſt pair of Stairs from top to the bottom, which had liked to have lamed me; before I could recover my ſelf, my Maſter was with me again, which put freſh expedition into me; and ſo ſtarting up, I leapt down half the next pair, and tumbled down the reſt. By this time he had loſt the cord of his Whip, and fearing

leſt he might ſpoil me with the ſtick, deſiſted bidding me go to bed, leſt I ſhould catch cold after ſo great a heat, and ſo with two or three parting blows I got into my chamber, where I fell into a deep conſultation with my ſelf, the reſult of it was this; I took my curtains and ſheets, and tied them together, and then faſtned one end thereof to the Window; after this I went out of the Window, and ſo ſlid; by that time I was within an half ſtory of the ground, the knot of one of the Curtains ſlipt, ſo that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been abſolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes ſafe to lie there and cry *God help me*, I raiſed my ſelf as well as I could, but I had not walked far, before I found my ſelf in no condition of going, wherefore I reſolved to lie under the next Stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a Coblers Stall newly broke open that very night: never queſtioning the place, I crept in, and notwithſtanding my bruiſe by the fall, and whipping beſides, I fell faſt aſleep, ſo ſoundly, that I awaked not, till I was forced to it with an horſe-pox. For the Cobler coming to work early in the morning (according to his cuſtome) found his door broken open; with that, he made an hideous noiſe, crying out, He was undone; for the day before he had laid out three ſhillings four pence, which was all his ſtock in Leather; all which was ſtoln, with many old ſhooes, nay his very working implements; doubtleſs it was done by one of his own Fraternity, that had informed himſelf of his late great purchaſe. The Cobler entring his Stall, found me in one corner faſt aſleep. He took no other courſe to a-

wake me, than dragging me by the heels out of my Den, into the Street, crying out, That he had got one of the Rogues, and without any more adoe, fell upon me, buffeting me with his fiſt, and treading me underneath his feet, making himſelf both my Judge and Executioner: Thus you ſee one miſchief attends the others heels. I begged him in a pittiful manner to let me alone, and I would confeſs to him all I knew, deſiring him to go with me to the next Ale-houſe, which accordingly we did. I vowed to him I was no ways acceſſary to his wrong, informing him as much as I thought convenient of my ſufferings, ſhewing him what a woful plight I was in; relating, it was my Maſters cruelty that was the cauſe of all this, and no other fault of mine, then ſtaying the laſt night out a little too long. The Cobler ſeemed to commiſerate my miſery, asking me forgiveneſs for what he had done, and ſo we parted. Since, by the kindneſs of a good natured Widow (where I lie) I have recovered my hurts and ſtrength, and now am overjoyed we ſhould ſo happily meet.

After this we drank very ſmartly, but, I forgot not all this while my deſign on him. After that I had pitied him, and lamented his ſad misfortune, I thought it high time to put my Plot in execution: in order thereunto, I demanded what difference he would take between my Hat and his, his Cloak and mine; there being ſmall matter of advantage in the exchange, we agreed to go to handicap. In fine, There was not any thing about us of wearing cloaths but we interchanged: ſcarce had I un-caſed my ſelf, and put on my Friends cloaths, but in came one that had dogged me, attended

by the Conſtable, with a Warrant to ſeize me, who they knew by no other token but my Boarding-Miſtreſſes Sons garments I had ſtolen for my eſcape. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion, (finding them on him) telling him, *He ſhould ſeverely ſuffer for the wrong he did his Miſtreſs, in the abuſe of her houſe.* Full of horror and amazement, he beſeeched them not to carry him before his Miſtreſs, knowing how much he had offended her, ſhe would have no mercy on him; this confirmed their belief, that they had found out the Offender. The more he intreated, the more deaf and inexorable were they; and whilſt they were buſied about their miſtaken Criminal-Priſoner, I took an occaſion to give them the ſlip, knowing that a little further diſcourſe would rectifie their Error. What they did with him I know not, neither durſt I be ſo inquiſitive to underſtand: wherefore, leaving him to the mercy of ſuch, as would ſhew but little to him, I ſhall proceed forwards in my own ſtory. My ſtock was now very ſmall; how to increaſe it, I knew not. My invention was daily on the Rack, to find out expedient wayes to ſupply my neceſſary expence. But my money being all ſpent, my belly began to grumble out inſufferable complaints againſt me, ſeeming to charge me with want of ingenuity and induſtry, ſince I injoyed my liberty; for want that man cannot, which wants not that. Alas, what ſhould I do? I uſed what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a Billiard Table, Boards End, or Nine-Pin-yard, that I did not daily viſit, frequenting ſuch as had the greateſt reſort: in a ſhort time I learned the art of Spunging ſo per-

fectly, that I had the Title of *Spunge-Maſter General* conferred upon me. In thoſe places I learned to take Tobacco, which was the chiefeſt part of my food; living in a manner by 'Smoak, as the Camelion by Air. I fed ſo lightly, that I durſt not ſtir abroad in a high wind; neither durſt I fight, leſt one ſingle ſtroak ſhould have hazarded my diſſolution; continued drinking had ſo waſhed me, that my body was tranſparent, you might have ſeen within me (without diſſection) the motion of the heart; you could have obſerved but little as to my liver, it long ſince had loſt its uſe in the conveyance of the blood, for my ſtomack had nothing therein contained to ſupply it; like an Inns-a-Court-Kitchin out of Term-time. In ſhort, I appeared like a walking *Skeleton*. I had ſeveral ſuggeſtions within me to proffer my ſelf again to my Maſter; but the ſhame to be ſeen in that condition, deterred me; wherefore, I reſolved to weather it out a little longer, and try whether Fortune would once more be favourable to me. My cloaths were indifferent good, which could not but procure me credit, if I would make experiment. By means whereof I had gotten an handſome lodging chamber. It was a publick houſe of entertainment, ſo that here I thought I ſhould have meat, drink and lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what was in the houſe, which was readily brought me; but when the ſervants beheld with what celerity, (*Hocus* like) and cleanly conveyance, I had diſpoſed of what was before me, they verily believed in one week I would cauſe a dearth in the houſe if I ſtaid; wherefore, one of the ſervants acquainted her Miſtreſs with what

ſhe had obſerved, alleadging further invectively againſt me, That I looked like one of thoſe lean Beaſts which have nothing given them to feed on, but vertuous and honeſt Women; that ſhe believed I was the *Genius* of ſome hunger-ſtarved wretch, or a ſhaddow without a ſubſtance, (which was very true as to my pocket.) When I thought it was time to go to Bed, I call'd for a candle, not mattering whether I called for a Reckoning. But my Landlady did; for ſaid ſhe, *Sir, It is our cuſtome to reckon with our Lodgers every night what they have that day, and onee a week to diſeharge their lodging.* In truth I did intend to have diſcharged my ſelf of it before the week had been out. I knew not what at preſent to anſwer her, but I was ſeldom to ſeek in ſuch caſes. I deſired her to be content for that night, on the morrow I would have my Trunks brought to her houſe, making it my Quarters for ſome time; and that ſhe ſhould find me a boon Companion, drinking freely: *I believe ſo,* ſhe ſaid, *you will be here for ſome time, or may be you will make this your Refuge or Sanctuary for one night; and then you ſay you will drink freely too, give me leave to tell you, you meant at free eoſt. Sir, give me my reekoning now, or you ſhall have no lodging here this night.* Do you ſuſpect me, Landlady, ſaid I? *Reſpect you,* ſaid ſhe, (miſtaking the word) *for what grounds, unleſs I knew you better? and yet I doubt I ſhall know you too well. That's a good one indeed, reſpect a skin-full of Bones; a bag of Cheſſmen; a bundle of ſmall Faggot-ſticks. Why, thou Haberdaſher of ſmall wares, doſt thou think I will reſpect thee otherways than for thy moneys? unleſs I ſhould be ſo mad as to fall in love with Famine. Come, give me my reckoning firſt, and I*

ſhall talk with you in another Dialect; *if not, I ſhall ſet my Currs at thee* (the Tapſter and Hoſtler) *that ſhall worry thy gibb'd Catſhip.* Hearing her ſay ſo, & thinking the paſſage had been clear, I betook my ſelf to flight; but running thorow the Entry, I ran my belly directly againſt the Tapſters leg, that lay over the bench on which he ſlept. I ran ſo fiercely, that I ſhoved his head ſo violently againſt the board rais'd at the end of the bench, that I made his neck double; the knock likewiſe had like to have turn'd that little brains he had within his head. As for my own part, I thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out he had left his ſhooe behind. Before I could riſe, I had three or four about me, which I thought would have limbed me, as boys falling out do their cocks on *Shrove-Tueſday.* At that time I would have ſpared them one limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, eſpecially the ſhrill note of their Miſtreſſes perpetually moving Tongue, ſounding a charge in their ears. Being tyred with me, they would be revenged of my cloaths. They would have ſtript me (I think ſtark naked) for my Reckoning, but that one ſaid, *Let his Cloak ſuffice*; at which, another pulled ſo furiouſly at it, that miraculouſly, without rending that thin tranſparent garment, he got it all but the cape. In this condition I was brought before my new Landlady; I asked her what was to pay? *Sirrah* (ſaid ſhe) *more then thou haſt in thy Pocket*; (2 s. 4 d.) As well as I could ſpeak, I demanded how it came to be ſo much. *Why*, (ſaid ſhe) *there is for Beef* 1 s. *for Bread* 4 d. *ſix pipes of Tobacco, and*

three pots of Ale; all this thou hadſt in leſs then half an hour. I would not contradict her, though I knew it was near an hour; I deſired her to keep my Cloak for the reckoning, but durſt not threaten her for her abuſe. Being about Hay-making time, I walked out into the Fields, reſolving to ſpend that night in contemplation. I had now time to *conſider* the damage I ſuſtained in this skirmiſh: they had carried away all my Ribbands with their fingers, otherwiſe my cloaths received the leaſt harm. My Noſe reſembled a black pudding before it is boyled, and my Eyes were fled into my head for fear of ſuch melancholy meat. My Cheeks were ſo puſt up with ſwelling pride, that they were reſolved to cloſe up the portals of my Opticks, that they might not be eye-witneſſes of the height of their ambition. My Ears were ſo maulled with their fleſhy Hammers, that I heard a peal within my head for joy, I ſuppoſe, that my eyes had taken up their reſidence within my brains. At laſt I felt ſomething about my ſhoulders; at firſt I thought it had been the weight of the blows, but feeling, found it a part of my friend that ſtill hung about my neck, and would not leave me; which put me in minde of that faithful Cloak that would never leave its Maſter, although his Maſter had attempted all ways imaginable to leave it. I muſt needs ſay, I loved my Cloak ſo well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a ſervant to ſervants, ever ſince the ſetting up of the firſt Billiard-table, whence it deriv'd its Pedegree. Being deprived of its imployment, and dipoſſeſt of its antient habitation, its heart-ſtrings were ready to break, and being not able to take a

nap for grief, turned changeling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth ſucceſſively, it was deſcended to him: but they were unworthy to him, that having had his beſt days, would turn him off in his extream old age. I have him ſo freſh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loſs.

Cloak, if I may ſo eall thee, though thou art
Thus raviſh'd from me, don't abruptly part.
Thou didſt not take diſtaſte, and ſo art gon,
Cauſe once I call'd thee a meer hanger on.
'Twas but in jeſt; for had I now my will,
I'de have thee for to hang about me ſtill.
Now I may tax thee juſtly, for I ſee
That now th'art nothing elſe but levitie;
Nay when I had thee, ſcarcely did I know
Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.
Thou wert ſo thin, and light. that ſome have thought
Thee made of that ſame web Arachne *wrought,*
And ſay th'art uſeleſs now, unleſs men put
Thee like a Cobweb to a finger cut.
I love thee ſtill, for better and for worſe;
He that divorc'd us, let him have my curſe.
Sure 'twas a red-Nos'd fellow, for I know,
He coming near, it was but touch and go.
But let him keep thee, for thou'lt uſeleſs be
To him; thiek eloaths ſuit beſt with knavery.

Day appearing, I got me a ſtick out of a hedge, and ſo walked in *Querpo* into the City. I walked up and down, but met with none of my acquaintance on whom I might faſten on as a *bur*. Noon approaching, my belly began to Chime, I thought

all the meat in *Eaſt-cheap* would not lay that ſpirit hunger had raiſed within me. Coming by a bakers ſhop, I pretended to be ignorant of the City, & as I was asking him the way to ſuch a place, not caring what, I happily ſecured a penny loaf, which I carried off undiſcovered ; I thought it not good to cumber my pocket with it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had an *Oſtriches* ſtomack ; every thing I put into my mouth, paſſed through me like Quick-ſilver. Going a little farther, I came to an Ordinary, where I ſaw two ſitting in a lower Room expecting their meat : I ſate me down in the next little box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdred Beef and Turnips ; the young Man that ſerved them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone, and not ſpeak too loud, for thoſe two which were next me, were my very good friends, and I would ſtartle them by and by with my unexpected appearance ; at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I ſlipt my hands through a hole, in the form of an heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, I ſpake aloud, You hoggs, are ye at the Roots ? I will make one among you inſtantly, and ſo brought out my handful ; having devoured them in a trice, I preſented my ſelf to their view, and ſate down with them : *Gentlemen*, ſaid I, *excuſe my frollick, I am in a merry humour to day.* They concluded what I ſaid to be a truth, and bad me welcome. *Nay*, ſaid I, *meat will come inſtantly as a ſupply* ; and ſo it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for

ſloth, that he did not bring my meat. *Sir*, ſaid he, *the Gentleman did not order me to bring any*; at which they frown'd, and began to charge me with incivility. *What are ye angry, ſaid I?* To which they replied *Affirmatively: If ſo*, I anſwered, (laying my hand upon a full pot of Ale) *I value your anger no more than the drinking this Pot, which I ſwallowed at two gulps, and ſo bid them farewel*; leaving them to call for another Ordinary.

CHAP. XV.

How he had like to have been tranſported, being taken up by Kid-napper, vulgarly called a Spirit.

HAving ſatisfied my ſtomach, I walked along with much more courage than before; which had been to little purpoſe, had I not had a ſtick in my hand; For there was hardly a dog in the ſtreet (which I went through) that gave me not his *grinning Salutation*) and would when my back was turned (knowing elſe I would never have ſuffered their humility) have kiſt my very *heels*, had not my ſtick prevented their *Swearing Dog-ſhips* mouths. I have wondred often why Doggs will bark ſo inceſſantly at the ſight of a Tinker, Pedlar, Tom-a-Bedlam, nay, any ſuſpitious fellow, till I found it my ſelf by experience, that by natural inſtinct they know and hate the ſcent

of a Rogue. My courſe of life appeared ſo idle (by my lazy ſtalking and gaping this way and that, ſometimes ſtanding ſtill and ſeriouſly viewing what deſerved not a minutes obſervance) that the Beadle took hold on me, telling me it was great pitty that ſuch a luſty young Man ſhould want imployment, and therefore would help me to ſome: but underſtanding from him that it muſt be in *Bridewel*, my leggs failed me, ſhewing thereby how unwilling they were to be acceſſary to the puniſhment which would be inflicted on my back: at length by pitiful looks, and many intreaties, I got clear of him, but fell immediately foul with an evil ſpirit, or a Seducer of Perſons to the Indies. Well may he be called a Spirit, ſince his nature is like the Devils, to ſeduce any he meets withal, whom he can perſwade with allurements and deluding falſities to his purpoſe.

After he had asked me many impertinent queſtions, he invited me to drink with him; I ingeniouſly told him I had not a penny, otherwiſe his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he caſt up his eyes to Heaven, and laying his hands on his breaſt, Alas poor young Man, ſaid he, what pitty it is ſuch a fellow as thou art ſhouldſt want money; which argues thou art both deſtitute of friends, and an imployment alſo. Well, I'le ſay no more for the preſent, but before we part I'le ſtudy ſome way or other for thy advantage, which I ſhall do meerly out of commiſeration to the miſerableneſs of thy condition, as alſo out of reſpect to thy Father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known;

by the reſemblance thou beareſt him in thy Countenance. I could but ſmile to my ſelf to hear how this Raſcal diſſembled; not diſcovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, reſolving to ſee what the event would be; after he had pauſed a while, Well, ſaid he, I have found it.

There is a *Merchant* an intimate friend of mine that wants a Store-houſe-keeper; Now if you can caſt accompts ever ſo indifferently, you ſhall find entertainment from him, and 40 *l. per annum* for encouragement. I told him that I joyfully accepted his kind proffer, and that I ſhould refer my ſelf to be diſpoſed of as he ſhould think fit. With that he imbraced me, ſaying, within two days I ſhould go aboard the Ship where the Merchant was, who would go along with me to *Virginia* (where he pretended the Merchants Plantation lay) in the mean time, you ſhall go along with me to my houſe, where you ſhall be, and ſhall receive from me what your neceſſities require. I had heard before, how ſeveral had been ſerved in this kind, ſo that being forewarned, I was fore-armed: *premonitus, premunitus.* He carried me away preſently to *Wapping*, and houſed me. To the intent he might oblige me to be his, he behaved himſelf extraordinary friendly; and that he might let me ſee that he made no diſtinction between me and his other friends, he brought me into a Room where half a ſcore were all taking Tobacco: the place was ſo narrow wherein they were, that they had no more ſpace left, than what was for the ſtanding of a ſmall table. Methought their mouths together reſembled a ſtack

of Chimneys, being in a manner totally obfcured by the ſmoak that came from them; for there was little diſcernable but ſmoak, and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the ſmell of this Room would have out-done *Aſſa Fœtida*, or burned Feathers in the Cure of Ladies troubled with the Fits of the Mother. As to the ſight, the place reſembled Hell, ſo did it likewiſe as to its ſcent, compounded of the perfume of ſtinking Tobacco and Tarpawlin. So that I concluded the reſemblance moſt proper.

In Hell damn'd ſouls, fire, ſmoak, and ſtink appear.
Then this is Hell, for thoſe four things were here.

I was ſeated between two, leſt I ſhould give them to ſlip.

After I had been there awhile, the Cloud of their ſmoak was ſomewhat diſſipated, ſo that I could diſcern two more in my own condemnation: but alas poor Sheep, they ne're conſidered where they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a ſeven years Apprenticeſhip, under the Tyranny of a rigid Maſter (as they judged it, coming but lately from ſucking the breaſts of a too indulgent Mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they ſhould) the ſlavery they muſt undergo for five years, amongſt Brutes in foreign parts, little inferior to that which they ſuffer who are *Gally-ſlaves*. There was little diſcourſe amongſt them, but the pleaſantneſs of the ſoyl of that Continent we were deſigned for, (out of a deſign to make us ſwallow their gilded Pills of Ruine) & the temperature of

the Air, the plenty of Fowl and Fiſh of all ſorts; the little labour that is performed or expected having ſo little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a paſtime than any thing of puniſhment; and then to ſweeten us on the farther, they inſiſted on the pliant loving natures of the Women there; all which they uſed as baits to catch us ſilly Gudgeons. As for my own part, I ſaid but little but what tended to the approbation of what they ſaid.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to underſtand the driſt of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time ſupper was talkt of by our Maſters; ſo choice they were in their dyet, that they could not agree what to have. At laſt one ſtands up, and proclaiming ſilence, ſaid, that a Diſh of Bruiſs was the moſt *Princely Diſh* of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot juſt as his Mother had put a Sop into her mouth, of that Stomach-murdering ſtuff, the greaſe running about her chops, which pleaſing her fancy, ſtruck ſo deep an impreſſion in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing ſhe brought forth, lookt much like a *Toaſt* ſoaking in a Cooks *Dripping-pan.*

That he might perſwade the reſt this way to indulge his appetite, he added farther, that it was a Diſh would not be expenſive, and ſoon ready. My Landlady to back him on, ſaid, ſhe had ſome skimmings of the pot, which ſhe had been collecting theſe three moneths, ſome whereof ſhe que-

ſtioned not but to procure, and let her alone to order it ſo, that we ſhould ſay we never had a better Diſh aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Peaſe-pottage before the cheiſeſt meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and ſee them boyl round, but that his heart leapt within him, and kept time with their motion. My maſter (that was their Senior) ſcorned to be controlled in his fancy; and therefore poſitively determined to have ſome *Poor John*, ſwearing that the *Great Mogul* did eat nothing elſe thrice a week, and that *Atabalipa* (that Indian King whom *Cortez* conquered) cauſed a ſacrifice every day to be made of them to his Idol, commanding them to be laid on an *Altar* made of ſome coals of fire, then the fat of ſome beaſt rubbed thereon, (becauſe they had no Butter) and ſo preſented to the *Idol*, afterwards to the King, which he did eat with inexpreſſible ſatisfaction. Order was given that this delicate fare ſhould be provided. Though they did *beat* it moſt *unmercifully*, yet it would not *yield*, reſolving rather to be *broken* in *peices*, then to become unlike its *Maſters* heart, or ſhew any thing of a *tender nature*. There was one allotted me for my proportion, which I uſed as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and ſo committing it to my teeths diſpoſal, I never found till now that my teeth could be thus ſhamefully baffled. They made ſeveral aſſaults upon it to little purpoſe. My teeth at length fearing a total conqueſt, deſperately and inragedly ſeiz'd on the thinneſt and weakeſt part, and holding it as faſt as a Vice, at laſt in the conflict overpowered one

ſmall fleak, but not being able to ſtay the ſwift backward motion of my head, the hinder part thereof (the ſeat of Memory) flew ſo violently againſt the wall, that I not only inſtantly forgot what I was doing, where I was, but the pain then I ſuſtained by the knock. Strong-water they poured down my Throat to revive me, but there was nothing did ſooner fetch me than a ſmall fleak of the *Poor John*, which ſticking in my Throat had well nigh choaked me, which cauſed a ſtrugling, and ſummoned the ſpirits together to oppoſe what might be deſtructive to Nature.

Now did I really imagine my ſelf at Sea, where, for want of proviſion, I was forced to feed on *Cordage*, or the *Ship ſides*. Had this poor creature been ground *ſmall*, I might have made as hard a ſhift to have ſwallowed it, as thoſe Sea-men did the *Saw-duſt* of deal boards coming from *Norway*, and deſtitute of other food. That night I ſlept but little, neither could I, had I ſwallowed *Opium* for that purpoſe, for the innumerable quantity of *Buggs* (as ſome call them) that had *invaded* my body; being weary (as I ſuppoſe) of inhabiting any longer the *dry manſion* of that old rotten Bedſted on which I lay. In the morning I found the *ruines* of a Looking-glaſs in the window, which I took up to diſcover what *knots* or nodes thoſe were I felt oreſpreading my face. The ſight whereof ſtruck into me a Pannick fear, verily believing I had been infected with a ſpotted Feaver.

I began to curſe the bed and ſheets, imagining the Contagion proceeded from them; to be ſatisfied herein, I drew aſide at the beds feet the Curtain (that is to ſay, part of a Tilt) pinned there to

keep the wind off, which otherwiſe would have fanned us to death, coming in ſo furiouſly through the Port-culliſe of the window: (for glaſs there was little). At firſt ſight I queſtioned whether I was not lately riſen from the Dead, ſince there was viſibly before my Eyes, the black Cloath that covered my Herſe. Had not we gone to bed without a Candle over-night, I ſhould ſooner have choſen a bulk than this bed to lye on. It might have been a good *Quære*, whether thoſe ſheets had ever been waſht ſince their weaving, and continually ſince imployed by Whores and Bawds, ſucceſſively, to ſweat out their Contagious humours, and matter proceeding from their ulcerated Bodies.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for thoſe marks in my face, were only occaſioned by a *ſtinging ſort of Vermine*, who ſeldome meddle with ſuch as are accuſtomed to them, only giving their welcome to ſuch as were *New-comers*. I took theſe ſufferings as patiently as I could; but thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them; and it ſhould not be long before I would take my *farewell*. We had ſcarce breakfaſted, before a Meſſenger came into the room, and with much ſeeming reſpect pretended to deliver a Meſſage to my friend. I gheſſed it was to inform him how the Tyde ſerved, and ſo it proved. My friend told me we muſt be gone inſtantly, for the Merchant attended my coming: Wherefore we preſently went down to the ſtaires to take Boat: by the way he told me, that he would go with me in the ſame Ship, and take as much care of me as he would of his own Son, whom I underſtood afterwards he had too

ſure, above a year ſince ſtoln away, and ſold him as a ſlave. One while I thought to have ran for it, another time I thought to have cryed out, a *Spirit*, a *Spirit*, but that the thought of the Water-men being his Accomplices, detterred me. I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the Boat, being now deſtitute of all relief, I asked him according to his former pretence, whether he reſolved to go to Sea with me? yes, replyed he, I queſtion, Sir, (ſaid I) whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am reſolved you ſhall now; and with that I flung my ſelf with him over-board. Thoſe which were in the Boat, immediately endeavoured at our riſing to pull us up into the Boat: But I clapping my hands unfortunately on the ſide of the Boat on which they within leaned, overturned it upon me. The firſt thought this accident produced in me, was that a Whale had ſwallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly: or that Death had arreſted me, and clapped me up a cloſe priſoner for my ſins, in Hell's deep and black Dungeon. But by the induſtry and expedition of many Water-men, eye-witneſſes of this paſſage, (which had like to have proved Tragical) the Boat was recovered, and I the firſt perſon taken up and ſet on ſhore.

Multorum manibus grande levatur onus.

Many hands make light work. I ne'er ſtaid to ſee what was become of my good Friend, (a Pox take him) but with what ſpeed I could, attended with a great number of little *hooping Owlets* (I

mean the young fry of Scullars) I ſecured my ſelf from this *Anthropopola*, or Man-ſeller : A charitable woman ſeeing me in this *pickle*, (for it was Salt water, which my *Sous'd guts* may teſtifie if they pleaſe, in their grumbling manner of *ſpeaking*) told me that ſhe would entertain me till to morrow. This was the greateſt *Cordial* could be applied to this *croſs*; and without many Complements, I thanked her for her great love. Now becauſe ſhe ſaw what condition I was in, ſhe immediately put me to bed.

CHAP. XVI.

How under the pretence of begging, he ſtole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary; what a bold Adventure he made there, and the ſuccefs thereof.

PArting from this good Woman, I began to think that the Art of ſtealing might be reckoned amongſt the liberal Sciences; for though it may be called an *Handicraft*, yet it cannot be looked on as *Mechanick*. This is the *Art*, the right Practice whereof is the true *Philoſopher's ſtone*, the *Elixer* of life; with which many turn *Poyſon* into *Medicine*, coarſe cloath into cloath of Gold, hunger into fulneſs and ſatiety, convert rags into Sattins, and all this done by a quick wit, and ſlight of hand.

The Antiquity and Dignity of this Profeſſion, I ſhall relate elſewhere, and ſhall proceed on in my Adventures.

The Evening or Twilight being come, I chanced to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, reſolving if I met any to beg an Almes of them, having before premeditated what I had to ſay, *viz*, that I was a poor diſtreſſed young Gentleman, my Father, Mother, nay, all my Relations I knew, being dead, and that not knowing what to do, was forced (under the Covert of the night) to beſeech the aſſiſtance of charitable minded perſons. But in my way found none that ſhould occaſion my uſing this form.

I found in the Parlor a good Camlet-cloak, which I made bold to put on, and ſo very gravely walked out of the houſe; but coming to the door, you muſt think there was *Wild-fire* in my breech, that haſtned me out of the ſtreet. Being gotten a Bow-ſhot off I thought my ſelf indifferent ſecure, ſo that I ſlackned my pace, but could not (if my Life lay on it) forbear looking this way, that way, ſometimes over one ſhoulder, ſometimes over the other: thinking of what dangerous conſequence this might prove. I reſolved to walk more confidently, and not let my eyes diſcover any thing of fear, by reaſon of guilt. This looſe garment had ſo of a ſudden Metamorphoſed thoſe thoughts I had of my ſelf but a little before, my eye being continually on my Cloak, I could not conceit my ſelf leſs then the beſt of the young Templers, that walk the Streets to ſhow themſelves: coming into *Bell-yard*, I obſerved ſeveral Gallants go into an Houſe, and others to come out, which put me to the curioſity of enquiring, what, or whoſe Houſe it was: Who told me it was a Gaming Ordinary. Nay, then (thought I) it is as free for me to enter as others; and ſo went in. I looked on a while, but my fingers itched to be at it. Why, thought I, have I not adventured a *Gaol*, a *Whipping*, or an *Hanging*, and ſhall I now fear a *Kicking*, a *Pumping*, or a *Bog-houſe*? Theſe conſiderations made me reſolutely take up the Box, and I threw a Main, which was 7: a great deal of money was preſently ſet me, I knew it was but to little purpoſe to baulk them, ſo that confidently I threw at all, which I nicked with eleven, and ſo continued holding ſeven hands together. Perceiving I had got a con-

ſiderable quantity of money, and fearing I might looſe that which I had ſo boldly adventured for, I thanked my propitious Stars and the Gentlemen, who had rather loſe their money than ſuſpect any that hath the Garb of one well Extracted; and ſo bade them good night. A priviledge too many *Skarking Ubiquitarians* uſe without interruption, being moſt commonly in Fee with the *Waiters* and *Box-keepers*, who will be ſure to ſpeak in the behalf of ſuch confident Cheats; if they loſe, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and reſponſible; which frequently ſo prevails upon a *Mouth*, that he hath not a *word* to ſay more. Queſtionleſs Ordinaries were firſt impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the *Square*; but ſince, by the connivance of the *Box-keepers*, when the Table grows thin, and few at it, let the ſtranger beware: for the *Box-keeper* ſhall walk off, pretending ſome ſpeedy diſpatch of a buſineſs concerning the *Houſe of Office*, *&c.* whilſt your Antagoniſt ſhall put the change upon you, or make uſe of his own *Jack-in-a-box*, and then had you 500 *l.* (would you ſet like a *Gameſter*) he will have it to a penny in a ſhort while: with whom the *Waiter* goes ſnips. If at any time ſuch they know want an *High flyer*, *&c.* they know how and when to ſupply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and ſo laden I was ready to ſink, I reſolved to moor my Veſſel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loath to entertain me, his lodger having ſerved him a ſcurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the Furniture of a

room that coſt him 40 *l.* beſides a great ſilver Tankerd, which the Gentleman would have filled with ſtale Beer and Sugar, to ſtand by his bed-ſide all night, pretending it was his cuſtome. But I deſiring him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his Jealouſie. I ſhewed my ſelf that night very exceeding noble, concealing my ſucceſs at play, that he might conclude the greatneſs of my expence proceeded from the noblenefs of my nature, having a good eſtate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies, and abundance of reſpect. Sleep I could not, for thinking how to diſpoſe of my ſelf.

I had experimented the various exigences and extremities an unſetled condition is accompanied withall; and knowing how ſecurely I could purloin from my Maſter, if I would moderate my theft, I concluded to ſupplicate my Maſter by a Letter for my reception into his ſervice, not forgetting my Miſtreſſes *quondam* kindneſſes. If my Maſter ſhould refuſe to re-entertain me, I had by me what might ſupply my neceſſities, till I had re-conſidered how to improve my ſtock, or beſtow my ſelf. Not to delay time, the next day I wrote him this Letter.

SIR,

HAving ſeriouſly conſidered the greatneſs of my folly in running from ſo good a Maſter, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg mercy from Heaven, and forgiveneſs from you. Mitigate my offence by revolving in your mind the fewneſs of my years, which makes me (as it doth moſt others) prone to rambling fancies: look then favourably on my long abſence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful elapſe, which maturity of age may rectifie. If you can forgive my follies, I will ſtudy to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the Bearer hereof you may ſignifie your pleaſure.

Sir, I am

Your cordially penitent
Servant, *&c.*

With much joy my Maſter read this Letter, and haſtened the Bearer away to bring me to him. Having converted my ſilver into Gold, ſowing it in my Collar and Waſtband, and putting my ſelf into a Garb convenient for his ſight, I went to him.

CHAP. XVII.

His Maſter ſheweth him more kindneſs than formerly; the ill requital he made him, by Cuckolding him: an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable ſtories, deduced from the ſtrength of Imagination.

MY Maſter upon my reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the proſecution of a more regular courſe of life, he would forget too my paſt ſollies. I promiſed him more then the ſtricteſt Zelot ever yet did, and begged him pardon aforehand, if he found a defect in performance.

As my expreſſions gave my Maſter much content, ſo my return (I perceived by my Miſtreſſes eyes) gave her the greateſt ſatisfaction. My Maſter began to doat on me again, ſeeing I daily trebled my diligence, and ſo active I was in every thing that concerned his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gained ſo much upon his facile good Nature, that I had liberty to wear my Hat, and ſit at Table with him, neither would he command me any thing ſervile. I had (as formerly) the ſame ſollicitations from my *Brother Snippers*; but fearing leaſt one time or another I might be ſnapt by the timerous nature of ſome, who, if once taxt, will confeſs, not only as to themſelves, but likewiſe detect the whole knot of a *Brother-hood*; I reſolved to have no more to do with them, but

would ſnip ſecurely by my ſelf, knowing, that in any ſecret deſign, if many are concerned, their buſineſs cannot be long kept private. Wherein by the way, I cannot but commend the craft and policy (though I abſolutely diſclaim the actions) of modern Padders, whoſe providence inſtructed them to rob ſingly, by which means their booty came to them intire without diſtribution, or if apprehended (as it was very rare) they knew how to make a better plea for themſelves in a Court of Judicature. I now kept cloſe to my buſineſs, not harbouring the leaſt temptation to any extravagancy, and had ſequeſtred my ſelf from what might render me publickly notorious, and only ſtudied by what means I might raiſe my Fortune, intending to build my future eſtate upon the ruines of other men: having nothing of mine own but my late purchaſe at play, my only way was (as I thought by ſome's ſucceſs therein) to make the world believe I was really reformed, and ſo create to my ſelf a credit, whereas I was only a *Devil* converted to an *Angel* of *light*, or a *Woolf* in *Sheeps-cloaths*. Now did I begin to *cant* religiouſly, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I did not take Sermon-Notes, judging this religious cloak to be the beſt expedient, to ſcrew my ſelf farther into my Miſtreſſes favour, who doted on *Morning Exerciſes*, and monethly *Faſts*. If my Maſter had forgot to do the *duty* of the day, I would with much reſpect put him in mind of the neglect, deſiring that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my converſion more miraculous then that of *St. Paul*, ſo they gave me the greateſt incouragement, leaſt

like *weak Women*, I might prove a back-ſlider. There were few private meetings my Miſtreſs heard of, but, by the leave of my Maſter, I muſt conduct her to them, which were as many portents of our private meetings afterwards, where *Venus* ſhould appoint.

I am ſorry that I am ſo uncharitable as to ſay that the *zeal* of her *Spirit* was not ſo hot as that of her fleſh. Every day I had ſome remark of her love, which I received with much ſubmiſſive reſpects, pretending I underſtood not her meaning, which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant, that ſince ſhe began to court me, ſhe would proſecute it to the end. Her courtſhip me-thought was very prepoſterous; ſhe might have firſt received the charge from me, and by that means ſhe would have found me prepared, whereas otherwiſe ſhe might have been deceived in her expectation.

My Miſtriſs gave me ſo many opportunities, and ſignified her deſires by ſo many tokens and dumb expreſſions, that I began to condemn my fears, which rendred me unworthy of her favours. The beſieger deſerves not the honour of poſſeſſing that City, whoſe Gates are freely opened to him, yet dares not enter. Whilſt I was thus ruminating, my Miſtriſs came to the Counting-houſe where I was writing; and leaning upon my ſhoulder, asked me what I was doing: I told her nothing but writing. *Nothing*, I believe ſaid ſhe, nor never will do *any thing*, but draw up blanks, and ſo abruptly left me. She knew the quickneſs of my apprehenſion, and ſo left the interpretation hereof to my own conſtruction.

Not long after, (thinking her words had left a deep impreſſion, as they did) and withall concluding I would give her the ſence of them, when I had an opportunity; She informs my Maſter that ſhe had a great deſire to viſit a Gentlewoman ſhe had not ſeen a long time, and requeſted that her man *Thomas* (for that was my name) might wait on her: to which he aſſented. Though I *led her*, yet I wondered were ſhe *led me*, through one ſtreet into another till we arrived at the water-ſide. She bid me call for a pair of Oars, which I accordingly did. The Watermen were very inquiſitive according to their cuſtome, to know whither we intended. Well, well, ſaid ſhe, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to underſtand. Said ſhe, Row us up to Fox-hall. I for my part was ſomewhat amazed, yet I partly gueſſed what ſhe drove at. I kept at a diſtance, ſhewing her the reſpect of a ſervant; which ſhe taking notice of, laughed, ſaying, Come Cuz, why doſt not ſit neerer? to which I replyed as familiarly (for by this time I had much improved the ſtock of my confidence) I were beſt to ſit a little neerer you, ſince I ſhall be the beſt expedient to ballance the Boat even, or trim it, for you are but *light on your ſide.* This expreſſion I doubt nettled her, for preſently thereupon ſhe ſhot a piercing dart from her eye, (which I fancied to have penetrated my very ſoul) How now Cuz, ſaid ſhe, I thought you had a better opinion of me; I underſtand the Riddle, Your expreſſions may be very *dark* to ſome, however I have too much *light* in it. I would have made an Apology for my ſelf, but

that ſhe hindred me by whiſpering me in the ear, to this effect, that if ſhe was *light*, there was no other cauſe but my ſelf, and that if I abuſed her love any longer, ſhe would ſit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went ſtreight to Spring-Garden; by the way ſhe told me, I muſt lay aſide all formality, and for the better carrying on the deſign we went upon, ſhe would have me as afore aſſume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obſcure bower, I ſuppoſe one of *Lovels Chapels of eaſe*, where, without a *Clew*, it would be hard for any to find us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the Appetite, which with much freedom we enjoyed together.

Now, ſaid my Miſtreſs, I ſhall take off the veil of my modeſty, and diſcover to thee the very naked ſecrets of my heart. The firſt time that ever I ſaw thee, I had more than a common reſpect to thee, and there was not a time ſince, wherein I had the ſight of thee, but that it added new ſewel to the flame of my affection: I uſed all poſſible means to ſmother or blaſt it in the bud, but could not; I ſummoned my reaſon to confute my paſſion, and notwithſtanding I alledged that there was a diſproportion in our age, and unſuitableneſs as to our condition, and laſtly how great a ſtrain it would be to my religious profeſſion; yet Love got the Victory over theſe, and would have been too ſtrong for ten times as many; the reſt ſhe ſupplyed with kiſſes, which were infinite.

Having gained a little breath, and ſhe again having lent me the uſe and *diſpoſal* of my own mouth, I returned to this her amorous Oration,

ſomething ſuitable to it by way of retaliation; Proteſting with invocations, that ſince ſhe had ſo compleated my happineſs by her love, I would periſh before I would be guilty of the leaſt abuſe therein.

That had it not been for the ſenſe of my unworthineſs, and fear of hazarding her love, and ſo gained her diſpleaſure, no other difficulty ſhould have deterred me from declaring, and diſcovering what ſhe had prevented me in; adding, that where the quinteſſence of all loves contracted into one body, it could not equallize mine. Come, ſaid ſhe, let us leave off talking in ſuch idle phraſes, let future conſtancy make apparent the reallity of our affections, and let us not looſe any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me now to mince the matter, or by my coldneſs endeavour to recongeal that water where the ice is too viſibly broken and thaw'd. Yet let not your prudence be queſtioned, or reaſon forfeited, in making any unhandſome advantage of this my freedom. But above all, blaſt not my reputation by the unſavory breath of any oſtentatious boaſting of a Gentlewomans favours, nor let not my love cauſe any ſlighting or diſreſpect in you to your Maſter; neither let it ſo puffe you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow-ſervants. In company, ſhew much more reverence to me than formerly. In private, when none ſees us but our ſelves, be as familiar and free as actions can demonſtrate. Be conſtant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be ſecret and ſilent,

and follow not the common practiſe of vain-glorious Fools, that in requital of thoſe favours they have received in private of ſome credulous Female, will make their braggs of them in publick. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their Chaſtities, but muſt likewiſe murther their Reputations. Have a ſpecial care you ſlight me not, (as ſome ſqueamiſh or curious Stomacks uſe feeding too long on one ſort of Food, though never ſo delicious) for a Womans love diſpiſed will turn into extreme hatred, and will be ever reſtleſs till malice and revenge have conſulted with Invention, how to be more than even with the ſlighting Injurer. She propounded more Articles, which I have forgot now, but I remember I ſcaled them without a *witneſs.* We made an end of our buſineſs for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the tedioufneſs of our ſtaying might not be ſuſpected by the ignorant *Cuckold* at home: I have reaſon now for ſo calling him.

Coming home, I applyed my ſelf to the buſineſs of the Shop as before, enjoyning my eyes a ſevere pennance, not ſo much as to look towards that Object they ſo dearly loved. According to my uſual time I went to Bed, but ſleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one a clock I was much ſtartled, to hear ſomething come into my Chamber ; but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a diſcovery, my Miſtreſs had gotten within the ſheets, and not daring to ſpeak, becauſe my Maſter lay in the next room, moſt commonly by himſelf, and her chamber was the next to that, (and in a Trundle-bed underneath my Miſtreſs's bed lay the Maid.) Neer upon day-break my ſweet

Bed-fellow left me, at an unhappy time, for then was my Maſter awake, which might have ruined us both, which had ſo faln out, had he been reſolute or couragious; but on the contrary, exceeding timerous, but more eſpecially, childiſhly afraid of the ſuppoſed walking of Spirits: For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice, with the weight of her body; beſides, by the help of Starlight, perceiving ſomething to move all in white, he ſhrunk underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head; now did his imagination work as *ſtrongly* almoſt as his *Breech*, ſuggeſting ſtrange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I ſhall give him leave to tell his own ſtory. A little after it was day, being almoſt ſtifled for want of freſh Air, and choak'd with the ſtink that was in the Bed, he boldly & valiantly put his head out of the coverlid, and after he had thrice exorcis'd the Devil, or the ſuppoſed evil Spirit, with avoid *Satan*, repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, *Reſiſt the Devil and he will flye from thee:* He called out as loud as he might for me to come to him. I leapt out of Bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter: O *Thomas*, ſaid he, light a Candle quickly; I running in haſte to light the Candle, fell (by miſtaking the firſt ſtep) down the ſtairs, which made a terrible noiſe: my Maſter hearing me, cry'd out, (ſaying, O God, what will become of me?) thinking the Devil indeed had miſtook me for himſelf, and that he was horſing me on his back to carry me away; with that he fell to prayer ſo fervently loud, that up ſtarts the Miſtreſs, and the Maids, running to know what was the matter: fear had ſo poſſeſſed him, that he could not be perſwaded, but that they were ſome of the Deviliſh crew.

At firſt they thought him to be fallen mad ; but finding out the cauſe of this diſtraction, with much ado my Miſtreſs made him ſenſible of his miſtake. Being fully aſſured, that they were not (yet) damned Spirits, he relates what he had ſeen, in this manner : My Miſtreſs afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which ſo buſied her, that her ſenſe of ſmelling for that time had left her, ſhe could never have endured to hear him out, for that notorious ſtink, which came from the Bed, when he ſtirred ever ſo little.

I wonder'd, ſaid he, that contrary to my uſual cuſtom, I awak'd about four a clock, whereas I uſed to ſleep ſoundly, thou knoweſt till eight. I hearkned, at firſt I perceived onely the boards to crack, but prefently after I heard chains rattle, and the ſtools flung about the room, the bed, and I in it, *danced* up and down, as if a *Scotch Bag-pipe* had been plaid upon by a *Northern Witch*, and the Devil the while had Danced with me, and the Bed a Morrice, (ſupplying the *Bellows* with wind.) Sometimes they pull'd me out of Bed, and laid me on the cold floor, and then toſt me in again like a *Dog in a Blanket.*

Hearing no noiſe, I attempted to peep out ; but ſcarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the Bed-cloths, when I ſaw ſtanding by me, a compoſition of meer bones, with a ſhrowd thrown over his ſhoulders, like an *Iriſh Brachin*, or a *Scotch Pladd*, with a light Taper in one hand (I knew not what uſe he could make of it, for there were only *holes* in his head inſtead of eyes) and an Hour-glaſs in the other : he grinn'd at me with his teeth, (for he had no lips) and ſhaking his chains left me,

which ſight ſo terrified me, that I had like to have ſhot out (like a *Pudding* in a *Bag*) all that was within me. My Miſtreſſe had like to have broken out into extreme laughter, had not the conſideration of danger (that might have enfued thereon) hindred her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be perſwaded to lie in that Chamber again, which made me curſe his ſtrong conceit, for by this means he would lye with his wife, which interrupted our ſweet venereal paſtime. As for my part, I believed he would never have return'd to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he paſt through it in the day time; and if alone, he would ſo thunder down the ſtairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (*Vulcan*-like) he had been ſent by *Jupiter head-long* in a meſſage.

Another accident (hapning not long after) cur'd him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing elſe but fancy: In the Sellar, on a certain beam that went croſſe, there were great quantity of Tenter-hooks placed there, ſome to hang meat on, others of a ſmaller ſort for other uſes. Our Cat being ſomewhat ravenous, was following the ſcent, and had gotten upon the Beam; her foremoſt feet ſlipping, ſhe was ſtrangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover her ſelf: Being terribly pained by the hook, ſhe made a moſt hideous noiſe, which made our Dog fall a howling. This ſtrange din firſt approached my Maſters ears, who awaking my Miſtreſs, aſked her now whether ſhe would believe her own ears. At firſt ſhe confeſt to me, ſhe knew not what to think, her confcience being yet tender (which having no long time accu-

ſtomed her ſelf to ſin, was not hardned and ſear'd up) put her in mind of what ſhe had lately committed, ſo that ſhe had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* was ſent to *buffet* her; But ſhe having a martial ſpirit, and not eaſily daunted, ſhe hearkned further, and then judg'd that Thieves had broken into the houſe.

My Maſter all this while was *breathing his laſt at both ends*, whileſt my Miſtreſs leap'd out of Bed, and came to my Chamber door, bidding me in all haſte to riſe, for there were Thieves in the houſe. I confeſs I had no great mind to be kill'd, and therefore I was in no great haſte to riſe, ſometimes buttoning my Doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again; perceiving that I delaid, ſhe came again, taxing me with Cowardiſe, and meanneſs of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me to reſolve to adventure my life, rather than hazard the loſs of her good opinion.

Finding my Miſtreſs in her ſmock, I thought it a ſhame for me to have any cloaths on; and ſo naked as I was, we march'd on. Coming to the Stairhead, my fancy troubled me a little too, for the noiſe had ſo amaz'd me, that I would fain have my Miſtreſs to go firſt; ſhe could not forbear laughing, to obſerve how complemental and ceremonious at that time I was. Having ſcattered my fear by reſolution, How do I abuſe myſelf, ſaid I, and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was produced, and then thoſe Bug-bear thoughts which darkneſs poſſeſſeth the fancy withal, began to vaniſh. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what I *prob'd*. Deſcending the Cellar-ſtairs, I there

plainly ſaw the Original cauſe of our fear and diſtraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Miſtreſs to the ſight, and now the Maids too would be Spectators, underſtanding the danger to be overpaſt.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat ſhould be carried up ſtairs to our Maſter, and ſhew him the *wound in his Tail*, for evidence to prove his guilt in being ſeduced by *fancy*.

He hearing ſome come up, thought we were all deſtroyed, and that they were coming up to diſpatch him too: Wherefore he cryed out, *Save my Life, and take all I have.* His wife (not to encreaſe his perplexity) bid him quiet himſelf, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and withal ſo convinced him of his folly, both paſt and preſent, that he had not a word to ſay in his own defence; he enjoyning us all ſilence, we were diſmiſs'd.

The next night, to ſhow how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lye in his Chamber aforeſaid, ſuppoſedly haunted, and that ſame night with much joy, my Miſtreſs and I renewed our pleaſures.

CHAP. XVIII.

How his Miſtreſs ſupplyed him with money, even to ſuperfluity; what wayes he had to ſpend it. He is tempted to deſtruction by Correctors, (alias) *Clippers, and Coyners* (alias) *Matter-men.*

I Found my Eſtate to encreaſe abundantly, for I was half ſharer my ſelf with my Maſter; my Miſtreſs ſhe put in for one too, which I had likewiſe; ſo that the good man received but the *fourth.* I had been (ſince my return) very ſparing in my expence, having laid up my money ſecurely: But now finding out another *rich Mine,* I thought I ſhould be too rich, unleſs I contrived wayes to *draw out,* as well as *put in.*

In the firſt place, I thought good to buy a brace of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleas'd, though a dozen or ſixteen miles diſtance, and ſo by the quicknefs of return come home undiſcover'd. If occaſion ſhould ſerve, they might very well ſerve for the *High Pad.* Thefe I bought, and where they ſtood, I had four or five ſeveral ſuits, either to Ride withal, (uſing variety that I might paſs *incognito*) or to wear when I did intend to appear ſplendidly to peculiar friends; and then the Prodigal himſelf did not ſpend his money more profuſely than my ſelf.

I judge it unneceſſary to relate how, and in what manner I disburſt great ſums, ſince there are few that are addicted to pleaſure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the ſatisfaction of their deſires, that is, to pleaſe all their ſenſes. My Miſtreſs ſeldome ſaw a piece of Gold in her Husbands hands, or ſome large and great piece of Silver, but ſhe would be begging it of him, for no other intents but to give it me; which ſhe took delight in, withal, knowing that frequent preſents very much ingage the affection.

My Maſter ſeldom denyed her, (for like a Cuckold he doted on his Wife) but if he did, ſhe would take pet, and would not eat, have the forehead bound down with a croſs-cloth, look pitifully, and the like. If he askt her what ſhe ailed, or what ſhe was troubled at, ſhe would ſay, at nothing more than your unkindneſs, and then weep bitterly: for, like a right *Hypocrite*, ſhe had *tears at command.* The *Dotard* would *melt* too, ſometimes the great Calf crying and ſobbing, like a child that hath loſt his Bread and Butter: Then to make his atonement, he muſt procure her two or three pieces, if he hath them not in the houſe; otherwiſe it ſhall coſt him as much more wealth on the Doctor, of whom ſhe would often pretend to take Phyſick, but it ſhould be only rich *Cordials*, *ſtrengthning Jellies*, with ſuch like *Provocations* to *Venery*.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the careful Bee for Winter. We returned great ſums of money every day, which an acquaintance of mine knew very well;

and he being dayly in the company of a fellow, who was both Coyner and Clipper, it ſeems a decayed Goldſmith, undone by the ſtudy of Chymiſtry, but now lived by ſome particular part thereof, as the tranſmutation of Metal, or ſo forth.

This man he inſorms that he knew a young Caſheer, that he thought he could work to their purpoſe, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me: I thought of no other deſign but to be merry. Being met, we drank ſtifly, but ever and anon the ſtranger would beſeech me to favour him with my ſuture acquaintance, that he ſhould think himſelf very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no leſs than promiſe ſo much, and ſo laying aſide ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar diſcourſe. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient: ſeveral times we met, (not without great expence) ſo that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our diſcourſe hapned on a time to be about Chymyſtry, I was forced to be mute, as not underſtanding any thing thereof; yet I could not but admire, to hear my new friend relate what admirable Rarities he could perform in that myſterious Art, and thereupon ſhew'd me a piece of Gold, demanding my opinion what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no leſs, but that it was what it ſeemed to be; he ſmilingly reply'd, No wonder that this ſhould deceive you, ſince it will do the like to the moſt critical Goldſmith about the Town: No doubt, ſaid he, you have heard of the

Philoſophers Stone, and what vaſt Eſtates ſome have miſ-ſpent in the ſearch thereof, how ineffectual the labour of ſuch hath been, the miſerableneſs of their condition makes apparent. Others, and not a few, have pretended they have obtain'd the maſtery thereof, for no other intent then to delude ſome wealthy credulous perſon, making ſome ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at laſt extract him to the very lees of his Eſtate. I ſhall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but what I will perform, which your own eyes ſhall atteſt. Hereupon he ſhew'd me various pieces, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (ſaid he) of my own labour and pains, imployed in an Art I have found out by the curious ſearch and induſtry of my brain, with which I can convert Copper into that Metal which current money is compoſed of, either of which, according to the Tincture I ſhall give it. And to be plainer with you, out of that great love I have born ever ſince I firſt ſaw you, and that my actions ſhall make it apparent, ſee here this piece, according to the term of Art given, it is called a *black Dog*, with *Queen Elizabeths Head* thereon, which is only Pewter double waſhed. This here is a *George plateroon*, being all Copper within, and only a thin Plate about it. Another called *Compoſitum*, which is a mixt Metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not endure the fiery teſt. He gave me the ſight likewiſe of Pieces of *Eight, half pieces* and *quarter pieces*. Then again (ſaid he) our own Coyn we uſually call *Engliſh* Cloth, the other *Spaniſh*; the prices whereof are ſeveral, according to their goodneſs and fineneſs: The beſt you may have for 15 *ſh.* the yard, *i. e.* five ſhillings

in the pound profit; the worfer for eight, ten, or more.

Now to the intent that I may compleat your happineſs here, if enjoyment of Wealth will do it, I would adviſe you to take ſome of every ſort, and ſo mingle it with the reſt of your good caſh, proportionably to the ſum. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aſide for me, which after I have corrected a little, (for *broad brim'd Hats are not now in faſhion*) I will return it, allowing you 18 pence per pound intereſt.

I gave him all this while great attention, without the leaſt interruption; but he here making a ſtop, I thought he expected my replication; which was to this effect, That I thankt him cordially for his reſpects, which I believed were real, having uſed that freedom with me, that I did not in the leaſt queſtion the greatneſs of profit that would redound by the acceptance of his proffer; but it being a matter of the greateſt conſequence, and higheſt concern, I deſired I might have ſome time for conſideration. This anſwer made him look blank, fearing leſt I made a demur only to betray him, ſo that I ſaw by his countenance, he wiſht he had been more ſparing in his expreſſions. I muſt needs confeſs, I trembled all the time I was in his company, wherefore I made all the haſte I could to be gone, giving him to underſtand, that after ſerious conſultation with my ſelf, I would ſend him an anſwer by my friend, and ſo I took my leave of him. The whole night following I ſpent in weighing his Propoſals in the ballance of profit and preſervation: I quickly found that Life's preſervation outweigh'd all

other intereſt, and that honour, riches, and pleaſure would avail little to that man that was riding *Poſt* to the *Gallows*. Beſides, how could I expect to eſcape better than others, who were frequently made wretched ſpectacles of raſh imprudence and folly, who, having forfeited the Kings high and juſt diſpleaſure, did ufually betray their own ſelves to the Severity of the Law in that caſe; which hath as little Commiſeration on ſuch as on the worſt of Offendors? Though I had committed ſeveral things that might come within the verge of an Indictment, yet I always ſhunned ſuch actions as bore the inſcription in their front, *Memento mori*. To be as good as my promiſe, I ſent my Chimiſt theſe conſequent Lines.

SIR,

You ſeemingly do proffer fair, but know,
Hanging attends ſuch kindneſſes you ſhow.
The hope of profit tempts me; loſs of life
O'repow'rs perſwaſions, and ſo ends the ſtrife.
Had I two Lives, my deeds ſhould make it known,
How little I would eare to hazard one;
But having ſolely one, I will not try
Its loſs; as yet I have no mind to dye.
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it;
Death and damnation ſeize us in a minute.
Ceaſe then, and let your fancy's ſuit with mine,
We'l plot no Treaſon, *but to get good* Wine:
That being had, let eaeh man's face *declare*
Th' Indian Mines *not ſo rich as ours are.*
If we want Coyn, the beſt way, I ſuppoſe,
Is to tranſmute the Metal *of my* Noſe.

I never receiv'd any anſwer to what I wrote, neither did I ever ſee my new friend after, which was according to my own deſire, but I heard of his ſad deſtiny, whereof I ſhould have participated, had I liſted my ſelf in that Mettle-ſimulating Regiment. Some found out operating in the obſcureſt thickets of woods; others were detected clipping in dark Concaves on *Black-heath*, and their Ring-leader diſcovered in his own houſe, in a deep Vault befitting his purpoſe; who, though he had timely notice to remove his tools, yet, by his Seizers they were found hid in a Chimney-mantletree, hollowed to that intent, with a ſhutter at the end. After the diſmal cataſtrophe of theſe Hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the leaſt guilty of the accuſation: and thus it was; an indigent Hanger-on, having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of thoſe lately executed, came to me one Evening, and requeſted ſome private diſcourſe: I conſented: being together (laying aſide ſeveral Formalities that uſhered in his diſcourſe) he told me, that I was taken notice of as a notorious diſperſer of Counterfeit money, and that there was a warrant out to apprehend me, and, that out of pure love to a man ſo young and fairly promiſing as my ſelf, he thought himſelf bound in duty to preſerve if he could, by giving timely notice to ſhun that, which, if neglected might prove deſtructive. I immediately ſaw the *Rogue* peep through the Vizard of diſſimulation, and therefore inſtead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both the eyes, to the intent he ſhould

not ſee how I would beat him, which was in ſuch a manner, that he could not ſee himſelf for three days afterward. This fellow I underſtood to be a Dunner for the Priſoners of their confederates abroad; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemn'd.

CHAP. XIX.

He breaketh his Maſter (by the help of his Miſtreſs) and ſo ſets up for himſelf with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprenticeſhip, and credit beſides: what a trick he ſerved his Maſter at laſt: his Maſter and Miſtreſs ſoon after dy'd.

BUt to proceed, now I had ſerved my time, and was accordingly made free; but ſollicited by my Maſter to ſtay ſome longer time as a Journeyman, which I conſented to, knowing it could not be long: for we had ſo purloined from him, that it was impoſſible for him to ſubſiſt any longer. His Creditors viſited him daily, ſo that now his whole time was taken up in ſtudying fair promiſing words to ſatisfie them for the preſent, and tell them when they *ſhould come again.* My Maſter perceiving the danger he was in, would neither ſtir abroad, no, not ſo much as come into the Shop. He now ſtanding upon the brow of a very high Hill, and being forced to deſcend, I reſolved to ſave him the labour, and ſo threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a ſufficient quantity of his Goods, intending them for my own uſe; and ſtowed them in a Warehouſe which I

had lately taken privately for my purpoſe. My Maſter one night told me his intended deſign, that he was reſolv'd to pack up all his Goods, and to gather in what moneys he could, and ſo take his wife with him for *Ireland*. I thought I ſhould have dy'd at firſt when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping ſome tears; which he perceiving, his trickled down his Cheeks to bear mine company. Well now, ſaid he, I ſee thou loveſt me too, as well as thou haſt hitherto proved faithful. But the deareſt friends muſt part (& with that he wept again like a child) however my comfort is, I hope we ſhall ſee each other in Heaven. I thought with my ſelf, I had rather ſee him in the Counter. And from that minute I contriv'd how I might effect it: For at that time I ſhould never have been able to have brookt a ſeparation between my Miſtreſs and ſelf, eſpecially at ſo great diſtance. She and I often conſulted what to do; Sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the *old fool* had, and ſo run away together, with many ſtratagems which we propounded; but were rejected as no ways expedient nor convenient. At laſt I reſolved on this, that ſhe ſhould acquaint her ſelf of the exact time and way he intended to go, and ſo inform me thereof. I receiv'd information in a ſhort time after, that before break of day, at ſuch a time he would take Horſe at *Iſlington*, and ſo for *Wincheſter*. I immediately ſent away word to one of his chiefeſt Creditors, making known to him the ſum and ſubſtance of every thing, and, that if ever he expected to receive what was due to him, he muſt at ſuch a time have Officers ready to way-lay him,

in order to his arreſt, which was punctually done according to what inſtructions I ſent him in a letter, without a name ſubſcribed thereunto. He had not been long in cuſtody, before I was ſent for, to adviſe with him what was beſt to be done in this his great extremity and perplexity. I could do no leſs than ſeemingly condole his misfortunes, and withal ſeemed to be very active as to his aſſiſtance, running up and down to his Creditors to bring them to a compliance; but he had been better to have ſent ſome perſon elſe as ſollicitor in his buſineſſe, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable impriſonment, he got an Horſe (as ſome men term it) *alias* a *Duce facies*, and ſo remov'd himſelf to *Ludgate*, where he had not been long e're he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Miſtreſs had ſecured what he had, which I enjoy'd. I had now an Houſe and Shop of mine own, very well furniſht; but withal I was grown ſo deboiſt and profuſively laviſh, that I ſeldom was at home but at night, and then in bed with my Miſtreſs, who was very importunate with me to marry her: I confeſſe I loved her intirely as my Miſtreſſe, or Whore, but I hated her as my Wife, knowing very well that if ſhe would be an Whore to me, and have an Husband, ſhe would be ſo to another when I was in the formers place. She now found her ſelf with Child; whereupon (taking *upon her my duty)* ſhe daily preſt me to ſave her Credit. But I delay'd, putting her off continually with ſpecious pretences, which her love and facileneſs eaſily ſwallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the

Country with her; and becauſe it was at hand, I ſtay'd to ſee the event: Within a ſhort while ſhe fell in labour (now becauſe we were known for no other than Man and Wife,) when her throws came upon her, ſhe would not let me ſtir out of the room. Her pain growing intollerable, ſhe called me haſtily to her, and getting my hand within hers; Farewel, ſaid ſhe, I dye for thee; thy laſt unkindneſſe in not performing thy promiſe, and not returning love anſwerable to mine, hath untimely yielded my days: with that ſhe groaned, and then uſing her former expreſſions, cryed out, Love my memory however, ſince I die for thee. She uttered not one word afterwards, being as good as her word: The good woman lookt ſtrangely on me, every one paſſing their verdict, and all concluding her none of my Wife. The *firſt Chriſtians* under the great *Perſecution*, ſuffered not in 500 years ſo many ſeveral wayes, as I did in five hours, by the peoples Tongues. I muſt needs ſay, I took it very much to heart, that Report, which made *Richard* the *Second* alive ſo often after he was dead, ſhould kill me as often whilſt alive; deſiring them at laſt to wave their Cenſures (which they expreſt publickly) I intreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to endeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if paſt recovery, to uſe means to preſerve the Child. In a ſhort time they told me that was dead likewiſe. At firſt I ſhowed much griefe, which was unfeigned, being not ſo much afflicted for the loſs of her, as affected with thoſe words ſhe uttered when ſhe breathed her laſt. I was too conſcious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impreſſion in my very Soul.

But all theſe perturbations of mind I diſſipated with a glaſſe or two of Canary, which was the common antidote I us'd againſt care, ſorrow, and vexation, *&c.* I now provided things neceſſary for her Funeral, which were not vulgar; which I might the better do, having made my ſelf her Executor before, taking all ſhe had into my cuſtody. In memorial of her, and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tombſtone.

Women they ſay will lye, *but now I ſee*
'Tis falſe, to th' laſt ſhe ſpake the truth *to me.*
Farewel ſaid ſhe, I thought my grief t'have hid,
I die for love of thee,-----*and ſo ſhe did.*
Here with her lies her Child, that ſtrove in vain
To untomb it ſelf, to be intomb'd again.
But reſt my babe, thy cares with life are gone,
Thou'lt riſe again, *though now a ſetting Sun.*
Though wonders ceaſe, thy Mothers death doth prove
They may revive, for ſhe did die for love.

CHAP. XX.

His credit becomes ſuſpected by his exorbitant manner of living in Drinking, Whoring, Gaming, &c. He thinks to ſawder up that crack by Marriage; he is deceived both in Perſon and Portion.

REturning to my own Habitation, I found that my ſo long abſence had raiſed a jealouſie in my Neighbours breaſts, that I was run away;

which reſted not there, but ſpread like a Canker, ſo that this flying report came to ſome of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys; I wondered whence proceeded their unexpected haſte. Some that would not be put off with promiſes, I was forced to pay; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to proſecute my former courſes. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, ingaged in a quarrel, and ſo involv'd in blood; or elſe at play, if not at a Bawdy houſe, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one *of my own at home.* For I would not entertain a Maid, but what was more than ordinarily handſome, whom I commonly vitiated either by preſents, or promiſes if I got them with child. When I was weary of one, I paid her off, with ſome additions to her wages, and entertain'd another, who would in a ſhort time be wrought upon as well as her predeceſſors, being ambitious to lie with her Maſter, and vainly hoping that to be the firſt ſtep to her preferment, thinking of nothing but preſently marrying, and ſo be Miſtreſs. In three years that I lived as a Maſter I had nine illegitimates, which I knew, four whereof were begotten of my Maids, which put me to a vaſt expence. Two of the Mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed them competent maintenance (for they were ſubtil cunning baggages) had I not by a wile got them aboard a Veſſel bound for *Virginia*, and never heard of them ſince. Beſides two or three terrible Claps, which coſt me a conſiderable ſum in their cure. This diſtemper, as it cauſed a *conſump-*

tion in my Pocket, ſo it impaired my wonted ſtrength, and almoſt ſpoiled my natural Talent.

For now it is much like Paul's Steeple turn'd
A ſtately thing before the top was burn'd.

I now began to be ſenſible of my folly, and ſo reſolved to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my loſt credit by a temperate ſober life; but that I found I had waſted my ſelf extremely, by which means I became leſſe capable of reacting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner ſatiated, I queſtion whether I ſhould have had now ſuch penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and conſtantly; I would not drink with any but at home; my ſudden alteration made people admire, and the ſuddenneſſe of my reformation was the common diſcourſe of all my Neighbours: The Parſon of our Pariſh hearing of my ſtrange alteration, came to me, which I admired at; for before, he that had the leaſt care or reſpect of his Reputation, would avoid all occaſions of being ſeen in my company, leſt they might be ſuſpected extravagant and deboiſt.

Pares cum paribus facilime congregantur.
Birds of a Feather will flock together.

The ſhortneſs of his hair declar'd him a member of the *Circumciſion*, but his *triple cap*, or three *caps* on his head, ſhew'd, though he hated the very name of *Rome* or *Babylon*, yet he lov'd formerly a Whore *in private*, *though common*. His Cloak was fac'd down with *zeal* before, and his Band appear'd but as a *broad hem*, to ſhew that a *hem*, with *two or three formal ſpits*, or a feigned Cough, was the uſual ſupply of his diſcourſe, when he had *thraſht* himſelf in

his *Cloak* out of breath in the *Pulpit.* His looks re-sembled the *bleer-ey'd Printing* at *Geneva* (and his face like that ſort of ragged paper on which they work off their impreſſions. After he had ſet his face into a Platform, he delivered himſelf. I ſhall not relate exactly his own canting words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being ſenſible, *non eſt tutum ludere cum ſacris*, but give you the ſub-ſtance, which was firſt a reproof for my extrava-gancies: ſecondly, ſome general inſtructions, (pickt out of a common-place Book) for my fu-ture practice: and laſtly, ſome encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) toward a good life: on which three points he ran diviſions ſtrangely, till Dinner-time, and then his ſtomach petitioned him to ſhut his mouth, leſt it ſhould be deprived of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this ſeeming ſtrictneſs of life I lived two or three months, and now ſome began to have cha-ritable thoughts of my Soul: & that I might regain my runnings out by future diligence and induſtry.

I had ſeveral Matches offered me, which I ſaw, but liked them not; for I had always been a gene-ral lover, and could not now come to particulars. At laſt it was my misfortune to ſee one, whom I was wiſht to; and which at firſt ſight robbed me at once, both of my ſelf and good company.

Formerly I was pleaſing and affable, deſirous and deſired of good ſociety, but never lived till now an *Anchorite* on earth. Neither did I ever till now tie up mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at laſt I fell from my primitive liberty, loſing it totally, by dotage on a Creature, and that a Woman

too: a juſt judgement on me for my manifold ſins, to throw this thing in my way for me to ſtumble at. And it will appear in its due place that ſhe was a *bow'd token* of my *Maker's* diſpleaſure ſent me, for ſhe was Crooked.

CHAP. XXI.

How he was married, and what kind of thing his Wife.

I Made ſtrict enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a ſhort time we had conference together about the Portion, and my Eſtate, and therein we were all ſatisfied. My Courtſhip was very Noble, yet not Prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were married. By her looks I thought her ſo modeſt, that an unchaſte thought durſt not enter into her head, ſince all immodeſt expreſſions ſhe baniſhed from her ears.

The firſt night I thought to have had the firſt *taſte*, but my experience told me the *Tarriers* had been there before. This ſtruck me into an amazement, that there ſhould appear ſuch Virgin-whiteneſs, and the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime ſo notorious. Much perplext I was, but durſt not vent my ſelf, what was more than bare ſuſpition. In one half years time what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make

me believe this was ufual; and that Children brought forth at ſix months might live.

Now began our domeſtick Civil Wars, which was carried on with ſuch fury between us, that there was hardly an Utenſil in the Kitchin that could reſt in quiet from flying about our ears continually. My Wife acted the *Silent Woman* to the life, whileſt in a ſingle ſtate; for before we were married all her anſwers were very ſhort, comprehended within the two Monoſyllables of *I*, and *No*; and thoſe two muſt be forcibly extracted from her. But now her tongue wagg'd in a perpetual motion, and her voice ſo ſhrill and loud, that it would be heard diſtinctly, though a piece of Ordnance were diſcharged near her at the ſame time, or ſtanding at the Bell-room-door whileſt the Bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaints to her Father and Mother, which alienated their affection from me, ſo that their only ſtudy was how to be rid of me. Her forgeries (to excuſe her own *Devilry*) had ſo inſtigated them, that they ſought my ruine by all wayes imaginable. Beſides they laid an *Imbargo* on the reſt of my Wives portion unpaid; adviſing her withal to ſecure what ſhe could, for her own ſelf-preſervation. She followed their inſtructions ſo exactly, that in a ſhort time I found my ſelf in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cauſe, till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, ſome whereof went to ſupply the neceſſities of her Stallion.

I was all along jealous of this, though I could not conclude her altogether ſo culpable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the ſharpeſt paſ-

ſions, could not turn this diſtemper into a diſeaſe (although they lookt through falſe Opticks, making things appear like evening ſhadows, diſproportionable to the truth, and ſtrangely longer than the true ſubſtance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witneſſes of my eyes) had baniſht bare ſuſpition.

Which was thus, One night I cauſed my ſelf to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk; my Wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much ſatisfaction, and was immediately carried up to bed; with much difficulty they undreſt me, pretending my ſelf aſleep all this while, and ſo they left me. It ſeems by the ſtory that my Wife preſently ſent away the Maid (which was her Pimp) to her friend to come at ſuch an hour. About nine of the clock the Maid was poſted to bed; and about ten I heard one ſmall knock at the door: he needed not to knock there any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they were incircled in each others arms, (which I underſtood by hearkning at the bottom of the ſtairs, and thereby knew whereabout they were) I ran in upon them with my Sword (which I had prepared ready) & thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a paſſage for their Souls eſcape, I paſt my Sword through the fleſhy part of both their thighs. At which they made a moſt hideous outcry, ſo that the Maid came running down: and a Watchman that ſtood juſt at my door hearing the noiſe, knockt at the door, to know what was the matter; the Maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his Candle, never ſaw ſo ſtrange a ſight; for I had ſo pin'd

them together, that they could not ſtir. As well as they could ſpeak, they both begg'd their pardon for their lives only, which I granted, as looking on my revenge ſomewhat ſatisfied.

My Gentleman I diſmiſt, but as for his Miſtreſs I was forced to ſend for a Chyrurgeon, whoſe wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done; wherefore in the morning early I acquainted her Parents with what had happen'd laſt night, inſiſting further, that ſince ſhe had inſtead of putting off handſomly the Chain of Matrimony, rudely broke it, it ſhould be her own damage; neither would I be at the coſt of a viſitation to repair the breach. To which I added, that had I deny'd her things requiſite and neceſſary, or not performed duly my duty, ſhe might have had ſome pretence for her ſlighting me, and look upon me only as a falſe Crow ſet up in a Garden, to keep others from the fruit it cannot taſte it ſelf. But ſince it was otherwiſe, and that ſhe had nothing to object againſt me, but onely ſometimes curbing her inordinate deſires; I wiſht them to ſave me the labour of having the Law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elſewhere.

They reply'd but little, haſtning to their daughter; and fearing worſe miſchief might enſue, they inſtantly conveyed her into the Country. She had not remained there long, before ſhe was cured, and not enduring to be confined to ſolitarineſs, repaired again to the City, where now ſhe lives, as ſuch do that keep Civet-Cats; but I hear ſhe is very reſerved to all but ſuch ſhe knows ſhe may intruſt her ſelf with. But let her go with theſe Lines pin'd to her back.

There never yet was woman made,
Nor ſhall, but to be curſt;
And oh! that I (fond I) ſhould firſt
Of any Lover
This Truth at my own charge to other Fools diſcover.

Ye that have promis'd to your ſelves
Propriety in Love;
Know womens hearts like ſtraws do move,
And what we call
Their Sympathy, is but love to jet in general.

All Mankind are alike to them;
And though we Iron find
That never with the Loadſtone joyn'd,
'Tis not the Irons fault,
It is becauſe the Loadſtone yet was never brought.

If where a gentle Bee hath fallen
And laboured to his power,
A new ſucceeds not to that flower,
But paſſeth by (thigh.
'Tis to be thought the Gallant elſewhere loads his

For ſtill the flowers ready ſtand;
One buzzes round about,
One lights, one taſts, gets in, gets out.
All always uſe them, (them.
Till all their ſweets are gone, and all again refuſe

However, I muſt confeſs my own faults, as well as condemn others; which was, I was too inquiſitive after that, which the more I knew, would the more diſturb me. Of all things the leſs we know, the better. Curioſity in this renders a man as ridiculous a Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sir *John*

Suckling mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry, whether he was made ſo in a bed, or on a Couch, and whether his duty-officiating Cavalier pulled off his Spurs firſt or not, *&c.*

Well, it was my hard fate to Marry thus like one doom'd to priſon, who expecting to lie in a private room, is confined to the Hole. Had I married the beſt, I believe I ſhould have found my ſelf in the Stocks. 'Tis ſtrange that I of all men ſhould be deceiv'd by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not ſuitable to the inſcription. Had not my paſſion hung in my eyes, when I lookt into her diſpoſition and carriage, I might have eaſily underſtood that her behavior in the preſence of me was only like action on a publick Stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of ſilence and ſeeming modeſty. And indeed my pallate was bed-ridden, and ſo ſcarce ſenſible of ſauce, much leſs of meat. But ſince I have had ſuch ill-luck in marriage, which ſome vainly and falſly account a merry-age, I ſhall in the enſuing Diſcourſe give you ſome inſtruction or advice as Land-marks. For having ſplit upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pylot to another that would ſail this way.

CHAP. XXII.

Some Obſervations concerning Love and Women; ſelected out of the choiceſt Commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections.

LOve 'tis confeſt is a Natural diſtemper, a kind of ſmall Pox; moſt have either had it, or is to

expect it, and the ſooner the better. Surely I was never well cur'd on't, or elſe I had not thus fallen in a Relaps. Want of knowledge miſguided me at firſt, and ſo I fell into a *Quagmire;* but I knew not what poſſeſt me to ride afterward into another on purpoſe. Love-ſeeds when it grows up to Matrimony is good for nothing, like ſome Fruit-trees which muſt be tranſplanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when Love in this nature doth feed, the encreaſe thereof is diſſatisfaction, ſorrow and vexation multiplied. This afore-mentioned is not truly love but luſt; for I cannot believe that that noble paſſion can be the ruine of its ſubject; neither would I have it diſparaged by ſo unworthy an object as a woman. If there be Love, it ſhould be to Heaven, a male-friend, relations, or our Countries preſervation, and not to a Female-piece of imperfection. And yet nothing will ſerve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, becauſe we would make it ſurely our own, and neverthelefs our own till then. For if ſhe be young, ſhe is like an Hawk upon her wing; and if ſhe be handſome, ſhe is the more ſubject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but ſeldom ſpring right game, ſhould ſtill have ſomething to take them down. The lure to which all ſtoop in this World, is either garniſht with profit or pleaſure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you muſt be content to ſhew out the other. Conſider again that woman (beſides the trouble) is a Rent-charge which though the curioſity of man hath often incloſed, yet he cannot for his life ſtop ſo well one gap, but it will lie open for any ſtragler; by which means it ſeldom improves or becomes fruitful. And why ſhould a woman be denyed the liberty

of breaking a pane in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regreſs to her own falliport, letting in whom ſhe eſteems as friends? If you will not give them the permiſſion, you muſt be forc'd to wink when they take it, or do worſe: croſſe them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a croſſe in your Pocket. Take it which way you will, Marriage is the deareſt way of curing love. Faring with ſuch, as it doth with thoſe for the moſt part that at great charges walls in grounds and plant, who cheaper might have eaten Mellons elſewhere, than Cucumbers in their own Garden. Beſides, it is a groſs piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cauſe of love may periſh for a month, and then the effect will follow. If it be natures paint in the face, that doth induce you; thoſe beautiful flowers of red and white, a diſeaſe will quickly wither; if not, raviſhing time will deflowre the choiceſt beauty.

But the ill conſequents of Marriage are more to be conſidered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex; *Eve* by ſtumbling at the Serpents Sollicitations caſt her Husband out of Paradice; nor are her Daughters furer of foot, being foundred by the heat of luſt and pride. It were ſomthing if Marriage could anſwer the expectation of all ſhe boaſts the cure of; for inſtead of quenching the hot coals of concupiſcence, it aggravates the ſimple ſin of Fornication, making it ſprout into Adultery. What might be ſaid more as to this ſubject, I ſhall refer the Reader to the Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr. *Francis Osborne*. If any more (like boys ſtript and ſtand ſhivering about the brink) are ready to leap into Loves Whirl-pit, and ſo endanger the loſs of

themſelves, let them firſt look upon love to be an idle fancy, and Wedlock of a dangerous conſequence. If I could perſwade you from loving, one would think the other then would be difregarded, but ſome to their coſts can ſpeak the contrary. In the firſt place, marry none but whom you love: for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular perſon, ſome are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy: For abſence doth in a kind remove the cauſe, removing the object. Others think that frequent viſits (where as the rarity of them indears the affection) may by a ſurprizal diſcover ſome defects, which though they cure not abſolutely, yet they qualifie the vehement heat of an amorous Feavor: and as near as can be, let it be unfeaſonably, either when ſhe is in ſickneſſe or diſorder, by that a man may know ſhe is but mortal, and but a woman; the laſt would be enough to a wife man for an Antidote. Enter into diſcourſe with her of things ſhe daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiſs to contrive your ſelf into the company of variety, eſpecially ſuch beauties which are generally cry'd up; and if you can, taſte them all, (but now I think on't, it is no matter, one is ſufficient for a furfeit) for this Malady is better remedy'd this way, than by abſtinence: good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But, I like not the prefcription of Marriage, ſince it is the laſt and moſt dangerous receipt; like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the ſoals of the feet, which remedy to ſay truth, is worſe than the diſeaſe: Were it poſſible for a Woman to be

conſtant to one, ſomething might be ſaid, but I never yet tryed any which did not very much ſhew their diſpleaſures when offered ſome kindneſs, but never found any to refuſe them, if opportunity & privacy of place admitted their reception; which hath made me often in my own thoughts queſtion my mothers honeſty and fidelity to my Father.

What I now utter, is not derived from prejudice to that Sex, grounded on my own Wifes diſloyalty; but experience tells me this, which moſt paſt ſixteen very well underſtand, that there are few Women, let them pretend what they pleaſe, but will yield to the temptations of the fleſh, and ſo much the ſooner, by how much ſhe profeſſeth ſome new light, which is *Ignis fatuus* that leads them into the *Quagmires* of all ſorts of erronious Tenents. With this dark Lanthorn-Light they dazle the eyes of ſuch as would pry into their actions, whiles behind in the dark they ſenſually ſatisfie themſelves undiſcovered.

Experience dictates what I here expreſs; for I have had converſe with ſeveral of theſe Religious pretenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh againſt Adultery with their tongues, whilſt their Bloods willingly conſented to the commiſſion of that ſin, and then immediately after ſeem extremely penſive, uſing theſe and ſuch like formal expreſſions: *Fie, fie, I wonder how you durſt ſin thus, even before the face of your Creator. Do you think he ſaw you not? yea verily, and you ſhall anſwer for what you have now done;* whereas it could never have been done without a mutual conſent.

They will make it their daily diſcourſe, ſpeak-

ing againſt ſuch whoſe natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful ſatisfaction of their luſt, and yet they themſelves are at the ſame time ſtudying how they may ſecretly and ſecurely accompliſh the ſame thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very extract of inconſtancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think ſhe can abſolutely love one man. Such who are found conſtant to their Huſbands, preferring their welfare before the indulging of their own by-reſpects, ought to be lookt on no leſs then Miracles of their Sex, by ſuch who are acquainted generally with Female diſpoſitions and actions.

CHAP. XXIII.

He Cheats his Creditors by knaviſh breaking, and runs away from Ireland. *He is Shipwrackt on the Iſle of* Man.

WHilſt my credit was good, I thought good to make uſe of it, leſt that failing, I ſhould want an opportunity to march off with flying Colours. To raiſe my repute amongſt my Neighbours (whom I knew would ſpread abroad what they had ſeen) I caus'd a Porter (whom I could intruſt) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while after to come with a truſty friend of mine with that, and five or ſix hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, I preſently tumbled the

Money out of the bag (which had really mony in it) on the Counter, purpoſely making a great noiſe: having told it over (my friend ſtanding by the while) I put it up ; and pretending to lay that aſide and take another, I took up the ſame again, ſo doing till I had told it over five or ſix times ; then writing in publike view a Receipt, with much civility and reſpect I diſmiſt my Gentleman. And this did I thrice in a months time ; ſo that by this means without ſuſpition I conveyed away a great quantity of my Goods, which people thought I had ſold, & therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report hereby rendred me a man of vaſt dealing, ſo that now I had goods dayly offer'd me, ſome whereof I received, promiſing to them payment at three moneths, others at ſix ; whereas I intended they ſhould ſtay till her had her twelve Apoſtles for her Jury. What Wares or Moneys I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To ſome of the more wary ſort I conſeſt a Judgment for their ſecurity. I needed not to have ſpoken in the Singular number, for I deluded four with my Judgments. What commodities I had, I converted into money by a bill of Sale, and ſo went away, leaving my Creditors to ſue out a Statute of *Bankrupt* if they ſo pleaſed ; which I valued not, if once out of their reach. To my chiefeſt Creditor I ſent theſe lines, to the intent he ſhould not tax me with incivility for going away and not ſending him word.

Credit doth ſtrengthen ſuch whoſe Trades are weak,
But too much Credit, Sir, did make me break.
Credit to ſinking Trades-men is a prop,

But had you kept your Wares, I'de kept my Shop.
Pray do not blame me, Sir, becauſe I ſhow
A way to pay thoſe many debts you owe:
Which you may do, if you'l adviſed be,
Which is in ſhort, prepare to follow me.
Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I ſay,
I went before, but to ſhew you the way:
But you will not, don't lament your loſs,
For in your Money I do bear the croſs.
Grief will diſtract you, and deſtroy your wit;
Good Sir, preſerve it, for y' ave paid for it.

I rid poſt for *Holy-head* night and day, ſo that I arrived there in a very ſhort time: going to diſmount, I tumbled off, neither could I riſe again; continual and unaccuſtomed riding had almoſt diſlocated every bone in my body, notwithſtanding it was ſwathed for that purpoſe. The next day I made a ſhift to walk abroad to view the Rarities of the Town, but found nothing rare but handſome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In two days time we ſet Sail: we had not ran above three Leagues before the Sky darkned; the Wind blew hard at a South-Eaſt, and the Waves roſe mountain-high: In an hours time we were forced to cut our Maſts by the board, and lightning the Ship as much as we could, let her drive. Every man fell to his Prayers, expecting every moment when they ſhould be ſwallowed up by the Sea. As for my part, I now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my Rogueries; I lookt on my ſelf as *Jonas*, & was much troubled that others ſhould ſuffer for my iniquities. About three a Clock in the morning we heard a hideous noiſe occaſioned by the

beating of the Sea againſt the Rocks, which was ecchoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the Seamen, who now knew there was no hope for us. Now could I pray heartily, that had never pray'd in my life before: but my Devotion was ſoon ſpoiled, for the Ship ſtruck in between two Rocks. I lookt out, and methought the daſhing of the waves lookt perfectly like flaſhes of Fire. Here ſhe ſtuck a little while, which gave five of us opportunity to leap out upon a Rock: we were no ſooner there, before a wave fetcht her off, but brought her on again, and ſplit her all to pieces. We five in the mean time riding aſtride on a Rock behind one another, like ſo many Criminals on a *Woodden-horſe*. Sometimes a wave would ſtrike clear over us, which indangered our waſhing off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preſervation to be impoſſible; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At laſt the hindmoſt could hold no longer, but crying, *Lord have mercy on my Soul*, committed himſelf to the mercileſs Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and waſht of the next; now did I expect that every wave would prove my Executioner. But it was not decreed (I ſuppoſe) that I ſhould be drown'd. Day broke, ſo that we could diſcern we were not a Coits caſt from Shore, and that the Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to Shore, for go we could not, our joynts were ſo benumb'd by the cold. We got up the Beach, and could diſcern a little way diſtant a ſmall Cottage; thither were repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertained, pittyed, and informed where we were. We ſtay'd about a week in this Iſle of *Mau*, without one farthing

expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil, and courteous, and eſpecially to Strangers. From thence we imbarkt for *Dublin.*

CHAP. XXIV.

His Arrival into Ireland: *he changeth his Name: what trick he ſerv'd his firſt Landlady; all his Money being ſpent, and thoſe Goods and Coyn likewiſe Shipwrackt which he expected to follow him.*

WE landed at a place called *Ringſend* about a mile from *Dublin.* I was askt whether I would have a Coach. Where are there any, ſaid I? (for I lookt about me, and could ſee nothing like a Coach) the fellow looktupon me to be a very ignorant perſon, becauſe I underſtood not what he meant, and angerly ſpake thus: *By my Goſſips hand, thou canſt not ſee very much well, arre look here is one by thine own ſide.* It was a great while before I could tell what language he ſpoke, he did ſo tone his words; neither could I underſtand him, till one ſtanding by interpreted him. As for his *Ringſend*-Coach, as he call'd it, it was Wheel-barrow faſhion, only it had two Wheels not much bigger then a large *Cheſhire* Cheeſe: the Horſe that drew this Princely-pygmy-Chariot, I at firſt miſtook for an over-grown Maſty; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his ſhape) of a *Scotch-Hobby*; well, up I mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither coacht nor carted, but I fancyed my ſelf (and that juſtly) as I was riding, to be ſome

notorious Maleſactor drawn on a Sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally I found *Dublin* to be: many of its Inhabitants call this City *Divlin, quaſi Divels Inn*, & very properly it is by them ſo termed; for there is hardly a City in the world that entertains ſuch variety of Devils Imps as that doth. If any knaviſhly break, murder, rob, or are deſirous of Polygamy, they ſtraightway repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general, their Azylum, or Sanctuary. My firſt care was to plant my ſelf conveniently; the next day I ſent for a Barber to ſhave all my hair off, ordering him to bring me a Periwigg of an abſolute contrary colour to my own hair, to the intent that if I ſhould meet with any of my former acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I ſhould prevent their ſending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this diſguize I hardly knew my ſelf. The greateſt difficulty I found, was to make my ſelf familiar with my fictitious name. At firſt when my Landlady called me by that name, I either ſtar'd her in the face, or lookt behind me, (not anſwering thereunto) thinking ſhe had ſpoke to ſome man elſe: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and ſo that way apologizing for my ſilence, my deſign might have been marr'd. I daily met with ſeveral I knew, but would not take the leaſt cognizance of them.

In this manner I ſpent a moneth, but all this while no tidings of my Goods and money; that which I had brought with me was all conſumed. My Landlady (as it is cuſtomary there, having as little truſt or faith as they have Religion) called upon me for what I owed her. For a little while, I ſtop her mouth, by telling her I had a conſiderable

quantity of Goods and Money too coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after I heard the Ship in which they were was caſt away. Now did I abſolutely conclude Gods juſt judgement attended my fraud and knavery. My loſs I did not in the leaſt diſcover to any, knowing I ſhould reap at firſt only ſome pitty, and afterwards be undervalued and diſreſpected. My Hoſteſs again was very importunate with me to have her Reckoning: I endeavoured to put her off, ſaying, I expected daily Bills of Exchange; but ſhe would not believe me; for I perceived that ſhe had been often cheated with ſuch deluſions.

Now did I not know what to do: I thought good to try another way; ſhe being a Widdow, I fancyed I could work upon her Female frailty: I uſed all means poſſible to get her alone; which I did but ſeldom, and then did I make uſe of all my Rhetorick to perſwade her into a belief how dearly I loved her: ſhe replyed little, but would laugh at me till ſhe held her ſides again. I verily believe ſhe underſtood my drift, which I might argue from her expreſſions. Sometimes ſhe would ſay, Come, come, away with theſe love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would I tell her, all I enjoyed, & my ſelf too, were properly hers, and that ſhe might take them when ſhe pleaſed into her poſſeſſion. No, no, ſhe would ſay, my youthfull days are paſt, and it is time for me to look Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your ſuit, *&c.*

Since words would no ways prevail, I reſolved to try ſomething elſe, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuſe a Venereal proffer. To thatpurpoſe one night I came ſoftly into her Chamber, and groping with my hand for

her face, I caught a man by the Beard: at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his Waſh-balls, would have cryed out aloud, but that fear had ſo lockt up his voice, that his higheſt note was little louder then whiſpering; I could but juſt hear him ſay, *In the name of——— what art?* I am, ſaid I, (and then ſhe wak'd too) no Ghoſt, but a living witneſs of your leachery; to that intent I came hither, to be fully ſatisfied of what I have a long time ſuſpected. As for you Madam, *your youthful days are paſt*, but your luſt will endure for ever. If this be your way to Heaven, why were you ſo uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are traveling that way too; for if I miſtake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be ſhort, they both intreated me to be ſilent, and retire to my own lodging, & that in the morning they would treat with me to my full ſatisfaction. This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwiſe then intended. Early they both came to me: the pious Gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me my Debt, if I would not blemiſh her reputation by my report; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain: having gotten a diſcharge under her hand, I ſealed our contract with an Oath and faithful promiſe never to divulge their ſhame. The Gentleman (though his eſtate much exceeded hers) out of ſpight, I think, or vexation to be ſo caught, *incontinently* married her, though all former ſollicitations (which I underſtood were many) proved ineffectual.

CHAP. XXV.

He is driven to extreme neceſſity ; he deſcribes what it is to be indigent, by what he ſuffered in that condition.

THis ten pound I received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its *Exit* almoſt aſſoon as its entrance into my Pocket: by that ſum I thought to have purchaſed Mountains in *Ireland* (and indeed there is too great plenty of them there,) by gaming; but experience told me afterwards that my deſign was hazardous, and ſo it proved, for I met with a perſon that *bubbled* me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and ingaged beſides for my proportion of the Reckoning. My Gameſter dealt too hardly with me ; yet it was but juſt, for I intended to ſhow him as little favour, if compell'd to lye at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various Utenſils about me to that purpoſe, but I was overmacht.

I thought my ſelf ſecure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd ſome Cits to leave their ſhop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too ;
I only ſtudyed how I might undo.
But now I'm met with, 'tis but juſt I ſee,
That he which others cheats, ſhould cheated be.

I returned to my Lodging, (which was none of the beſt) with what anxiety and perturbation of

mind, I ſhall give any looſer leave to imagine, whilſt the remembrance thereof enforceth me to ſpeak; and I hope the Reader will give me that liberty, ſince the Proverb intaileth on the looſer that priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who ſeem'd very much to condole me for the preſent, but it was afterwards the occaſion of his not crediting me. From hence, I will adviſe all to ſpeak as little as they can of ills that betide them; but we cannot diſcourſe too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my ſpirit was too high to be any longer beholding to him but for my Lodging; wherefore I ſeldom came home till night. Neither would I make known my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I ſhould meet with ſome in the ſtreet, who would ask me to drink with them; my uſual anſwer was, I came from it but even now: inſiſting farther, that ſuch a Gentleman, with two or three more beſides my ſelf, had drank ſo much, and that I admired at my ſelf for being ſo ſober; whereas to deal ingenuouſly, I had not drank one drop that day. Another ſeeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord ——Gentleman over-perſuaded me to dine with him, and that we had ſuch variety, that I doubted my ſtomack had received ſome detriment thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuſe; whereas a dry cruſt taken out of my *Leather Cupboard*, was all the varieties the *Gentleman-Vſher* of my ſtomack, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit it to the engine of my Chops, unleſs there was none

near me within a furlong ; for had there been any near me, they would have ſworn I was eating Walnuts ſhells and all. Now did I learn to drink Water, which neceſſity made me to commend as the moſt ſoveraign liquor, and moſt ſuitable to the body of man ; otherwiſe *Adam* in Paradiſe would not have been without a cup of Ale.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to St. *Patrick*, or St. *James*, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saintſhips. Thither did I repair conſtantly twice or thrice a day : after I had offered up the fumes of ſmoke (moſt commonly of none of the beſt Tobacco) I kneeled, not uſing the common way of drinking out of the chained iron diſh, but with greater adoration ſuckt it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to *Kilmanum* (about a mile from *Dublin*) or ſome other place to prepare my ſtomack, I return'd to *Chriſt-Church*, frequently dining there with Sir *Richard Strang-bow*. Reflecting on his Cheer, and the Liquor of thoſe two Saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

Sir Richard Strang-bow *keeps an houſewhere Wine*
And Bread ſome ſup on, but few ſeldom dine.
Ask yet an hungry Rambler, and he'll ſay,
(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)
He plentifully din'd with him, ſo let him ſtill
Till he hath found his empty belly fill,
Where I ne're could, which made me hate in fine
Sir Richard Strang-bows *Feaſts, St.* Patrick's *Wine.*

I faſted ſo long, I had now almoſt forgot how

to eat: for if caſually I came where meat was, I often made a proffer to convey ſomething to my mouth, but my lips underſtood not my meaning; for having been ſo long unaccuſtomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their *gaping* office. It was impoſſible at this time for the greateſt fright to have made me foul my breeches, becauſe I ſeldom uſed any thing that might cauſe excrements. And therefore I wondred to hear any enquire for an houſe of Office, ſince I had now left off going to ſtool. Once in five days I thought I ſtood in need of evacuating; but I was miſtaken, for by diſcharging a blaſt of wind (whoſe fury ſcattered ſmall ſtones underneath me) I found it only a fit of the Cholick. I ſhall deal plainly, ſhoud I have found a propenſity, I would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, ſince ſo little paſt into my belly. Some *Moveables* I had left, which I was forced to diſpoſe of, to keep the paſſage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble againſt my ſtomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. I thought it good policy not to buy any Belly-timber of a quick concoction, becauſe it ſhould ſtay the longer within me. To this purpoſe I lookt on old Cheeſe to be food convenient; knowing that though it will diſgeſt any thing elſe, yet it cannot diſgeſt it ſelf; and as it clofeth up the mouth of the ſtomack, ſo by its reſpective quality it locks up faſt the Poſtſtern of the Micro-coſm. Fleſh again (if I got any) I would ſwallow by whole-ſale, fearing leſt by chewing it, my ſtomach would too ſuddenly give it a paſſport to my *Hypo-gaſtrium*; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay reſtleſs in the craving more. I ſeldom ſlept for the

gnawing of my ſtomack, and the anguiſh of my guts, and for want of thoſe fumes which proceeding from Meat aſcended into the head, and ſo the cauſers of ſleep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciouſly as an hunger-ſtarved hound on a ſhoulder of Mutton. I was driven to that paſs, I could not juſtly tell whether I was alive or not. Sometimes I was of the opinion that I dyed in our Ship-wrack on the Iſle of *Man*, and that I was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival in this place, the Itch and *Bunniah*, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical diſtempers of *Ireland*) gave me their welcome into their Country, attended by a great number of ſix-footed Gent. clad in a gray livery, with one ſingle liſt down the back; who all promiſed to ſtick to me & be my boſome-friends, neither would they forſake me as long as life laſted. But they like the reſt of the beſt and faireſt promiſing friends left me, when fortune committed me priſoner to the mercileſs cruel hands of that accurſed Goaler, Poverty. I was grown ſo lean, that the Mungril *Scotch* & *Iriſh* Gentleman the Itch, finding not fleſh enough to feed on, gave me the *French* Complement, *Adieu pouvre Gentilhome.* The Flux ſtaid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no ſubſtance from my Guts, took his leave alſo, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whoſe teeth were incapable of faſtning thereon, reſolv'd to follow after; ſome making more than ordinary haſte, broke their necks off the Cape of my Cloak, miſſing their footing,

the threads thereof being ſpun out as time as fine as thoſe of *Arachnes* working.

To conclude, I was a mere walking *Skeleton*, my skin only ſerv'd as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philoſophical Axiome, proving a *Vacuum*.

One time paſſing by the Caſtle-gate, a Souldier fir'd his Muſquet, and I proteſt methought my belly ſounded like a Drum at the report. Should I relate every particular wherein the malevolencie of Fortune afflicted me, I ſhould much tire the Reader, as well as perplex my ſelf with remembrance; wherefore I ſhall deſiſt, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableneſs of his condition, who hath neither Monies, Friends, nor Credit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the people nor their Language.

CHAP. XXVI.

He falling accidentally into a ſtrange houſe, endeavours to build a Sconce, but is fruſtrated of his intent. The old Hoſteſs pities him at firſt, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar Diet; further inſiſting on the miſery he then endured.

I Was by this time grown ſo feeble by faſting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either Cheefe or hard Eggs, (there being great plenty) that I could hardly go; and ſo light I was by continual ſmoking, that I queſtioned often whether I was not a meer fume my ſelf; fearing ſtill when I walkt abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune ſo favour'd me one day, that I found a Groat, which put me into a extaſie of joy. I know not what Magical power there was in that vaſt ſum of *four pence*, for in an inſtant, not knowing by what means, I found myſelf in a Victualling-houſe, ſo ſpeedy was my conveyance, as if I had been riding ſome *Dæmon* through the air. I call'd for ſome meat, but my voice ſounded ſo hollow, as if I had ſpoken in a vault. Some ſaid, it was the *Eccho* of ſome perſon ſpeaking in the next houſe: others of the wiſer ſort believed me to be ſome *Spectrum*, or Apparition; and that the Devil

had aſſum'd a body ſpeaking in that *mortuum cadaver*. The truth of it is, 'twas ſomething hard to determine, whether I ſpake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a Phyſician in the houſe at that time, who looking on me narrowly, openly proclaim'd that I was the workmanſhip of ſome Mortal, who having firſt gotten the Skeleton, or bones of a Man, had artificially skin'd them over, and that German Clockwork caus'd my motion. I would have laught heartily at their ridiculous apprehenſions, but that I had forgot how. I had ſome Gall left in me ſtill, which made me ſtart up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonſtrate to them how groſly they were miſtaken, but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom ſhame retain'd, othewiſe by a fit of an Ague (which juſt then poſſeſt him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. *Speak* (ſaid he tremblingly) *what art?* I was ſomewhat puzled at his queſtion, for I knew not well what I was: I am a living man, ſaid I. *Why then thou wouldſt have fleſh*, ſaid he. After ſeveral diſcourſes to this purpoſe, I at length made him partly believe that I was no ſuch thing he imagined, and yet he would be asking me ſtill a many impertinent queſtions, as whether I could ſee; and his reaſon was, becauſe he could diſcern no eyes. Whether I was born without eyes, or loſt them ſince accidentally, &c. I was forced to tell him at laſt that it was the Country diſeaſe that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me ſay ſo, he pitied me much, and told me he would fetch inſtantly ſomething that ſhould do me much good. I thankt him, and away went Mr. Doctor.

The good Woman over-hearing our difcourfe drew neer then confidently, and demanded what I would have? I told her, any thing which was eatable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me fome hot Meat, and fetting it before me, went for fome drink, but before ſhe could return I had fwallowed it all: ſhe fetcht me more, which went the ſame way with as much celerity. But like Quick-ſilver it wrought quite through me, not ſtaying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus: About to pay my Reckoning, my Groat got into a piece of paper; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wits ends. At laſt drawing out fome papers, and ſhaking them my Groat dropt; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I catcht after it; notwithſtanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole; what with haſt to recover it, and the fright the danger put me into, I diſcharged my ſelf of every bit I had eaten. There was no body could ſay, I had fouled my Breeches, or that I ſtunk; which I made appear to my Landlady by ſhowing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman perſwaded me ſtrongly to eat it again; for, ſaid ſhe, it cannot be much the worſe for juſt paſſing through you, and I will fry it if you pleaſe. I thought I ſhould now have dyed with laughter at her ſtrange propoſition; but the woman ſtar'd upon me, not knowing whether I grin'd or laught. Well, well, ſaid ſhe at laſt, if you will not eat ſuch good victuals, ſome body elſe ſhall. I offer'd her my Groat, which ſhe

refus'd, telling me there was as much more to pay; I told her that was all the moneys I had about me, and that I would pay her the reſt the next day.

But ſhe for her part thought it was unjuſt,
To liſten to the arguments of truſt.

And therefore told me plainly ſhe would have her Reckoning. I bid her ſtay a while: then as ſoon as ſhe had turned her back I attempted to march off, but my ſtrength failing me, I wanted ſwiftneſs, and ſo was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition how miſerable it was; I needed not many arguments to perſuade any into that belief, for my perſon was the true Embleme of miſery. She gave a ſerious attention to what I expreſt, and at laſt melted into tears, commiſerating my misfortunes; ſhe caus'd inſtantly a bed to be warm'd, where being laid, ſhe ordered a Cawdle to be made, & in fine ſhew'd a world of kindneſs to me, not imagining what ſhe aimed at. She would not let me ſtir out of my Bed but whilſt it was making, for above a week; at the concluſion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, & grew indifferent ſtrong; ſhe gave me moneys in my Pocket, & told me I muſt walk into the fields with her. I bleſt my ſelf, and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding that loſt groat which was the occaſion of my reſtitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected: wherefore, in the firſt place I acknowledged how much I was obliged to her matchleſs civilities, and that it was impoſ-

ſible for me to return her anſwerable ſatisfaction. Rowling her pretty Piggs-eyes to and ſro in her head, I require (ſaid ſhe) nothing but your Love. If it muſt needs be ſo (thought I) there is no way better then to let fancy form her beautiful, and ſo by the force of imagination I ſhall injoy as much pleaſure as if lying with *Venus*, though in Conjunction with this *Succubus*. We us'd not many ceremonies, (like puling-whining Lovers that are always ſaying Grace, but never fall to) but taking the convenience of a Ditch underneath a buſhy-topt hedge we conferred notes. Had any ſeen us in this poſture, they would have concluded old Winter metamorphoſed into an old Woman lying in a Dike, and that *Flora* was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction. Or that youthful *Phœbus* had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with ſhame was forced to deſiſt, finding his powerful endeavours ineffectual in the production of a thaw. Whenever I wanted a ſmall ſum, a kiſs or two, or the ſaying I loved her, extracted ſo much as ſupplied my preſent occaſions; if I wanted a ſum conſiderable, why then a quarter of an hours diſcourſe in private effected my deſires. Moſt that knew me wondred what politick ſtratagems I us'd that I ſo ſuddenly wound my ſelf out of that Labyrinth of all ſorts of miſeries, & that I appeared both in feature and garb ſo excentrick to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind the world as there were various ſuſpitions of pragmatick perſons. In ſhort, I was now very well apparell'd, well furniſht with moneys, I kept my Horſe, nay my Whore too; this I made uſe of for what ſhe was, the

other for what ſhe had. So ſeemingly happy was the preſent ſtate of my life, that I deem'd it impoſſibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

CHAP. XXVII.

He makes a Ramble into the Country, takes ſome Obſervations as he travelleth; and is ſoundly beaten for attempting to board a ſmall Iriſh *Pinnace.*

I Began now to be ſomewhat weary of the City, and therefore reſolved to refreſh my ſelf with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patroneſs therewith; who with much regret condeſcended, conditionally two days ſhould be the utmoſt time of my abſence.

That morning I ſet forth, there was ſuch ſolemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended for the *Indies*. About to amount, ſhe retrived my intentions, claſping me in her arms; I ſhould rather have choſen the imbraces of a ſhe-Bear, as thinking her breath far ſweeter; and truly I have often wondred at my recovery in ſo impure and unwholſom air. Being on Horſe-back ſhe ſo bathed her Cheeks with tears (wanting no moiſture, derived from an everlaſting ſpring of humours diſtilling from her head) that you would

have ſworn ſhe was the repreſentation of the Pig-woman in *Ben's Bartholomew*-fair. Had not her watry Flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think ſhe would have ſtood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doting fool: And were I again to love for intereſt, I would chooſe ſuch a perſon. Your young skittiſh things that onely mind their pleaſures, think they have done a man a courteſie that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, becauſe they find fond man ſo paſſionate and impatient in the proſecution of his deſires: And then again, having variety of Courtiers, they are too ſenſible, that if one will not meddle with the bait, a ſecond will nibble at it ſo long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman ſtricken in years, and having loſt her beautiful allurements is diſregarded, & look't on as no fit ſubject for love to treat on: not but ſhe may have as youthful deſires as any; and if that way inclin'd, none ſo prone as ſhe. For knowing ſhe hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, ſhe will freely part with it for her ſelf-ſatisfaction; and that ſhe may not looſe her Stallion, conſtantly encourage him even to the exhauſting of what ſhe hath. Moreover, finding the man to anſwer her expectations, ſhe ſtudies all ways imaginable how to pleaſe him in every thing, that he may pleaſe her in that one thing.

But to my purpoſe: coming to *Balle-more-Euſtace*, a little beyond the Town, (which is in the County of *Wicklow*) there is a ſmall River in the Summer-time not above knee-deep; I perceived a young woman about to croſs it; drawing to the

water, ſhe ſtood not on the niceties of modeſty, but pulled up her Cloaths to the waſt. The ſight hereof ſtopt me, and as near as I could oppoſite to her. She minded me not, but came ſtraight over to me, and at about three yards diſtance let down her Coats. I obſerved ſo many excellencies that my blood began to boyl, and my fleſh was all of a flame. For her hair which naturally curled, and was plaited, was of a bright flaxen, each hair in the Sun glittered like a thread of Gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the Maids for the moſt part, Winter and Summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they waſh all over every night; the meaner ſort as ſoon as married wear Kerchers. She had an Angelical countenance, onely ſomewhat browniſh by the Suns frequent kiſſing of it; I know not whether I may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vye with Snow for whiteneſs. I diſmounted, & addreſt my ſelf to her in *Engliſh;* ſhe anſwered me in her own language, *ſhe underſtood me not:* Then did I make uſe of that little *Iriſh* I had learned, which were ſome fragments of lecherous expreſſions, to which ſhe replied, but I underſtood her not. To be brief, I ſo far prevailed that I got her into a ſmall Wood, in which the thick & ſpreading tops of the trees ſeemed to lay their heads together in conſpiracy to keep not only the Suns entry, but alſo the curious ſearch of any mortals eye. She permitted me to kiſs, dally, lay my hand on her thighs, *&c.*, which were the only Preludiums of what ſhould follow. But herein I miſtook, for their diſpoſitions are much different from the *Engliſh.* We uſe to ſay,

that where we gain over any woman the liberty to uſe the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we moſt deſire: whereas quite contrary they will without the leaſt oppoſition permit the firſt, but with the greateſt difficulty admit of the laſt. For aſſoon as ſhe ſaw me ready to engage, ſhe cryed out inceſſantly, *Whillallalloo;* and prefently I could hear this ululation ecchoed. I had juſt recovered my Horſe, when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a Flail, the reſt with long Poles. The firſt ſalutation I received was from the Flail, which failed but little of doing my buſineſs: the next my Horſes Crupper received; the poor beaſt being civilly bred, could do no leſs then return them a Congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his Maſter, as if he had been Monarch of that Soil. Theſe two Rogues ſtood ſtiffly to me, infomuch that I knew not what courſe to take. The Villains were ſo nimble, that one of them was continually before me hindring my flight, whilſt the other drub'd me forward. I bethought my ſelf of a Piſtol I had in my Pocket charged without a bullet; I drew it, preſented, and pretended I would fire if they deſiſted not; for theſe ſtupid fellows apprehended not the danger: perceiving how ſtupidly ſenſelefs they were, I fir'd it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been ſhot, & ſo out of conceit (for they are naturally very timerous) fell down as dead; the other ſeeing that, ran away as ſwift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did (you may think) with no ordinary ſpeed. Lovers may talk of their ſufferings by their

Miſtreſs frowns, or obduratenefs, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received; ſighing is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry baſting. Pox on them they made me out of conceit with love for ſix weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman ſince, but the remembrance of thoſe three Bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous Fever into a cold one.

A little way from *Baltinglaſs* I took up my quarters for that night. The Inn I lay in was one ſtory high, about the height of an extraordinary Pigſty, and there was one Chimney in it too, more then there is to be found in one of an 100 ſuch Hovils. The good man welcom'd me after his faſhion, but I think an *Anthropophagus* or *Indian* Man-eater would have done it as civily. I bid him ſet up my Horſe by ſigns, (for that was the language we converſt in) but alaſs there was no other Stable but what was at the end of our Kitchin; our Dining-room, Bed-chamber, Pigſty, Pantry and Buttery, being all one, without diſtinction or ſeparation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our Hay-loft. The onely door of our Inn was a large hurdle, much like a ſheep-pen. The *Bannettee* or good wife of the houſe, could ſpeak a little broken *Engliſh*. I askt her what I ſhould have for Supper? *Thou ſhalt have a Supper ſaid ſhe for St.* Patrick *a gra.* I ſtaid an half hour expecting when ſhe would lay down ſomething to the fire, but inſtead thereof ſhe brings me in a Wooden Platter a great many Leeks, in the bottom whereof was a good quantity of Bay-ſalt, and

withal a loaf as black as if the Meal had been wetted with Ink. *Seeſt tou tere, Chreeſt himſelf nor St.* Patrick *did ever eat better ting.* I could not forbear ſmiling, which put her into a great paſſion: For if a man eats not what they ſet before him, they think themſelves highly affronted. Becauſe I would pleaſe them (not knowing but that I might find as bad ſawce here) I pretended to eat, conveying it into my Boots. After ſupper I askt them for a clean Pipe; the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her Husband had not ſmoakt in it above ten times. I judged it to be the ruines of the firſt Pipe that was made, which was conveyed from one of that family to another, conditionally they ſhould conſtantly ſmoke in it without burning it. They offered me ſome ſnuff too; which is one of the greateſt kindneſſes they can either ſhow or be ſhown. I called for ſome drink, (to try whether that correſponded with the reſt) and ſo it did, for there was no ſwallowing it without chewing. Finding but little ſatisfaction I deſired to go to Bed. That I ſhould inſtantly, they ſaid, but I wondered where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a luſty wench with a bundle of ruſhes on her head, my bed it ſeemed by the ſequel, which ſhe ſpreading on the ground, covered them with a *Caddow* or Rugg. Here I muſt lye or no where, patience was my onely comfort; wherefore ſtripping my ſelf to my drawers and Stockings, I laid my ſelf down. About two hours after came in two Cows, three or four Piggs, ſome Ducks and Geeſe, (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me.) All their family

being within doors; the good Man, his Wife, and two Daughters, ſtripping themſelves ſtark naked, lay down altogether by my ſide, which ſeem'd ſomewhat ſtrange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was ſo freſh in my memory.

I could not ſleep all that night, wherefore very early I diſcharged my Reckoning, and ſo ſet forward for *Dublin* with all the expedition I could, not liking the Country-entertainment. I would not ride the ſame way back as I came, to avoid my bone-breakers; but it had been as well; for coming to a River that I muſt foard, I askt a fellow which was the ſafeſt place: he pretending no knowledge of what I ſaid, wherefore making ſigns to him, he anſwer'd me again with his hand, directing me to ſuch a place: at the firſt ſtep my Horſe and I plunged over head and ears; and had not my Horſe been ſtrong, we had both periſhed. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other ſide, and looking behind me, the villain was e'ne almoſt out of ſight. Such caſeleſs revenge they frequently exerciſe towards the *Engliſh*, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. I returned at length to my old Hoſteſs, reſolving when next I undertook ſuch a journey, I would ſteer by the compaſs of other mens experience.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The manner of his ſtealing an Hogſhead of French *Wine from the Cuſtom-houſe.*

TRacing the ſtreet, I chanced to caſt my eye on a fellow, the flowneſs of whoſe pace informed me of the idleneſs of his condition. His garb was ſo prepoſterouſly unſuitable, that a man could not poſſibly look on him without exceſſive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the ſame ſport, I ſhall open his Wardrobe. In general there was not any thing he did wear that had not ſome times another property, & of which one might derive another Pedigree. The Hat he had on was deveſted of all Royal Dignity, having loſt its Crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as Capital. But what it wanted in one place was ſupplied in another, the brims whereof being ſo large, they might have conveniently ſerved as a Pent-houſe for another beſides himſelf. But this ingenious Squire politickly had pin'd up the brims on one ſide, that he might have ſome light to diſcern his way; his Hat thus pin'd up on the one ſide lookt much like a trap-door pull'd up. His Band was ſo torn and dirty, as if he had but juſt come from ſome fray; and leſt paſſion ſhould prove obnoxious, time had done him that courteſie to purge away his choler. In what condition his

Doubtlet was behind, I could plainly diſcover through the holes of his Cloak, which generally was ſo tranſparent, that the rents and patches of ſeveral colours of his cloaths were as viſible as if you had lookt through Lawn. The forepart of his Doublet and his Breeches I am confident were the off-ſpring of the Furniture of a Billiard-Table. His Cloak proceeded from a Boat-tilt, whoſe Grand-father was an Horſe-cloth; and I could not look on his Breeches, but it put me in mind of the *Scotch* Flaggs that hung up in *Weſtminſter*. His skirts were ſo liquor'd and greas'd, that in caſe of extremity they might have ſerved for belly-pieces, not uſing any thing but their own fatneſs to fry them in. By his countenance he ſeemed like a man of courage and ingenuity, and ſo I could not chuſe but endeavour his relief. Wherefore I accoſted him, pretending I had ſeen him ſomewhere, but could not for the preſent call to mind the place. His neceſſity made him aſſent to whatever I ſaid; and deſiring his company to an Ale-houſe, he readily granted my requeſt. By what unhappy accident he became thus miſerable, I know not, but the man was well furniſht both with natural and acquir'd parts. Having had various diſcourſes of ſeveral matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I askt him why he rapt himſelf up ſo cloſe in his Cloak? *O Sir*, ſaid he, (*to be plain*) *I have a maim'd Doublet, and I have heard ſome ſay, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound than the intromiſſion of Air;* which that Network garment of yours (ſaid I) will never be able to keep out. He replyed, *'Tis true, Sir, I find it ſo, but I wiſh it were a Net, for then I might employ my ſelf by fiſhing.*

I was ſo well pleaſed in my new acquaintance, that (bidding him ſtay there till my return, which ſhould be ſpeedy) I went and procured him all things neceſſary for to cover his nakedneſs: the laſt thing he put on was his Shoes; finding them to have Soals, they added new life to him.

But did before in one condition roul,
And both appear'd as if they had no Soul.

Having thus caſt (Colt-like) his ragged Coat, I was not aſhamed to walk with him in the ſtreets; coming to the Cuſtom-houſe we ſaw ſeveral Pipes and Hogſheads of Wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, ſaid I, Methinks it is no difficult matter to ſteal one of theſe Hogſheads, had I but aſſiſtance. You ſhall not want mine, Sir, (ſaid he) even to the hazard of my life, which I ſhall never look on as a ſufficient requital for this ſingular favour you have now conferr'd on me. Having walkt there a while, we went down to a place called *Lazy hill*, where I found out two or three pure Rogues more, one whereof had a Boat. I informed them of my deſign; they willingly promiſed their helping hand, and the time appointed for the effecting our intentions, was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empty Hogſhead, we fill'd it with water, and away we went in the Boat. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the Key, where I planted three of our company, inſtructing them that aſſoon as they found the Coaſt cleer above, they ſhould with ſlings (which they had for that purpoſe) leave the Hogſhead of water, & exchange it for one of wine; which done, they ſhould march

off immediately. I and my new Comerade marcht up the Cuſtom-houſe ſtairs, where we encountred with two old Watchmen. They askt us what our buſineſs was, we told them we had no other deſign but to drink with them, having been a little ſrolickſome the other ſide of the water. The old Watchmen were very joyful at this news, and ſo giving one of them money to ſetch ſome drink, the other carried me to the Lodge. The drink being come, they minded that ſo much, they had forgotten their duty; & I plyed them ſo cloſe with whole ones, that they were incapable of holding one more: in the mean time my Comrogues were gone; pretending our boat was a driſt, we took our leaves; for then we could go along by the ſhore ſide, leaving this paper on one of the Hogſheads, I left them.

What Moſes *did in the Creators name,*
By art Egyptian Magick did the ſame.
Since I have read of Water turn'd to Wine,
This Miracle is oppoſite to mine.
For I (though never yet a Rheniſh hater)
Have by my art converted Wine to Water.

I have often heard theſe very lines (with ſome real circumſtances of this our exploit, but more fictitious) repeated to me as a very good jeſt, which pleas'd me near upon as much as our purchaſe.

Being five of us concerned, we ſcorned to ſell our Wine, but contracting with ſome to find Sugar, with others *Weſtphalia hams*, or ſuch like reliſhing meats, and with others to be at the expence of Muſick, but every one to be at his own charge for Wenches; we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had dreined the Hogſhead dry.

CHAP. XXIX.

His Landlady dyeth, and ſo is left again to live by his wits; his Comerade is hanged, with ſome hints of his deſperate, irreligious, and atheiſtical tenents.

IN the height of our jollity, word was brought me that my Landlady was dangerouſly ſick, and that ſhe deſired to ſpeak with me inſtantly; thinking it was onely a fit of lecherous and ſalacious itch, I made no great haſte, but at length I went: Aſſoon as I entred within her doors, I received the ſad tydings of her death. I ran up ſtairs (not believing this report, becauſe I would not have it ſo) but found it too true: viewing her as ſhe lay, I perceived her hand faſt clincht: I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there dropt ten pieces of Gold, which I conceive ſhe intended to have beſtowed on me whileſt living, as her laſt Legacy. I conveyed them privately into my Pocket, and preſently made enquiry how ſhe had diſpoſed of her Eſtate; but I received little or no ſatisfaction herein, only to my great vexation, I heard ſhe often to the very laſt called much upon me.

I ſtayed not above two or three days in the houſe, but I was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom I communicated my late misfortune: he like an experienc'd Stoick counſel'd me to bear my loſs patient-

ly, ſince that is below a man to repine at any ſublunary cafualty, much more to ſink under the burden of any vexatious crofs, or remedileſs lofs. We diſcourfed what expedient we were beſt to take, and to encreaſe our ſmall ſtocks by ſome witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of. We thought of turning Highway-men; but I diffwaded him from that, by informing him that money was very ſcarce, and that men of 500*l. per annum* uſually travelled 30 or 40 miles with a ſingle *Cob*, or piece of eight, not ſo much for fear of robbing as for want of Coyn; and that is the reaſon that all ſorts of proviſion are very cheap, becauſe there is ſo great a ſcarcity of that ſhould purchaſe them. Why then ſaid he, there is mony enough in the Exchequer. But ſaid I, it is ſo difficult to come at, that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me ſpeak in this manner, he lookt upon me in deriſion: ſaying, *That fear was a paſſion unworthy to be lodg'd in the Soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either ſhould or need to fear*, Secundem Religionem Stoici: *And that man deſerved not the fruition of the leaſt happineſs here, that would not, rather then go without it, venture his neck.*

We had ſo hot a conteſt about this, that we parted in anger, and never ſaw him afterwards till I heard of his condemnation, which was occaſioned by the proſecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more beſides himſelf combined to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprize, committed, arraigned at the Bar, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof, I gave him a viſit in Priſon; expreſſing much ſorrow for

what he was to ſuffer: but he onely laught at me for my pains. I deſir'd him to be more ſerious, ſince three dayes would put a period to his life, and then he muſt give an account of what he had done on earth; and that though we might ſooth up our ſelves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we muſt ſuffer for it hereafter. Prethee, ſaid he, do not trouble thy head with ſuch idle fancies. That there is a God I cannot, nor will not deny, ſince there are Regiments of Arguments levied both from the ſtately fabrick of the arched Heaven, and from the inimitable embroidery of the flowry earth which are ſufficient to conquer that infidelity, and render men tributaries to the all-forming Eſſence. But that this God ſhould be ſo unjuſt (who is al goodnefs) as to make the intent of my Creation damnation, it ſhall never come within the verge of my belief: if there be any puniſhment for criminal commiſſions, it muſt be annihilation, or nothing. Quote not me the Scriptures for my conviction if I err, ſince they are full of contradictions, and contain many things incredible. Neither do I know (ſince we are forbidden murder) why *Abraham* ſhould kill his Son *Iſaac*, and the ſame perſon commit Adultery with his maid *Hagar*, (which is largely deſcrib'd) and yet we are commanded the contrary; if we borrow or ſteal, we are enjoyn'd to make reſtitution; notwithſtanding, the *Iſraelites* were permitted to borrow the *Egyptians* Earrings without giving ſatisfaction. In this manner I could cavil *ad infinitum*; and yet this Book is the Baſis of Chriſtianity. Let me tell me you plainly, Religion at firſt was only the quaint *Leger-de-main*

of ſome ſtrong pated Stateſmen, who to overawe the Capriciouſneſs of a giddy multitude, did forge the opinion of a puniſher of all humane evil actions. What was *Mahomet* but an Impoſtor, whoſe palpable cheats grew up in his ſucceſſors into a Religion, and whoſe inventions were and are receiv'd with as much adoration by the wiſeſt of men, as is the Orthodox Veneration (as they term it) to a Deity, which is the object of Chriſtian worſhip. The Popes piety is onely pride and ambition, and yet he pronounces Damnation againſt all ſuch as are not of his belief, &c. If you will know the diverſity of Religions, (all oppugning on the other) take a view thereof in Mr. *Roſs* his *Panſebeia*. Now ſeeing the rational ſoul hath fail'd ſo oft and ſo abſurdly in its diſcoveries, how or why ſhould we ſubmit our ſelves ſlaviſhly to its determinations. For that which doth at ſome times err, can never at any time be concluded infallible. He would have proceeded, but I deſir'd him to deſiſt.

Now his prophane and irreligious diſcourſe did ſo bore my glowing ears, that notwithſtanding the wickednes of my own nature, I could not endure to hear him blaſpheme; wherefore inſtead of endeavouring to rectifie his erroneous judgement, (for to ſpeak the truth, my knowledg at that time was but ſlender in the doctrine of Chriſtianity) I durſt not diſcourſe longer with him, but left him to his own Conſcience for conviction, which I judg'd would be powerful with him at the place of Execution.

The day being come, I reſolved to ſee the final end of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wiſhes. For as ſoon as

the Halter was about his neck, he roared ſo loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the moſt lethargick conſcience that ever the Devil lull'd aſleep. There I might ſee and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water ſtanding therein, what convulſion-fits his ſoul ſuffer'd, his own mouth confeſſing how grievouſly his diſeaſed ſoul was ſtretched upon the rack of deſpair: then it was that the voluminous Regiſters of his conſcience, which did formerly lye claps'd in ſome unſearcht corner of his memory, were laid open before him; and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the leſſening end of the proſpect to ſurvey his licentious courſes and damned opinion, now turned the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at laſt for mercy, and ſo was turn'd off.

CHAP. XXX.

He paſſeth for a Batchellor, Courts ſeveral under the pretence of Marrying them, by which he perſwades ſome out of their Maiden-heads; others out of their Money, with which he goes for England; *At* Cheſter *he cheats his Landlord, where having all things requiſite to compleat an Highway-man, followeth that trade: he is met with by ſome of that gang, who intending to rob him, he diſcovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their ſociety.*

BEing left now to ſhift for my ſelf, having loſt the main prop that ſuſtain'd me in all conditions, husbanding well the advantage of this contrary wind, I preſently ſet the engine of my brain to work, and thus it was; I addreſt my ſelf

to Courtſhip. Beauty was not the mark I aimed, the purchaſe thereof producing little profit, ſince it ſelf is moſt commonly the ſole reward ; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence, outvying all therein, leaſt any interpoſe. Either wealthy and aged widdows, or thriſty Maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in Service as a bait to procure an Husband, ſuch did I daily hunt out and viſit by turns. I was not ſparing of amorous expreſſions, ſhewing therein the height of zeal, by which means I deluded ſeveral. Some I was forced to give earneſt to for their Goods, before they would truſt me with what they had. This courſe I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. Having now gotten a round ſum of money by me, I borrowed where ever I could ; ſo croſſing S. *Georges* Channel, in twenty four hours I landed at *Cheſter.* I took up my quarters in a very graceful Inn, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of Cattel coming. The Maſter of the houſe taking notice of my extraordinary Garb, and believing the report which I had caus'd to be ſpread abroad, lodg'd me with much reſpect in one of the beſt Chambers of his houſe.

The Wind favoured my deſign as much as I could deſire, for it blew Eaſt-North-Eaſt, by which no Shipping could come out of *Ireland.* One day I came to my Landlord, and telling him that by reaſon of the non-arrival of my Cattel, I was diſappointed of Moneys, and therefore I deſired him to lend me ten pounds, and he ſhould ſatisfie himſelf in the firſt choice of the

beſt of my beaſts when they came, and ſwore to him I would perform my promiſe to him upon the word of a Gentleman. So that without any ſcruple he lent me the money. Being Market-day, I bought an excellent Gelding with Furniture thereunto belonging, with Sword and Piſtols, and in this Equipage mounted; I taking my leave of my credulous Landlord without ſpeaking a word to him: I had not rid far, before three well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the Van-guard) having as many more in the Rear. At the bottome of an Hill they before faced about, and bidding me ſtand, thoſe in the Rear reinforc'd the Van. One of them clapping a Piſtol at my breaſt, commanded me forthwith to deliver, Swearing three or four full-mouth'd Oaths. I ſaw it was now to little purpoſe to reſiſt, although I was ſo well arm'd, and therefore endeavoured a conqueſt ſome other way, *viz.* by ſmooth expreſſions. Gentlemen (ſaid I) ye are all miſtaken; neither do I greatly wonder thereat, ſince I verily believe ye are freſh-men, men of a days ſtanding in the ſtudy of this noble Science, otherwiſe you might have diſtinguiſht me from an honeſt man; for I think in this Garb and poſture, I look as ſuſpitiouſly as any of ye; onely I think I take a better courſe then ye to avoid apprehenſion, and reap to my ſelf greater ſatisfaction. For ye rob in companies, and if any one be taken, his juſt fears frequently betray himſelf, but oftner the reſt to deſtruction: whereas I robbing ſingly, I rob ſecurely. Now Sirs freely examine my Pockets, where finding ſtore of Coyn, they demanded how I came by it? I

invented a lye to their general ſatisfaction; which was, I had met with a Booty a little before I met with them, which was the occaſion of my being ſo well furniſht; but that which confirm'd them moſt, was my being ſo well provided with Piſtols in my Holſters, Pockets and Boots. Inſtead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them careſt me in a very high manner; reſolving to be merry at the next Inn, and there to admit me as a Brother.

Having ſet up their Horſes, they went into a Room before, whil'ſt I ſtayed ſome time after for the benefit of eaſing nature; coming in among them I thought my ſelf miſtaken in my company, and made a proffer to go out again; but they laughing heartily called me back. I knew not one perſon, for they had pull'd off their falſe Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Patches, Wens, Mufflers and Perriwigs, together with thoſe other diſguiſes that obſcured the natural proportion of their faces, ſo that they appeared as other men. Come ſaid the chief (as I gueſt him to be by the ſway he bore over the reſt) you are a freſhman, and therefore want ſome of our inſtructions, which in due time you ſhall receive from us. In the firſt place it is fit that you take an Oath which every young Thief muſt obſerve that is admitted into the Brother-hood, or at his inveſtation into the honour of one of the Knights of the Road: which was to this effect. Firſt, they read a charge of ſecrecy, that whatever misfortune happened to cloud their freedom by rendring them as an object to Juſtice and the Law, they ſhould conceal their Complices to the death, or againſt any other jeopardy what-

ſoever, burying in oblivion not only his Confederates, but alſo his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to ſwear me, that if the Judges ſhould preſs me to a diſcovery of particulars, that then I muſt cunningly create ſome men in my fancy, deviſing not only Names, but to give each man a particular feature, deſcribing their ſtature, complexion and age, as alſo their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off: And then before enquiry be made, the danger of the tryal may be over or paſt; and then again this pretended diſcovery may purchaſe favour from the Bench.

Further, if I ſhould be examined, why, and how I fell into theſe courſes, I muſt then tell them that I was born a Gentleman, and well educated; but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a ſubſiſtance, and rather then I would live beneath my birth, or diſparage the ſtock from whence I came (here fetching a deep ſigh, and looking very ſadly) neceſſity conſtraining me to ſupply my wants, I fell into theſe wicked courſes; which will make them think you are ſome miſled young man whom temptations had drawn aſide, and ſo cauſe them to take pity of your condition; and if their mercy extend to the remiſion of your guilt, it ſhall not only reſt you from the puniſhment of the Law, but from the perſecution of your paſt evils.

By this means we may have liberty to fall to our old courſes; nor muſt conſcience trouble us, but diſpence with every impiety, and glory

in the greaſteſt iniquities, counting him moſt honourable who is grown the oldeſt and moſt exquiſite experienced Practitioner of all manner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future obſervation, which for brevity ſake I ſhall omit.

CHAP. XXXI.

Some Inſtructions given me by our Grand maſter-Thief.

AFter I was ſworn, and full bowls of Sack had trould round, our grand Maſter-Thief, compoſing his Countenance, and looking very gravely, Come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me, whoſe long experience makes me able to command, and my love to you willing to inſtruct you. Ever lurk or lie in ſome by-place moſt advantageous and leaſt ſuſpitious which yields the eye the proſpect of the Road: ſo ſtrictly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honeſt mans loſs be your gain; and be ſure you draw every advantage that may promote your cauſe, to the longeſt extent. For your Masks and Chin-cloth, thus muſt you place them and fit them at a moment to diſguiſe your face, thereby to blind the intellects of ſuch as by conſtraint pay

tribute to your wants; who then can know & with conſiderate heed directly ſwear you are the man, when theſe artificial vizards are withdrawn, and ſo the viſible tokens vaniſh that might inform mens knowledge what you are? and that your words may have a different ſound, alter your voice, that ſo as your habit, face, and haire obſcure your diſcovery, your ſpeech (reputed undiſguiſeable) will add to your concealment and ſecurity.

Be ſure you ingeniouſly contrive a Watch-word to your ſelves that may occaſion no ſuſpition; as, we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according as the weather is like to prove; which being nam'd, let every man fall to his work; thoſe that are ſtrongeſt at the graſp, and have hearts accordingly, let them ſeize firſt, alwayes duly obſerving this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your Sword. If he or they reſiſt, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and ſo cools his courage. The weaker ſorts charge is to bid ſtand, and confronting the Horſes head, preſent a Piſtol fit for to diſcharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you muſt wave all niceties, but cut them ſoundly; if that will not qualifie their fooliſh preſumption, be ſure you fire not without doing Execution, and then with all ſpeed fly, after you have with expedition taken the pillage of the field.

If you are purſu'd by an Hue and Cry, obſcure your ſelf in ſome place or other, and let it paſs by you, and then to be ſure it will never overtake you. If a prize comes by, or in your ſight, if up

the Hill, meet him ; if down, follow cloſe at the heels, and having more in company then your ſelf, let each man ſingle out his choice which he likes to deal with: the coaſt being clear, fall up all to your cloſe order and ſide, be ſure that you joyntly ſeize your prize. But here obſerve, let not any baſeneſs of ſpirit unman you. For (*ſpeaking to me*) nature hath beſtow'd on you the full proportion of limbs, and thou ſeem'ſt a man of courage, ſuitable to the largeneſs of thy manly ſize, but be not ſurpriz'd with fear or cowardiſe if the aſſailed boldly aſſaults thee.

Full fraught with the Documents which I receiv'd from my old experienced Maſter, I reſolv'd upon ſome atchievement: between two and three in the afternoon, I my ſelf with four more ſet out; we planted our ſelves in a convenient place, only I was ſent out for a diſcoverer: not rightly underſtanding my trade, I wandered too far, but in my digreſſion I met with a ſingle perſon whom I bid ſtand, which he would have done, and as willingly have ſurrendred his purſe, but that he was mounted on a ſtone-horſe, I on a Mare. Aſſoon as I had given the word, his ſtone-horſe wheel'd off and came in the rear of me: I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavoured all wayes imaginable to prevent him, for there was ſomething it ſeems under my Mares tail more powerful, which at that time I dreamt not of. I led him round and round ſeveral times circularly : the poor harmleſs Gentleman fearing he ſhould provoke me too much by delays, the unrulineſs of his Horſe hindring my ſeiſing the Booty, cry'd out, Worthy Sir, take what I have and ſpare my life : at that

very inſtant his Horſe reared his two fore-feet upon me and my Mare, in ſo much that I thought he ſaid, I'le take both Life and Money too preſently; fear had then rendred me ſo incapable of performing the office of a Thief. With that I put ſpurs to my Mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my ſafety. Notwithſtanding I made what ſpeed I could, the other was cloſe at my heels: ſtriving and kicking with both my legs, one of my Piſtols went off in my Pocket: the apprehenſion of the preſent danger had bereft me of the true uſe of my ſenſe, for I imagined that my back-friend had diſcharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought *Tartar*-like flying, and that I had fired it at him, which made him with much eagerneſs eccho out with repetition this expreſſion, *As you are a man, ſhew your ſelf merciful.* Sometimes he would ſay, For heavens ſake hold, good Sir ſtop; which made me ride more furiouſly, thinking he called to the Country, Hold him, ſtop him; at laſt do what I could, his Stone-horſe leapt up upon us, at that inſtant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginary adverſary would be upon me, and cut my throat before I could recover my legs, wherefore I ſtarted up, and found my mortal foe up before me, and upon the run. I could have hang'd my ſelf to think I ſhould be reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that ſpirit and courage which compleats a man: but looſing no time, I purſu'd him, and eaſily made my ſelf poſſeſſor of what he had; Sirrah, ſaid I, if e're I meet thee again,

and find thee ſo obſtinate, or durſt reſiſt, as now thou haſt done, I will tye thee to a Tree in ſome obſcure place, where none can hear thy doleful cryes, and there for ſix days thou ſhalt have no other food but what I ſhall bring the. Once a day during that term I will viſit thee, and each days Meat ſhall be either a piece of thine own Sword broken into ſmall bits, or thoſe Bullets (which thou intendeſt for the deſtruction of honeſt men) diſſolv'd, and mingled with Gunpowder, which ſhall be convey'd to thy mouth through the muzzle of thine own Piſtol. It pleaſed me exceedingly to ſee how pitifully and ſubmiſſively he look't: for verily I durſt not have utter'd half ſo much if he had ſhown an auſtere countenance.

As I was framing a lye to delude my Comerades (when I ſhould meet them) into a belief how valiant I was, and dextrous in proſecution of that deſign I had newly undertaken, I lookt about me & ſaw them all at my elbow. I now believ'd (which I eaſily perceiv'd by their flearing looks) that they were all eye-witneſſes of my dangerous encounter. Oh brother, ſaid one, how is't? are you well? I askt him the reaſon of his impertinent queſtion? Becauſe, ſaid he, we took notice of the great danger you were in even now, narrowly eſcaped of being ſhot by a Pocket-Inkhorn. Without doubt, brother, you are very hard hearted to fly (riding full ſpeed) at the very naming of, *Good Sir be merciful.* The poor harmleſs foul making frequent repetition thereof, but you ſtopping your ears from all intreaties, his Stone horſe ſeem'd to be his advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an interceſſion for his Maſter.

I ſhould never have ſtopt their mouths had I not ſhew'd them what I had gotten, which was not inconſiderable.

It was twy-light as we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his fellow-traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of ſo undaunted reſolution and unreſiſtable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident) could dull the edges of their couragious ſpirits, which might be in part underſtood by their deportment to us: for had we not ſlaſht, carbonadoed, and forceably bound them, rather then they would have yielded willingly, they would have ſtoopt to death. Our power having ſubdued them, we withdrew them into a ſecret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did I learn to ſearch with ſo ſtrict care, that ſooner might the Grand *Turk* turn *Roman* Catholick then conceal a penny from me; here was I taught to be deaf when the poor Traveller cries he is undone; and to be more flinty then Adamant, not to be mov'd with ſighs or tears. Having ingag'd them by Oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general riſing of the Towns adjacent; theſe two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapt up in woes, and haſted away to ſecure ourſelves.

I ſhall conclude this Chapter with a Relation how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account of fear or timoroufneſs. Neither could they juſtly tax me with it, ſince they are things entail'd upon the profeſſion. For every Crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth

but ſtir, or make the buſhes ruſh, ſeem'd to our fearful fancy a Conſtable to apprehend us for our Theft. I cannot forget how ſtrong a confuſion aroſe amongſt us by a trifle; the means were ſo ſmall, and the occaſion ſo ridiculous, that when after I thought thereon (though by my ſelf) I could not forbear laughing exceſſively, and condemn the temerity of ſuch minds ſo meanly ſpirited. 'Twas thus in ſhort: An Owle who to gain ſhelter from the troubles of a Sunſhine day, when all the airy tribe (wandring) flock to him, ſcreen'd himſelf in the obſcure retired reſidence of an hollow tree; no ſooner had he cloiſter'd up himſelf, but between diſcontent and ſomething of a pleaſing ſatisfaction he firſt utter'd his amazing ſcreeks, being in a ſlumber, and dreaming of the aſſaults were made at him by his feather'd enemies of all ſorts, and then again awaking, whoopt for joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hollow inceſſantly, which infus'd ſuch a terrour into our diſtruſtful minds, that Whips, Switches and Spurs were all too few to expedite our haſt. For we abſolutely thought thoſe Hollows were the out-cryes of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took Sanctuary in an Inn, where we had ſome intereſt and confidence in our ſecurity.

Underſtanding that our days work had been proſperous, our Hoſt calls luſtily for Sack, which the drawer doubles in the Bar; the Hoſtler muſt be one of our company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courſes we take, preſume we dare not cavil, leſt they betray our practiſes. *Sic nos non nobis.* So we rob for them, and not

for our ſelves ; for by that time we have profuſely frolickt (a bill whereof ſhall be brought in of twice as much as we called for) and have beſtowed our largeſſes to the Servants, and offer'd up our (expected) ſacrifices to our Landlady, or her Daughter, for ſome private favour received, we find our ſelves to have the leaſt ſhare, and ſo betake our ſelves to our trade till apprehenſion take from us that liberty, and the Law ſentenceth us to pay our lives as a juſt debt we owe to Juſtice.

CHAP. XXXII.

Scouring the Road, he lights on a Farmers houſe which he intended to rob, but deſiſts from that reſolutiou, falling in Love with his Daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with Child, under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refuſing it, She and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other ſatisfaction then what they could gather out of a Copy of Verſes he ſent them.

RIding along the Road, I met with a young Girl with a Milk-Pail on her head, but I was amaz'd to ſee ſuch perfection in one mortal face. I rid up to her very near, purpoſely to entertain ſome diſcourſe with her, introductory to a future

acquaintance: conſidering the ground, you may imagine the queſtions I propounded to this pretty Rural Innocent were ſrivolous enough; as, which was the readieſt way to ſuch a place, *&c.* which with much reſpect and modeſt confidence ſhe reſolv'd. She opening a gate to milk her Cows, I followed, and tying my horſe to an hedge, I beg'd her an excuſe for being ſo rude, and beſeecht her charitable opinion of my preſent actions, aſſuring her I would not offer the leaſt injury nor prejudice to her chaſtity. Being overperſwaded with my proteſtations and vows to that purpoſe, ſhe admitted me to ſit down and diſcourſe with her whileſt ſhe performed the office of a Milk-maid. I could hardly contain my ſelf within bounds when I viewed her pretty little hand *ſtroking the Duggs*, which indeed had ſo heightned my amorous paſſion, that I ſoon forgot my Oaths and Promiſes, but after ſome dalliance, what by intreaties and love-perſwaſions, and what by corporal ſtrength, I obtained my deſires. We then grew ſomewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, *I had undone her*; let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We conclude at length that ſhe ſhould go home to her Fathers houſe, and that near night I would come thither likewiſe, according to the time appointed, as if I had never ſeen her before, and that I caſually rid that way for information in the ſteering of my courſe regularly in the proſecution of my journey.

She ſubtilly goes in, and acquaints her Father and Mother that there was a Gentleman (without)

whom by his countenance, garb and geſture, ſhew'd himſelf no leſs; that fearing to travel farther, being night, knowing not the way, deſir'd to reſt himſelf there till morning. With much reſpects from her Parents to her own great ſatisfaction (which I diſcern'd in her eyes) I was kindly entertain'd, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation of our late enjoyments; but our unlucky Starrs were impropitious to our amorous deſigns. Next morning I ſeem'd to be very ill, that I might have ſome pretence for my ſtaying, which I acquainted the Daughter withal, the old people were very loving and courteous, ſo that as ſoon as they heard thereof, with much pitty they viſited me, and with as much care they provided what was neceſſary for me. I offer'd them money, ſhewing good ſtore of Gold, that they might have the better eſteem of me. Thus I lay for at leaſt a fortnight; ſeveral Doctors had been with me, but none knew my diſtemper. All this while I nightly had the ſociety of my freſh Country Miſtres, who deviated from the common cuſtomes of her Sex, did not coyiſhly refuſe that which was the *center* of her hopes, wiſhes and deſires. Fearing leaſt I might be ſuſpected, I left off counterfeiting, and ſhew'd them ſome recovery of my ſtrength. When at any time the good old people would come into my Chamber to ſit with me, the main ſubject of my diſcourſe would be the reſentments of their favours, and that if I liv'd I would gratefully repay them. Being reſtor'd to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and

care of me but by marrying their Daughter, whom I told them I loved moſt affectionately. Her Parents made many excuſes. As that ſhe was but a poor Country Girle, and the like, but glad I perceived they were to hear ſuch an over-prized motion. Enquiries I made in a Neighbouring Town what this farmer was, whom I underſtood by all to be very wealthy, and that time was not more careful to furniſh him with ſilver Hairs, then he induſtrious to maintain them by the procuration of a plentiful Eſtate: My wanton was his only Darling, for whom he furrowed the ſurface of the Earth, and for whom he choſe rather to ſell then to eat his better ſort of Proviſion, that he might add to her Portion. It was now he thought he had well beſtowed his labour, ſince he had met with ſuch a bleſſed opportunity wherein he ſhould add Gentility to his daughters riches. O the ſlaughter of Piggs, Geeſe, Capons, which as to ſome Idol were Sacrifices diurnally offered to procure my favour! And as he was liberal in his Food, ſo was not I ſparing in the ſending for Wine, ſix Dozen of Bottles at a time: So that the Old man was brought to this paſs, that he cared not whether he ſpent his Eſtate on me, or gave it; and that young Girl ſo well pleaſed with her imaginary Paradiſe here, that I am confident ſhe would never have been induced to have exchanged this for any other on equal terms. Inexpreſſable was our ſatisfaction on all hands, but nothing gave them greater content then to ſee us together, by which we had as many opportunities as we liſted. My main aim was ſtill to know of my young Miſtreſs what ſtore of Coyn her Father had, and where it lay, but to my

great grief and vexation ſhe told me he had not five pound within doors, having lately bought a purchaſe. I now thought it was to little purpoſe to ſtay longer, ſince I could not glean from her Fathers harveſt, though I had reapt the *crop* of her Mothers labour, and ſo reſolved to be going, but not without one nights ſolemn leave taking of her. The night being come, ſhe purpoſely ſtayed up till all the reſt were gone to bed. But we being too imprudently haſty in the Kitchin, ſtumbled againſt two Barrels piled one on the other and fell; and we both were ſo intangled, that we could not diſingage our ſelves ſo ſoon, but that her Father came out crying, *In the name of Goodneſs what is the matter?* And groping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I deſired him to be ſilent; and not ſpread his Daughters diſgrace; if ſo, I would make her ſhortly a recompence. The old man was very much perplext, and could not forbear telling his Wife of what had paſt. They both cryed out that their Daughter was undone: The Daughter was in the ſame tone, unleſs I would ſpeedily marry her.

I ſtayed afterwards about ſome three dayes to colour the matter, and at laſt marcht off *incognito*, ſending her twenty pieces of Gold, and a Coppy of Verſes, which, although I knew they underſtood not, yet I could not but expreſs my ſelf by writing, if for nothing elſe but mine own ſatisfaction.

Is it not ſtrange thou and thy friends ſhould ſay,
Thou art undone by me? Lets ſee which way.
Have I not done to my great toyl and pain,
What all thy friends cannot undo again.

Call but to mind the pleaſures thou haſt taſted,
The hours and minutes which with thee I waſted
To bring thee to perfection; and to teach
Thee learning, far above the Sexes reach.
Have I not taught thee oft' Aſtronomy,
Within thy Mothers Garden, ſhew'd thee all
The Starry courſe, and Sphears Celeſtial.
Did I not teach thee Poetry that night
And how in Tripped Dactyls thou ſhouldſt write.
I taught thee then Geometry, *the notion*
Of length *and* bredth, egality, proportion
Of Quadrant Triangles; *the way to enter*
Circles, *or* Semi-circles; *how the* Center
Stands ever fixt, *how that every* line
Direct, *or* oblique, circular, *or trine*
Hath ſtill its ending; *how to take the* height
Of any blazing bearded Star *by night.*
I taught thee Muſicks harmony *to know,*
To keep true time, *where thou ſhouldſt* reſt, *and how:*
Learn'd thee likewiſe thy notes, large, long, *& brief,*
Prickt Minom, with a Crotchet, and the chief
Of the lov'd Art, good diſcant for to make
Upon a plain Song, Diſcords *alſo take*
With a ſweet cloſe, and meltingly to fall
Into a Treble, raviſhing withal.
I shew'd thee why Artiſts hold six Cliffs *beſt,*
And why 'tis prized far above the reſt,
Becauſe it keeps the middſt; the very heart
And Soul of Muſick is the inner part.
Yet art undone thou ſaidſt? Is to impart
The hiddcn ſecrets of myſtcrious art
Undoing to thee. Hadſt thou ever ſpent
Thy means upon me, or thy money lent,
And had not paid the Int'reſt back to thee,
Thou and thy friends might then have rail'd at me.

What wert thou before I knew thee, but an Aſs,
A rude neglected home-ſpun Country laſs,
Knowing not how to ſpeak, to go or look,
But hide thy ſelf when ſeen in every nook.
And bluſh, nay tremble if thou wert found out;
Strive to be gone again, ſcratch, cry, and pout
If one but touch thy Apron, and wouldſt ſpit
In's mouth ſhould come to kiſs thee: for thy wit
It did extend but unto no, and I,
Confeſs this truth, or elſe in faith you lye.
This was thy eloquence; why did I love thee?
Young, plump and fair thou wert, and that did move me.
I took thee and refin'd thee, made thee new,
Alter'd thy nature, chang'd thy former hew:
Taught thee to kiſs, embrace, and entertain
A lover with that Sp'rit and catching vein,
The Goddeſs of delight in her own ſport
May ſtrive to equal thee, but muſt come ſhort.
Where hadſt thou all thy breeding *but from me?*
Who bound *thee firſt, and now have made thee free?*
Thy petulant diſcourſe, and apiſh toying,
A change of humours, now a ſullen coying,
All which I taught thee, which do make thee rare,
Now are thy Attributes as well as fair:
And what content is in a ſimpering fool,
A ſqueamiſh thing, ſhe doth mans ſpirits cool;
Beats back the flowing current of his blood,
And ebbs it in the very ſpring or floud,
'Tis harſh to hear a School boy in one tone
Repeat his leſſon like a Bagpipes drone,
But it doth raviſh with delight the ear
Well worded and ſweet language'd lines to hear,
Pronounc'd by one hath skill and art to know
When he ſhould raiſe his voyce, when bring it low.

For though a Poet write good Lines, it is
The ſpeaker that doth make them hit or miſs.
So though a Wench be nere ſo fair, ſo neat,
Or well proportion'd, if ſhe wont the feat
Of acting well upon loves Theater,
It will not make mans loving paſſion ſtir.
She's like one handſome in a ſplendid ſuit,
Onely to fit a Stage and play the Mute
And ſhall not go clapt off with frequent kiſſes,
The Lovers plaudit, *but diſtaſtful* hiſſes.
And ſuch wert thou, when firſt I met with thee,
Now have I brought thee to thy excellence
With my exceſſive toyl, and dear expence
Of my beſt blood; and added to thee more
Then was in all thy Anceſtors *before*
Gentility. *I have enricht thy mind*
With the chief Ornament of Woman kind
Behaviour: Taught thee to live and ſpend
Of thy own gettings, without help of friend.
And have I this ungrateful Girle *for all*
That I have done to thee. Why doſt thou call
Me thy Undoer. *How e're I will forgive,*
For I'm in charity, and do believe
The onely cauſe why I am taxt ſo ſore
With thy undoing, 'cauſe I do no more.

CHAP. XXXIII.

From this Farmers houſe he rides he cared not whither, On the Road he is ſtrangely ſurprized by a Woman-robber in Mans apparrel; He diſcovers it by unbuttoning her Breeches to ſearch for private Pockets within. They two conclude a perpetual Friendſhip.

ABruptly taking my leave of the Farmer and his loving Daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of my taking Cognizance: being wearied, I ſtruck into an Inn, and by that time I had throughly refreſht my ſelf, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted, and ſo put on, Paſſing by a ſmall Coppice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then ſuppoſed) well armed, and handſomely accoutred, ſtarted out upon me, and bid me deliver inſtantly. Hearing him ſay ſo, I told him if he would have but the patience I would; and with that drew out a Pocket-Piſtol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little ſport (ſaid the Gentleman) I ſhall ſhow you ſome inſtantly; whereupon drawing a Piſtol he ſhot me into the leg: having ſo done, with his Sword (which hung ready at his wriſt) neatly at a

blow he cut the reins of my bridle, ſo that I was not able to guide my horſe. But he being good at command, and uſed to the charge, with the winding of my body I gave him to underſtand what he was to do. Come Sir, ſaid my adverſary, have you enough yet? In faith Sir, ſaid I, I'le exchange but one Piſtol more, and if that prove inſuccefsful I ſhall ſubmit to your mercy. Whereupon I ſhot, but miſſed my mark, however I killed his Horſe, which inſtantly fell: my Gentleman was ſo nimble, that before I could think what to do, he had ſheathed his ſword in my Horſes belly, which made me come tumbling down too with a *Horſe-pox*. Once more, ſaid my Antagoniſt, we are upon equal terms, and ſince the obſcurity of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courages, one muſt fall. And thereupon with his Sword (which was for cut and thruſt) he made a full paſs at my bodie; but putting it by I cloſed in with him, and upon the Hug threw him with much facility; I wondered much at it; which I need not have done, ſince his nature (as afterwards I underſtood) was ſo prone to it. Having him down, Now, Sir, ſaid I, I ſhall teach you to be careful on whom you ſet: you have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize as a *Pickeroon* did once, who ſeeing a Man of War high built, and but few men aboard her diſcoverable, her Port-holes being likewiſe faſt, clapt her aboard immediately, thinking ſhe had been a Merchantman; but they found the contrary, the deck being inſtantly filled with men that were below, and running out her Guns there could be no wiſdom in reſiſtance. Wherefore now Sir yield, or

I ſhall compel you. With much reluctancy he did. With cords I had ready for that purpoſe, I tyed both his hands and feet, and ſo fell to rifling him. Unbuttoning his Doublet to find whether there was no Gold quilted therein, I wondered to ſee a pair of Breaſts ſo unexpectedly greater and whiter then any mans; but being intent about my buſineſs, that amazement vaniſht from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches (which I laid open) my curious ſearch omitted not any place wherein I might ſuſpect the concealment of moneys: at laſt proffering to remove his ſhirt from between his legs, he ſuddenly cryed out (and ſtrove to lay his hand there, but could not) I beſeech you Sir be civil, ſaid he: I imagining that ſome notable *Treaſure* lay there obſcured, I pulled up his ſhirt (*alias* Smock) and found my ſelf not much miſtaken.

The ſight ſo furprized me, as if I had been converted into a Statue by the head of a *Gorgon*, but after a little pauſe, I haſtily unbound her, and taking her in my Armes, Pardon me moſt courageous *Amazon*, (ſaid I) for thus rudely dealing with you, it was nothing but ignorance that cauſed this errour; for could my dim-ſighted ſoul have diſtinguiſht what you were, the greatneſs of love and reſpect I bear your Sex would have deterred me from contending with you. But I eſteem this my ignorance, my greateſt happineſs, ſince knowledge in this caſe would have deprived me of the benefit of knowing there could be ſo much Prowefs in a Woman. For your ſake I ſhall ever retain (ſince you have reſtored it) a good eſteem of the worſt of Females. She beg'd me not to be too tedious in my expreſſions, nor pump for

eloquent phraſes, alledging this was no proper place to make Orations in. But if you will enlarge your ſelf, let us go to a place not far diſtant from this, better known, but to few beſides my ſelf. I liked her advice very well, and returning what I had taken from her, I followed it, by following her through divers obſcure paſſages till we came to a Wood, where in a place the Sun had not ſeen ſince the firſt deluge, ſtood an Houſe. At our approach the Servants were all in a hurry who ſhould firſt obey Mrs. *Virago's* commands, for they all knew her, being no way eſtranged to her diſguiſe, but wondered to ſee St. *George*, and his truſty Eſquire on foot, neither durſt they ſhow themſelves inquiſitive preſently: with much reſpect we were conducted into a very ſtately room, where embracing each other, we knit an indiſſolvable tye of friendſhip.

CHAP. XXXIV.

After Supper they enter in Diſcourſe, wherein ſhe giveth him a ſhort account of her Life, and the cauſe of her undertaking ſuch an extravagant and dangerous courſe; relating how notably ſhe revenged her ſelf on her Husband for his unworthy and baſe carriage towards her.

HAving refreſht our ſelves with what the Houſe afforded, and Bottles and Pipes had ſupplied the place of Diſhes; we dialogu'd as familiarly, as if our acquaintance had bore equal date with our nativities. And now it was ſhe laid her ſelf open to me, not concealing any thing, having before made my ſelf acquainted with her greateſt Secret. Frankly ſhe called for Bottles of Wine, which we ſmartly drank together out of Beer-glaſſes: had not Supper been ſpeedily provided, which required a ceſſation for ſome time, I ſhould not have been in a condition to diſcern the Diſh, nor him that brought it to the Table. Having taken ſome repaſt, I began to be refreſht, ſhe not in the leaſt diſturbed all this while.

I preſt her to tell me what ſhe was, and what manner of life ſhe led. Sir, ſaid ſhe, I cannot deny your requeſt; wherefore to ſatisfie you, know that I was the Daughter of a Sword-Cutler. In my younger days my Mother would have taught me to handle a Needle; but my Martial ſpirit gain-ſaid all perſwaſions to that purpoſe. I could

never endure to be among the Utenſils of the Kitchin, but ſpent moſt of my time in my Fathers ſhop, taking wonderful delight in handling thoſe Warlike Inſtruments: to take a Sword in my hand well mounted and brandiſh it, was reckoned by me among the chief of my recreations. Being about a douzen years of age, I ſtudied all wayes imaginable how I might make my ſelf acquainted with a Fencing-Maſter. Time brought my deſires to their complement, for ſuch a one as I wiſht for, caſually came into our Shop to have his blade furniſht; and Fortune ſo ordered it, there was none to anſwer him but my ſelf. Having given him that ſatisfaction he deſired, though not expecting it from me: Amongſt other talke I demanded of him whether he was not a Profeſſor of the Noble Science? (for I gueſt ſo much by his Poſtures, Looks, and expreſſions.) He told me he was a well-willer thereunto. Being glad of this opportunity, deſiring him to conceal my intentions, I requeſted him the favour as to give me ſome inſtructions how I ſhould manage a Sword: at firſt he ſeemed amazed at my propoſal, but perceiving I was in earneſt, he granted my petition, allotting me ſuch a time to come to him as was moſt convenient. I became ſo expert at Back-ſword and Single-Rapier in a ſhort time, that I needed not his aſſiſtance any longer; My Parents not in the leaſt miſtruſting any ſuch thing.

I ſhall wave what Exploits I did by the help of a diſguiſe, and only tell you that when I arrived to fifteen years of age, an Inne-Keeper Married me, and carried me into the Country. For two years we lived very peaceably and comfortably

together, but at length the inſolent and imperious temper of my Husband made me begin to ſhow my Natural humour. Once a week we ſeldom miſt of a Combat between us, which frequently proved ſo ſharp, that it was well if my Husband came off with a ſingle broken pate, by which means the gaping wounds of our difcontents and differences being not preſently ſalved up, they became in a manner incurable.

I never was much inclined to love him, becauſe he was of a mean daſtardly ſpirit, and ever hated that a Dunghill-Cock ſhould tread a Hen of the Game. Being ſtinted likewiſe of Money, my life grew altogether comfortleſs, and I lookt on my condition as infupportable: Wherefore as the only remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, I contrived a way how I might ſometimes take a Purſe. I judged this reſolution ſafe enough, (if I were not taken in the very fact) for who could ſuſpect me to be a Robber, wearing abroad upon ſuch deſigns mans Apparel, but at home onely that which was ſuitable and agreeable to my own Sex? Beſides, none could have better encouragement and conveniency then my ſelf; for, keeping an Inn, who is more proper to have in cuſtody what charge my Gueſts brought into my houſe then my ſelf? or if committed to my Husbands tutelage, I could not fail to inform my ſelf of the richneſs of the Booty. Moreover, the Hoſteſs is the perſon whoſe company is moſt deſired, before whom they are no ways ſcrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

Courage I knew I wanted not, (be you my im-

partial Judge, Sir) what then could hinder me from being ſucceſsful in ſuch an enterprize? Being thus reſolved, I ſoon procured neceſſary Habiliments for theſe my contrivances; and never miſcarried in any of them till now. Inſtead of going to Market, or riding five or ſix miles about ſuch a buſineſs, (the uſual pretences with which I blinded my Husband) I would when out of ſight ride a contrary road to this Houſe (wherein we now are) and here Metamorphoſe my ſelf, and being fitted at all points; Pad uncontroulably, coming off alwayes moſt Victorioufly. Not long ſince my Husband had about one hundred pounds due to him ſome twenty Miles from his habitation, and deſigned ſuch a day for its reception: Glad I was to hear of this, reſolving now to be revenged of him for all thoſe injuries and churliſh outrages he had committed againſt me: I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; wherefore I way-laid him at his return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him paſs me, knowing that by the ſwiftneſs of my Horſe I could eaſily overtake him, and ſo I did, riding with him a mile or two before I could do my intended buſineſs. At laſt (looking about me) I ſaw the coaſt clear on every ſide: Wherefore riding up cloſe to him, and laying hold of his Bridle, I clapt a Piſtol to his breaſt, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious Don ſeeing death before his face, had like to have ſaved me the labour by dying voluntarily without compulſion, and ſo amazed at his ſuddain ſurprizal, that he lookt like an Apparition, or one

lately riſen from the dead. Sirrha (ſaid I) be quick: but a dead Palſie had ſo ſeized every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his Pocket. But I ſoon recalled his loſt ſpirits by two or three ſmart blows with the flat of my Sword, which ſo wakened him out of that deep Lethargy he was in, that with much ſubmiſſiveneſs he delivered me his moneys. After I had diſmounted him and cut the Reins of his Bridle and Girts, I baſted him ſoundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his fleſh lookt like *Egyptian* Mummy. Now you Rogue (ſaid I) I am even with you; have a care the next time how you ſtrike a Woman (your wife I mean) for none but ſuch as dare not fight a man, will lift up his hand againſt the weaker Veſſel. Now you ſee what it is to provoke them; for if irritated too much, they are reſtleſs till they have accompliſht their ſatisfactory revenge: I have a good mind to end thy wicked courſes with thy life, but that I am loath to be hanged for *nothing*, ſuch a worthleſs man. Farewell; this money ſhall ſerve me to purchaſe Wine to drink healths to the confuſion of ſuch Raſcally and mean-ſpirited things. And ſo I left him.

She was about to have proceeded in ſuch agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up, two Gentlemen below deſired to ſpeak with her: craving my excuſe, ſhe went down, and in a little time returned with them: She made an Apology to me for ſo doing, adding that if ſhe had committed a crime herein, my future knowledge of thoſe perſons would extenuate it. By their effeminate countenances I could not miſs of judging rightly what they were, *viz.*,

Females. After ſeveral diſcourſes we grew ſo familiar, that the longeſt continued friendſhip could not boaſt of more freedom.

Having talkt and drank ourſelves weary, we concluded to lye all in one chamber, there being two beds: what our Nocturnal paſſages were, I'le give the Reader leave to imagine.

CHAP. XXXV.

Here he relates (modeſtly) what ſatisfaction he received from his new Female-acquaintance, and what occaſioned the two laſt income Amazons to attempt the hazardous enterprizes of the High Pad: with their Character and courſe of Life.

THough Melancholy Night had drawn her ſable curtains about her Hemiſphere, yet the coverled of our Opticks was not yet laid down to admit our active ſenſes to their uſual reſt and repoſe: obſcured darkneſs had every where proclaimed ſilence about us on penalty of diſtracted incompoſedneſs; yet we feared not the breach of thoſe binding Laws, by breaking our minds to each other interchangeably. My conquered foe (now my new friend) firſt began to relate to her old aſſociates the riſe of our late rencounter, and the ſucceſs, which ſhe expreſt with ſo much life and ingenuity, that they knew not which to value moſt, her wit, or my courage; but when ſhe came to relate the manner of the diſcovery of her ſex, ſo petulant and facetious was her diſcourſe, that

it occaſioned a great deal of laughter and mirth among us. Having throughly diſcourſt varieties, for further diverſion one of theſe late Incommers undertook to give us a ſummary of her Comerades (or Sifters) being therewith intermixt; now I muſt give her leave to tell her own Tale.

Sir, (for to you I apply my diſcourſe particularly, being wholly ignorant of what theſe two inſeparable Companions of mine well underſtand) I ſhall not trouble your ear with any thing but what is abſolutely neceſſary: laying aſide therefore ſuperfluous Preambles, let me tell you I was the eldeſt Daughter of a Vinter in *London*, a man lookt on ſo wealthy, that he was called upon for Alderman, having no more Children then a Son, my Self, and this my dear Sifter, my Metamorphoſed follower. My Brother I think was begot out of degenerate Wine, and that made him ſo degenerate from Virtue and a good Spirit: a hot fiery fellow, always on the fret, till his Cask or Carcaſs was pierced; and ſo I leave him as I found him, an empty Hogſheard.

This obſtacle being removed (the *Remora* to our fair promiſing Fortune) none were more extold and courted for Wealth and Beauty (rarely ſeen together) then my Sifter and ſelf; men of all ſizes, both of Wit, Eſtate and Stature, daily frequented my Fathers Houſe, pretending they came for the goodneſs of Wine there vended, till they had got an intereſt in our acquaintance, and then they unmaskt their meaning. Several overtures were made to our Parents, who like good domeſtick Polititians, ſeemed to like, to incourage them to continue coming for their

expence ſake: frequently they beſpake Dinners, vying who ſhould exceed in prodigality, thinking thereby to gain eſteem, while the old Fox did but laugh at them in private for their pains. My Mother had her trade at her fingers ends; for when ſhe would oblige any of them to any treaty, it was but calling him Son, or Sirrah you are a wag, my *Benjamin* muſt have the largeſt Portion, *&c.* By this means ſhe chained them to the houſe, and to engage them the more, permitted us to bear them company; but fearing leſt we might glut our Idolators by too long ſtaying (for we ſooner ſurfeit on delicates than courſer fare) our Mother would call us, pretending preſent buſineſs, and would then ſupply the place her ſelf; then would they charge afreſh, till they had blinded one another. I muſt needs ſay, my Mothers company was deſervingly deſirable: for though ſhe had paſt her ages Æquinox, yet her beauty appeared but a very little declining. In her youthful dayes ſhe was the wonder of her Sex, and was ſo generally talkt of among Beauty-hunters, that our Tavern was never empty, and happy was he that could procure the drinking of a glaſs with her at the Bar, but tranſported, if they could obtain the favour to have her company in a room: which for profit ſhe ſometimes permitted, and ſomething elſe, which my Father winked at gladly, becauſe he could not find the like expedient to enrich himſelf. She was comely, tall, and of a beautious bluſhing brown; her hair proper to her complexion, neatly put into curls and folds by Nature: Her face was made up of excellent parts;

as a quick eye and full; her circled brows graceful and big; her noſe not over Roman, with a full mouth; the largeneſs of the lips commendable, becauſe plump and red; her dimpled chin (which Nature had drawn, with a wanton touch of her Penſil) did ſingularly ſet out her looks moſt comely. Her neck was round, riſing, full and fat: her Bodie well fed, not fat; an Italian Don's delight. When any Gentlemen came in, me thinks I now ſee how ſhe leared out of her inticing Italianated eyes, able to confound a Saint. In ſhort, her hair was enough to enchant you into thoſe mazes, but that her looks were ſo neer, which hooked yours into her eyebals, full, black and rowling; and when ſhe had you, ſhe held you there. Neither was ſhe a niggard of thoſe gifts were ſo liberally beſtowed on her, but communicated a taſte thereof to divers; for as ſhe was naturally prone to whoriſhneſs, ſo ſhe gave her inclinations the reins, and at laſt became ſo impudent, that ſhe did frequently that in our ſights, which though we underſtood not, being too young, yet forceably drew a bluſh into our tender cheeks. Being in her prime, ſhe gave her ſelf ſo much libertie, that ſhe was a ſhame to her Sex; there was not any vice that was attended either by pleaſure or profit, but ſhe would be ſharer therein. And now being gulled with ſhadows and impoſtures, ſhe drew up the Portcullis of her heart, and laid the gates thereof wide open to her own ruine. Who would imagine, that a pleaſing countenance could harbour villany, or that a ſmile could ſet upon the face of miſchief?

But therein ſhe ſhewed her ſelf a Curtezan of the right ſtamp, that for her own advantage can entertain mans appetite with wanton dalliance, but will never make aſſurance of ſettled love. When men think themſelves moſt intereſted in her, then was it frequently that they were fartheſt from her. I am ſomewhat the longer in my Mothers Character, that I might the fuller demonſtrate what was the original that I ſo exactly copied in the actions of my own life. Did Parents conſider how prevalent their wicked examples are with their Iſſue, they would be leſs curious to cleanſe their houſes of dirt and duſt againſt the comming of their friends, and more careful not to ſee them hung with vices in the preſence of their Children. You ſee I know the difference between good and evil, becauſe I talk ſo well, though I act ſo ill. But to proceed. How is it poſſible the Daughter ſhould be chaſte, that cannot reckon up the adulteries of her Mother, though ſhe be nere ſo well in breath, without a dozen ſtops or intermiſſions at the leaſt? Such as are conſcious to theſe faults in others, cannot but be capable of them in themſelves. The hearing of them told, begets a willingneſs to try them: the ſeeing of them done, a wilfulneſs to do them. She preſumed I believe upon our indiſcretions as Children, perſwading her ſelf we had not wit enough to diſcern it. But alas! ſhe erred in her Cyphers, and was much miſtaken in her accounts: for we coming to years, did not ſtick to that in her ſight, which ſhe before would not forbear in ours. And with what face could ſhe reprove us?

The crooked wretch muſt not upbraid the lame,
Nor muſt the Moor the tawny Indian blame.

Her houſe did daily ſwarm with ſuch as pretended more then common kindneſs to me. Several my Parents approved of as wealthy, and propounded them to me, whom I only diſliked for want of comelineſs. One I confeſs I could have fancied highly for his wit, had not his formation been ſo extravagant and prepoſterous. O the innumerable quantity of Poetick brats which *Pallas*-like ſprang out of his head, and ſo peſtred my Chamber, that I could hardly ſleep for the trampling of their feet: ſome whereof appear'd ſo fair unto me from a Father ſo foul, that I have carried them in my boſome to converſe with them among the ſolitary ſhades. I proteſt civility could ſcarce keep me from laughing outright every time I ſaw him, his whole compoſure appear'd to me ſo ridiculous. For firſt, his head ſeem'd to ſink down into his breſt, his eyes ſtaring affrighted at the danger, whilſt his mouth continually gaped, as if it intended to cry out for help: his back and breſt bunched out, as if a wallet ſtuffed at both ends had hung over his ſhoulder behind and before. Though extravagant enough, you could not ſay he ſhewed much waſte. Had you ſeen him on a rainy day, by the length of his leggs (yet of dwarfiſh ſtature) you would have thought him mounted on ſtilts, and wading through the dirt with a boy at his back. Now let me skip over his perſon, and only tell you how I ſerved him, and then I have done with him. That day I ſaw him not, I had his repreſentation ſent me, which

was good diverſion, but his preſence was inſufferable: to the intent therefore that I might be rid of him, I ſent him theſe lines.

SIR,
You are the Son of Eſop, *for I find*
Legitimation by your ſhape and mind;
Deform'd ye are alike, thence 't is thought fit
That ſuch defects ſhould be ſupply'd by wit.
Your aſpect's monſtrous foul, yet don't complain,
Your iſſues fair, the product of your brain.
But ſtay, I muſt recal my ſelf, for know
My praiſes are like to your ſelf, too low:
Troth when I view you well, my fancy muſt
Imagine you much like a Capon truſt,
Or like Sir Hudibras, *nick-nam'd* All-feather,
Or like one ty'd both neck and heels together:
Nor do not think Pygmean Sir that I
Will fall in love with meer deformity;
Then court ſome Succubus, a fiend will be
A fitter match: ſo think no more on me.

Theſe lines ſo nettled him, that having belcht out ſome execrations againſt me and our ſex, I never heard more of him. To be ſhort, there was none could get any intereſt in me, but our Head-drawer, a neat flaxen-hair'd dapper fellow; ſo paſſionately we loved one the other, that we could not forbear holding ſome private correſpondence at nights. My Father at length ſuſpecting us, turned away his man, whoſe abſence I could not brook, and therefore reſolved to follow after, which I did, taking with me what

ready money my Father had in his cuſtody ; and finding out my dear Comerade, this was the reſult of our conſultation, that I ſhould cloath my ſelf like a man, and ſo travel together. It will be too tedious to relate how and whither we went ; but let it ſuffice to tell you, that after we had run through *France* and *Italy*, and wearied our ſelves in forreign parts, we concluded to return for *England*. We landed at *Dover*, having made an end of our voyage and money together, ſaving ſo much aswould purchaſe Horſe & Armes; for Padding was the way we agreed on to recruit our decayed ſtock. Many were the Robberies we committed, taking ſuch a courſe that the Devil could hardly detect us : for ſometimes when we had robbed, and fearing leſt we ſhould be taken by the Hue and Cry, it was but turning my horſe looſe, and then would I put on womans apparel (which I always carried in my Portmantle in ſuch expeditions) and getting up behind my dear friend, I paſt unſuſpected as his wife. This ſtratagem frequently proved a ſafeguard to us both. By this means we ſeveral times robbed houſes, under the pretence of my friends taking lodgings for himſelf and Wife. To tell you in what manner and how often we played our pranks under a double diſguiſe, would take up more time then is convenient. Wherefore I ſhall now wind up my ſtory: My Comerade in an unhappy enterprize received a ſhot in his ſhoulder, which proved Mortal, for not long after he died. Being then deſtitute of my dear companion, I had ſeveral thoughts of returning home ; but that I liked my trade ſo well, I could not be induced to leave it.

However, I went to my Fathers houſe frequently with roaring Blades; but they knew me not, though ſometimes they would ſtare upon me, as if their eyes would have ſtarted out of their heads for joy to ſee their old acquaintance. At laſt I took a convenient opportunity under the veil of courtſhip to diſcover my ſelf to my Siſter (here preſent) who underſtanding my courſe of life, and knowing well her own conſtitution, for my ſake reſolved to hazard all, and run one riſque with me. Having inſtructed her how ſhe ſhould rob her Father, as I had done before her, we met at a place appointed, and ſo took our journey hitherward. Now if our converſation may be any wayes pleaſing, and our ſervice advantagious, we are both your devoted ſervants. She uttered theſe words with ſuch a grace, that I could not forbear imbracing her. After we had plighted faiths, and mutually careſſed each other, we betook our ſelves to reſt, which you may imagine was little enough.

CHAP. XXXVI.

How he with his new female padding Comrade contrived notable ſubtil and ſafe ways to rob together; with a relation of ſome remarkable ſtories which were the effects of thoſe conſultations.

ANgry I was when I perceived the appearance of day, which I knew would unavoidably rob me of my preſent delight and pleaſure. But it was only my fear of being deprived of ſo much bliſs made me ſo groſſely to miſtake, for I quickly found my happineſs inlarged by the approaching light, my ſence of *ſeeing* being now made Copartner with that of *feeling*. Love had now his eyes reſtored him, who before only groped for the naked truth in the dark. Now did we begin afreſh to renew our late ſweet nocturnal paſtime; and could our bodies have any wayes anſwered our boundleſs deſires, our bed would have been the ſole concern we ſhould have minded, till that time which muſt put a period to this tranſitory life.

But to avoid the cenſure of ſluggiſhneſs, we all reſolved to riſe, and unanimouſly ſtrive & contend who ſhould make the beſt proof of the greateſt ingenuity in contriving what may give the largeſt ſatisfaction both to mind and body. As a *prælu-*

dium to our intended purpoſe, and a reſtorative to our decayed ſtrengths, we firſt reſolved upon buttered Sack, with other things of like comforting natures: & now finding our ſelves by this firſt eſſay ſo much beyond expectation revived and fitted for mirth and pleaſure, we ſtraight gave order for a Dinner to be ſpeedily prepared, whoſe compoſition ſhould be of the choiceſt viands. And that the time might not ſeem tedious in the interim, it was put to the vote what paſtime we ſhould make choice of for divertiſement. Some were for bodily exerciſe, but I was clearly againſt that, having ſo lately tired my ſelf with it: beſides my lameneſs, which was occaſioned by the ſhot I received in my legg from my Valiant Rencountreſs. It was at length agreed on by all, that we ſhould entertain our ſelves with Muſick and Diſcourſe. A match (ſaid the eldeſt Siſter) and to the intent you may ſee my freedom and forwardneſs to propagate your propoſition, I ſhall give my aſſiſtance firſt to heighten your ſpirits by vocal and inſtrumental Muſick: having thus broken the Ice, I queſtion not but you will prove ready followers, and ſwim with me in the ſame ſtreams of delight. Whereupon ſhe took up a Lute, and having praiſed that inſtrument above all other for its ſweet raviſhing harmony, I will now try (ſaid ſhe) how my voice will agree with it, and thus ſang:

What need we to care?
W' have enough and to ſpare,
What we gain we will drink and ſpend on't;
But when all is gone,
We will get more anon;
Then make it all fly, there's an end on't.

We will rob, we will ſteal
For our own Common-weal.
Let the Miſer be damn'd with his treaſure:
Our deſigns we will ſhape
For the jnyce of the grape,
Thus ſpin out our lives in our pleaſure.

We think it more fit
To live by our wit,
And hazard our lives on adventure;
We are Sons of the blade
Never bred to a trade,
We ſcorn'd to be bound by Indenture.

Not for flattery, but due merit, we could give her no leſs then applauſe: Which though that word may favour of ſomething of a complement, yet I will aſſure you there was no ſuch thing paſt between us; we knew how to improve our time to a far greater advantage, leaving ſuch empty vain expreſſions to ſuch, who have little elſe to do then to play with a Ladies Fan, or to conſume their times in combing their Perriwigs, not only in the Streets and Play-houſes, but even (irreverently) in the holy places of Divine Worſhip.

The pertinency of this Song to the practice of our lives, did as much pleaſe us all, as the ſweet harmony of that voice did raviſh our delighted ears. And leſt our ſatisfaction ſhould any wayes cool or abate, more Muſical fewel was laid on, to warm our benumbed ſpirits, if any ſuch unlikely thing ſhould happen.

Whereupon her Siſter (not making uſe of any inſtrument to aſſiſt her voice, being ſenſible it was good and natural) frankly, and with a becoming freedom, ſang to this purpoſe.

'Tis liberty which we adore,
It is our wealth and only ſtore;
Having her we all are free,
Who ſo merry then as we?
'Tis ſhe that makes us now to ſing,
And only She can pleaſure bring.

Chorus.

Since we then ſuch freedome have,
Wee'll purchaſe pleaſure, or a grave;
'Tis better ſo, then live a ſlave.

As I am free, ſo will be ſtill,
For no man ſhall abridge my will:
Ill paſs my life in choiceſt pleaſure,
On various objects ſpend my treaſure:
That Woman ſure no joy can find,
Who to one man is only joyn'd.

Chorus.

Since we then ſuch freedom have,
Wee'l purchaſe pleaſure or a grave:
'Tis better ſo, then live a ſlave.

What pleaſure is in full cram'd bags?
No more then is in Beggars rags:
Vnleſs made uſe of, what is Caſh?
A fine new Nothing, glittering traſh:
Being well employ'd, it is a thing
Which doth delight and honour bring.
Chorus.
Since we then ſuch freedom have,
Wee'l purchaſe money, or a grave:
'Tis better ſo, then live a ſlave.

About to have proceeded in this manner round, we were interrupted by Dinner coming up, which came as ſeaſonable as our ſtomacks could require. Waving all Ceremonies, we inſtantly fell to it without the tedioufnefs of long-winded Graces; neither were we long at it, our hands and appetites being alike nimble and quick to give the body its required ſatisfaction.

After Dinner we had various difcourſes about the vanity and imbecility of the female ſex: winding up our Argument, one ſaid, She would not be a meer Woman for the whole univerſe, and wondered that man, ſo noble and rational a Soul, ſhould ſo unman himſelf in his voluntary inſlaving himſelf to a Womans will: I wonder how they dare boaſt of Conqueſts, when they muſt acknowledge they are daily overcome by a weak and feeble Creature, Woman, a thing which for want of heat ſunk into that Sex.

With ſuchlike prattle we entertained our ſelves for an hour or two: and now it was put to the vote what courſe we ſhould ſteer, and what deſign we ſhould next put in execution. Different were our opinions for a while, but at laſt we concluded unanimouſly about the evening to ſet out and rob joyntly: the manner which we laid down was thus: The youngeſt ſiſter ſhould ride behind the eldeſt Siſter on a Pillion in her own proper apparel, and my *Virago* behind me in the like female garb; and this we judged to be the ſafeſt project we could propound: for who could be ſo ſenſeleſs to imagine us Robbers, riding in that manner double-horſed, and attended with the greateſt ſymptomes of innocency?

Hereupon we preſently fell to work, that is to ſay, endeavoured to get ſuch neceſſaries as were moſt convenient for our enterpriſe, as Pillions, Saſeguards and ſhort Swords for my females: Pocket-Piſtols they had already. Having gotten what womans attire we wanted, and all things ready, we mounted with Boots, which we dirted on purpoſe, to the intent thoſe which ſaw us might not ſuſpect but that we had rid many miles that day. It was about ſix of the Clock in the evening when we did ſet forth; we had not rid above two hours, but there overtook us four Horſemen, and demanded whither we were travelling? I anſwered them, To ſuch a place. Now did our two ſubtil Queans which rid behind us play their parts to the life, pretending a great fear of being robbed, and carried their buſineſs ſo craftily, that they gave the Gentlemen to underſtand their pretended fear and jealouſie:

and the better to cloak our deſign, pray thee my Dear (ſaid I) in a voice not over-loud, but juſt ſo that they might hear me, do not be afraid, I am confident they are no other then what they appear, that is, honeſt civil perſons.

Hereupon, one of the Gentlemen over-hearing, rode up cloſe to me, and comforted my ſuppoſed Wife behind, proteſting they were no ſuch perſons as ſhe imagined; that they were Gentlemen of good Eſtates all, and ſo far they were from offending any, that they would with the hazard of their lives defend the injured on the road: we ſeemed hereat to be much ſatisfied, returning them many thanks, and deſiring their company, which they kindly granted, ſaying, Come follow, wee'l lead the way gently on; and ſtand between you and danger. I was glad to hear them ſay they would ride before, for now I judged our buſineſs to be facile, and eaſily done. I now whiſpered behind me, telling her, as ſoon as ever ſhe ſaw me give a blow, ſhe ſhould immediately leap off the horſe, and make uſe of what weapons ſhe had: Her ſiſter had the like inſtructions given her.

My Brother, as I called him, riding up cloſe with me, received directions from me, that when we came to the bottom of the Hill, he ſhould at the ſame time with me directly diſcharge his Truncheon on the head of his foregoer, with all the force he could ſum up together.

When they leaſt ſuſpected us in the rear, we executed what we deſigned with ſuch exact time,

and ſo ſucceſsfully, that a divided minute did not difference their fall. Our Women were as ſwift as lightning upon them, depriving them of all the advantages of riſing, whileſt we ſet ſpurs to our Horſes, and overtook the other two afore, who inſenſible of what was done, were ſtrangely ſurprized and amazed, to ſee our Swords and Piſtols ready to diſpatch our Helliſh commands. Fear on a ſuddain had ſo chained up their tongues, as that they could not utter a word, till we forced them to it by threatning their unavoidable deaths if they did not inſtanly deliver. Being willing to ranſome their lives by their moneys, they gave us what they had, as not to ſtand in competition with a matter of eternal concern. Having reaped our deſires, we diſmounted them, and cutting their Girts and Bridles, we took their pieces with the Saddles, and threw them into an obſcure place. The Horſes were whipt over into a field. Our Priſoners we led into a little wood, where we bound them, as the reſt of our gang did, who were more expeditious then we in our work. Having finiſht our buſineſs to our hearts content and ſecurity, we mounted, and ſo rid back again to our old quarters. Our Landlord wondered at our ſpeedy diſpatch, but had like to have exſpired for joy, when he ſaw our booty was ſo conſiderable; for you are to underſtand he had a quarter-ſhare with us. Here did we carouſe and feaſt for a long time, not ſo much as thinking on any prize: and the truth on't is, my leg grew ſo bad by my ſhot, that I could not ride but in great pain. Wherefore I reſolved to lie ſtill till its cure ſhould be effected by my loving and skil-

ſul Landlady. My wound being healed, I reſolved to follow my cuſtom, and rob alone, not ſo much that my profit would be greater, but I began to be tyred with my three former dainties; nay more, they were ſo inſatiate in thoſe pleaſures they injoyed, that my ſtrength could not cope with ſuch exceſſes. Wherefore pretending buſineſs of privacy a little way off, I gave them the ſlip, knowing how difficult it would be to part from them knowingly.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Being now upon the Pad *alone, he baits at an Inn with which he was acquainted, and there by the Hoſtler is informed of a Booty, which he purſued, but was ſoundly banged for his pains, loſing both his Horſe, and what ſmall matter he had left.*

VEry loath I was to part with theſe *Amazons*, neither ſhould I, had not ſcarcity of Money called me away to look out for more. For no man could ever be better pleaſed with ſociety, then I was in theirs, enjoying ſuch perſons whoſe courage and fidelity might vie with the moſt approved male-friend, and reaping at the ſame time the choiceſt favours *Venus* can confer on her chiefeſt Favourites.

One remarkable paſſage concerning this *Female Robber*, I had like to have forgot; which was this: She would frequently *Pad* or rob on foot in Womans apparel, but ſo diſguiſed, that ſhe could not eaſily be known: Getting a Cuſhion, or ſome ſuch thing, (by putting it under her Cloaths to make her ſeem big with Child) ſhe would uſually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near ſome beaten Road. Thus had ſhe the benefit of viewing all that rid by. If ſhe ſaw any ſingle perſon by whoſe equipage ſhe might imagine him to have his Pockets well furniſhed,

before he came near her, ſhe uſed to feign her ſelf both exceeding ſick and weary, groaning in a moſt pitiful manner. What mans heart could be ſo obdurate as to paſs her by neglected, and without taking any notice of her? Who would not proffer a big-bellied Woman (tired and indiſpoſed) the courteſie of riding behind him for a little way to refreſh her? As ſhe told me, ſhe met with very few that did not take her up behind them, ſeeing her in that deplorable condition. Having rid a pretty way, ſeeing the Coaſt clear, and coming to a convenient place for to execute her deſign, ſhe would pretend the Gentlemans hat that rid before her offended her eyes; moſt in point of civility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again: then would ſhe with a Cord with a nooze, which ſhe had ready for the purpoſe, clap it over his head, and ſo whipping off the Horſe pull the Man after her; oftentimes half ſtrangling him, ſerving him as the *Mutes* do the *Baſſa's* with their black box and Silk ſtring therein, when they are deſigned for death by the *Grand Seniors* appointment and command. Taking the advantage of their being half ſuffocated, ſhe could eaſily firſt bind their leggs, making them ſo ſecure, that they were ſo far from reſiſting, that they were totally at her devotion.

But to return where I left off: before I took my leave of her, perceiving the temper of this brave noble Spirit, and that it was Poetically inclined, out of my true reſentment of her due merit, I gave her theſe lines, which ſhe thankfully received, though modeſtly denied to concern her in the leaſt.

Stand back ye Muſes, Mars, *come guide my Pen,*
To rank this Female Heroe 'mongſt thy Men.
So, ſo, 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,
'Tis ſuch a ſubject that I cannot flatter.
The Pantalooners ſtrut, and Muffetoons;
Taking great pains for to appear Buffoons.
They do ſeem men, and like 'em wear their Swords:
But dare not draw; ſuch may be kill'd with words:
Theſe love a Lady, and affect perfumes:
Who lighter *are, [(then what they wear) their*
Plumes.
Thou ſcornſt ſuch ſhadows, or Chimæra's, *which*
Are good for nothing, but a Womans itch.
Thou loveſt that man alone, that dares in ſpight
Of fate, ſcorn Death *himſelf in fight.*
Thy actions ſpeak thee man, *who dares deny it?*
Believe this truth, or if you dare, then try it;
'Twill be a favour to her, for they'l find.
That never man injoy'd ſo brave a mind.

Bidding this my *Minerva* and her aſſociates adieu, I rid on in the next road, without meeting any I thought requiſite to faſten on. At length I came to an Inn, where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refreſht my ſelf; but the Hoſtler prevented it, not ſuffering me to alight, telling me haſtily, that there was a Gentleman not an hour ſince baited there, who had in his Portmantue a conſiderable purchaſe; that he was a poor ſpirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an abſolute antipathy to a naked Sword, and that he was gone ſuch a road, *&c.* I ſtay'd not ſo long as to drink, but with all poſſible expedition made after him; aſcending a ſmall Hill, I diſcovered him, who rid an ordinary pace, wherefore I

ſlacked mine to cool my Horſe; however I ſoon overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well; riding down the Hill I did alight, purpoſely that he might overtake me, which he did; being paſt I mounted, and at the very bottom I bid him ſtand and deliver inſtantly, or he was a dead man. Sis, ſis, ſir, (ſaid he liſping very much) I-I-I-I am going home. I bid him not make theſe propoſed delays, leſt he ſmarted, and therefore wiſht him to diſpatch and give me his money, for I was informed (I told him) that he had a ſum behind him. T-t-t 'tis true (he reply'd) b-b-but it is my Fathers m-m-money. Hang your Father and his ſtuttering Coxcomb too, (ſaid I) I muſt have what you have. W-wh-why then you ſhall, (ſaid he) and with that drew out a pocket-piſtol and fired it at me; which made my horſe ſtart, and very much ſurprizing me, expecting not the leaſt reſiſtance from ſuch a ſeemingly ignorant and cowardly fellow; by that means he had time and liberty to draw his ſword (which was almoſt as broad as a Chopping-knife) and came upon me ſo furiouſly, that I am ſure I had not time to defend my ſelf: he ſo laid about him, that I ſoon lay at his mercy. I was forced to beg very hard for my life, which I obtained with very much ado: then he fell to my pockets, not leaving any ſuſpected place for money unſearcht: by which I gueſt him to have belonged to our profeſſion, and was not miſtaken, as you ſhall underſtand by and by. He went to my horſe, and viewing him, he ſeemed to like him very well. Wherefore coming to me (for he had cut me off my horſe) ha-ha-hark you (ſaid he) you are but a raw Thief, a me-me-meer Child, & it is but fit that you ſhould be ſent to a ma-ma-Maſter to

be ta-ta-taught knowledge, and be whipt for your foo-foo-liſhneſs. You ſaid you muſt have my Fa-Fa-Fathers money, but I tell you I muſt have your hau-hau-Horſe, and ſo farewell. He was ſo kind as to leave me his, which was a pitiful Jade, however neceſſity compelled me to mount him, and anger ſpurr'd me on to be revenged of the Hoſtler, but I better conſidered with my ſelf, that probably that horſe was known there, and ſo I ſhould be detected; wherefore I rid a contrary way, and took up my lodging in a place I never had been in before. As ſoon as I alighted, abundance of people flockt about me, ſeeing me all bloody, to know the cauſe thereof. Whereupon I related in a very doleful manner how this ſad accident befell me. That travelling to ſuch a place with about 150 pieces of Gold, I was ſet upon by five or ſix luſty Rogues, who rob'd me, and becauſe I made what reſiſtance I could, to ſave what I had, it being my whole Eſtate, they had thus barbarouſly mangled me, hacking and hewing me till I grew weary, and at laſt with much difficulty eſcapt with my life. There was a general ſorrow for me, pitying me ſo much that the Inhabitants ſtrove one with another, who ſhould ſhew me moſt kindneſs. A Chyrurgeon was preſently ſent for, who (as he was a Barber too) *Barbarian* like, dreſt my wounds; ſome were employed in procuring me Cordials, and getting me things neceſſary; others were ſent out to make inquiſition after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that ſerv'd me this trick, was (as I underſtood afterwards) an High-way-man himſelf, who being well born and bred, but his Father being either at that time unable or unwil-

ling to ſupply him with what monies his laviſh expences required: Nature having beſtowed on him a ſtout reſolute heart, and ſtrength anſwering his courage, betook himſelf to the *Pad*. In which profeſſion he behaved himſelf ſo gallantly, that he was ſtyled the Father or Governour of his Tribe. But his attempts prov'd not always ſucceſsful, ſo that there was hardly a County in *England*, wherein he had not been in Priſon; being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends, he ſtill came off; this did his Father and Kindred ſo frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly eſcaping with his life one time, and finding that his kindred matter'd not much if he were hanged, he ſubmitted himſelf to his Father, making a ſolemn proteſtation that he would never follow the like courſes again: whereupon his Father ſetled an Annual Eſtate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was queſtion'd about my Horſe by ſome perſons that knew him well, and taken on ſuſpition for murdering the Gentleman the right owner; which ſeem'd more than probable by various circumſtances. Firſt, this Gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his late ſucceſs, having conveyed him on the wings of ſpeed to an obſcure place, there to revel and congratulate his good Fortune by the ſpeedy ſpending his late purchaſe. Next, my many and dangerous wounds ſufficiently declared the great hazard of the two Combitants lives; but that which chiefly committed me, was the Gentlemans horſe, which I like an impudent inſipid

Coxcomb muſt ride on, which reaſon muſt needs ſay was the ready way to ride Poſt to the Gallows. Notwithſtanding the miſerable condition of my Carbonadoed body, I was incloſed between a pair of walls, and had undoubtedly been hang'd for being robb'd, had not the Gentleman appear'd again amongſt his friends; then did my accuſers ſlip their necks out of the collar, and none proſecuting me, I was diſcharged. Staying a little while in the Town for refreſhment, an old acquaintance there found me, of whom I cannot but give you a character, ſince the paſſages of his life hath been ſo remarkable and notorious, and from the ſhort relation of which I queſtion not but the Reader will reap much benefit and ſatisfaction. For indeed examples have ſo great an influence and power upon the actions of mans life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by preſident than precept. To this intent preceeding Generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Poſterity the lives of good and honeſt men, that thereby man might fall in love with the ſmooth and beautiful face of virtue, but have alſo taken the ſame pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked perſons, that by the dreadful aſpects of *Vice*, they may be deterred from imbracing her.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly ſtudyed the Law, and ſince made it his ſole buſineſs to practiſe the abuſe thereof.

ABout four dayes after I was diſcharged, there came into the ſame Inn where I lay a Gentleman, who hearing ſome of the houſe diſcourſing of the Robbery that was lately committed, he deſired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the robb'd Gentleman lay wounded in the houſe ; he inquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every month in the year. Very deſirous he was, if it might be no diſturbance to me, to give me a viſit, unto which I condeſcended, a ſervant to that intent deſiring to know my pleaſure. As ſoon as he entred the Room, I verily thought I knew him, though I could not for the preſent call to mind where I had ſeen him. I was ſo muffled about the Chops, that it was impoſſible for him to have any knowledge of me. He ſate down by me, & askt me various queſtions, to which I gave him *convenient* ſatisfaction. At laſt I recalled my memory, and askt him if his name was not ſo —— he anſwered me affirmatively. Dear friend (ſaid I) I am glad to ſee you : come, be not amazed ; my right name is ſo — with that he embraced me, and was overjoyed that he ſo caſually found me out. Laying aſide all formal niceties, I unboſomed my ſelf to him, not mincing the truth in the leaſt ;

for we know our ſelves *Birds of a Feather, Rogues together.* He condol'd my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me ſuch a *Plaiſter* for the wounds I had received, that ſhould prove very effectual. In ſhort it was this; by following cloſely the footſteps of his crafty advice I got of the Country the one hundred and fifty pounds I pretended to be robb'd of. He ſtayed with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleaſures the Country was capable to afford us. Being by our ſelves (for ſo we deſigned the major part of every day;) we diſcourſed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, *&c.* how we might lay new plots for our advantage: I gave him the epitome of what I had done, ſince I left him, who took more pleaſure in the relation of my Rogueries, than the *Quaker* did in Courting his Miſtreſs *Mare* near *Rocheſter.* But when he began to relate his Villanies, I was ſtruck dumb with admiration; and what cannot a man do if indued with the ſtrength of his natural parts, ſharpneſs of wit, quickneſs of apprehenſion, depth and ſolidneſs of judgement, with a tenacious memory? Now becauſe he ever had a ſmooth and inſinuating tongue, with the command thereof, I ſhall give him leave to tell his own tale.

CHAP. XXXIX.

The Life of a Law-abuſing Cheat.

Dear Friend,

FOr what am I beholding, it is to Nature alone; for as I am aſhamed of my birth, ſo I cannot condemn my Father for not beſtowing Education on me, ſince his condition was ſo low, yet his ſpirit ſo high, that he would not beg himſelf though ready to ſtarve, however would permit me, which was the ſole ſupport of his and my life. I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment; one day Fortune favouring, ſhe offer'd to my view a Commodity, which with confidence and dexterity I might carry off undiſcovered. My hands preſently ſucceſsfully effected what my mind ſuggeſted; it was but of ſmall value, the utmoſt I could get for it was a Link, with which that night I more than trebled what it coſt. This courſe I followed by night, and ran in errands by day, ſo that I had furniſhed myſelf both with Cloaths and Money. In proceſs of time I was admitted as a Servant into a Scriveners Houſe; my Maſter taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing-ſchool, where being capacitated for his buſineſs, he puts me into the Shop, and inſtructs me in his imployment. I had not been there long before I

made my ſelf very eminent, by ſtudying the Law, the Rudiments whereof I underſtood ſo well, as I knew how to ingroſs an Indenture. This made my Maſter eſteem of me, and that eſtimation made me proud; and being not yet bound his Apprentice, I thought I knew better things than to be his ſervant any longer, and ſo left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counſellor, till thinking I had Law enough, I took an Houſe, reſolving to ſee what I could do with it my ſelf. I ſollicited ſeveral mens buſineſſes, giving a general content, inſomuch that my credit and reputation increaſed dayly. Now did I marry for Wealth, having not the leaſt affection; for her face lookt much like a gammon of Bacon with the skin off. Sometimes I liv'd with her, too long for any delight I took in her; and being reſolv'd to be rid of her, this ſtratagem I uſed. I ſhewed her more kindneſs than formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would conſult with her about; which ſo wrought upon her love, that ſhe would have been content to have ſacrificed her Soul to my intereſt; and made her withal ſo opinionative, that ſhe judged every ſilly and unſavory expreſſion ſhe utter'd was no leſs than an *Oracle*. Having brought my buſineſs thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholy: very inquiſitive ſhe was to know the cauſe. My Dear, (ſaid I) I will not conceal any thing from thee; ſuch a Gentleman hath injured me, and I cannot reſt till I be revenged. Thou knoweſt my Nature, if wrong'd I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help. Come, come, ſaid my wife, let us go to bed, and there we will conſult. Being there ſhe

askt me how we ſhould bring our revenge about ? I ſeemed to ſtudy awhile,—I have it now (ſaid I) thou art with Child: he is one tender of his reputation; tax him for being the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full content: very loth ſhe was, becauſe of the talk of the people; but I ſatisfied this poor ſilly harmleſs ſoul, by telling her that as long as I knew her chaſte, it was no matter what others ſaid of her: whereupon ſhe condeſcended, and had the Perſon before a Juſtice, where ſhe ſwore poſitively that ſhe was got with Childe by that Gentleman. I preſently took advantage of her Confeſſion, turned her off, leaving them both to the diſpoſal of the Spiritual Court. This was my firſt prank.

One of my Clients another time, having bought a good handſome Tenement, had ſo much confidence as to put me in Poſſeſſion; my Client having purchaſed an Eſtate in the Country, was forced to be there to look after the management of his Rural affairs, for ſome certain time; I took this opportunity to forge a Leaſe to my ſelf, at an eaſie Rent, from him that conſtituted me his Truſtee. I ſoon found a Chapman for it, and ſold this Leaſe, receiving a good round Fine, which had been a penny-worth indeed, had the Title been good; unto this man I delivered poſſeſſion, who dwelt in it till the return of the right owner, who coming to his ſaid houſe, wonder'd to find every thing ſo contrary to his expectation, and demanding of the Tenant by what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor man ſhewed him his forged Leaſe, declaring that he had paid his fine to ſuch a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be

found. The Landlord could do no leſs than eject him his houſe, but finding him ſo groſly abuſed, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the Law to require ſatisfaction of me. The abuſed being very much troubled he ſhould be thus deceived, made ſo ſtrickt inquiry after me, and ſo unwearied in his ſearch, that at laſt he found me out, who ſaid, nothing ſhould ſerve his turn, but he would for this cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me; knowing of what a dangerous conſequence it was, I got my adverſary arreſted in an action of a thouſand pounds, who wanting Bayl was committed to *Newgate*, where grief releaſed me by his death from enſuing prejudice. I afterwards forged a deed of Sale of an Houſe hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man diſcovered my deſign, which made me the more inveterate againſt him and his. For this was alwayes my temper, though nothing could provoke me to expreſs my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my paſſions in that nature) yet if any durſt proſecute his own or friends right in oppoſition to me, I ſeldome left him, till I had either abſolutely undone him, or ſo impoveriſht him, that he ſhould be in no condition to hurt me, or help himſelf, making him at laſt confeſs that he had been better to have ſate down with his firſt loſs. And this I effected the eaſier, having a conſcience that ſcrupled nothing, and inſtruments that would ſwear anything. Theſe contrivances of mine made me generally reputed a *ſubtil* and *knowing man*, which brought me in multiplicity of buſineſs, with conſiderable in-comes. Neither did

I alone ſollicite for ſuch as were concern'd in the Law, but I had my concernment with *Lifters*, who did put ſo great a confidence in me, that what they got was left ſolely to my diſpoſal, either by ſale or pawn, for which I had my brokage, and ſomething elſe beſide. Now was I grown ſo famous (my Garb adding much to my fame, which was very ſplendid) that if any intricate controverſie, reference, or Law-ſuit arose among my Neighbours, they knew no perſon fitter to make their appeal to, than my ſelf for arbitration. If any again wanted either money, goods, nay a *cooler* of concupiſcence, I was adjudged the beſt *Procurer*. By theſe means I tumbled in money; and to let the world know it, I wore a ſeveral Suit every day, having beſides Habits ſuitable to any deſign. Now did thoſe that knew me not, even adore me; thoſe that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to ſhow me more than ordinary reſpects. I confeſſe had I now walkt in a *medium*, this had been the time (as they ſay there is a time allotted to every man) to have made my ſelf for ever. But Knaverie was ſo implanted in my Nature, that I could not forbear cheating the deareſt friend I had, if he intruſted me, circumvent every man that had more honeſty than my ſelf; and though I was ſure to damn Soul and Body, yet I muſt attempt the deſtruction of my adverſary, and to ſpeak the truth, I did not ſtick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick I ſerv'd an ancient Widow, I now and then find ſome internal gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from conſcience, becauſe I never knew what conſcience was; and this it is. A Gentle-

woman of my acquaintance, whoſe ſole dependance was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a conſiderable value to furniſh her Houſe, befitting the reception of any perſon of quality, for which ſhe was indebted, and having too often put off her Creditor, came to me, deſiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pound, telling me, that ſuch a Knight, and ſuch a Squire would ſtand bound with her; that will not do (ſaid I) for the Gentry have ſo many tricks to keep Citizens out of their money. That they will have better ſecurity. Perceiving her preſent neceſſities were very urgent, I knew I could do any thing with her; wherefore I perſwaded her to confeſs a Judgement: ſhe agreed to it. I told her ſuch a day it ſhould be done, but I would ſpeak with the Party firſt: according to the day prefixt I came, bringing with me a Warrant of Attorny, with a friend or two to atteſt it; ſhe confided ſo much in me, as to ſeal before ſhe receiv'd the moneys. That being done, now come along with me (ſaid I) to ſuch a place, where the Money lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a ſtop in a Lane by Carts & Coaches, and by the help thereof I dodg'd her, ſhe ſeeing me no more till it was too late; for I came with an Execution a while after, and carried away every pennyworth of Goods ſhe had; yet ſo civil I was, that I would not let her ſee it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble to her, to that intent about half an hour before I ſent for her in my name, far enough diſtant from her own Habitation. In this nature with ſome variations as to the manner, I ſerved ſeveral. Knowing I had a plentiful invention, which ſel-

dom failed me, I ſcorned to be ſo idle as to make uſe of one trick only, to bring about my ends; & as I had ſeveral, I never made uſe of one trick twice, for fear of being *ſmoakt*. I ſeldom went abroad, but I had ſome of my Complices at my heels, rarely going together, unleſs neceſſity required it. I went into a *Coffee-houſe* one day, and ſat me down at a common Table, (as the Room is to all Comers) a little after came in one of my *Imps*, and ſits himſelf down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman oppoſite to me perceiving, pray Sir (ſaid he) do me the favour as lend me a ſight of that Ring on your finger; I preſently delivered him; having viewed it and commended it, my Rogue muſt needs deſire a ſight of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking no harm, gave it into his hands; after he had lookt on it a while, he fairly marched off with it: I ſaw him, but would not in the leaſt take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. The Gentleman imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right Owner had received it again. A little while after, I demanded very courteouſly my Ring, excuſing his detention thereof upon the account of forgetfulneſs. The Gentleman ſtarting, replied, Sir, I thought you had had it long ſince. I told him I had it not; and as I delivered it unto him, I ſhould require it from no other perſon. He piſht at it, and in the concluſion bad me take my courſe; and ſo I did, having firſt taken witneſs of the ſtanders by, I ſued him, and recovered the value of my Ring twice over; producing two in Court that ſwore point blank, that the one of them ſold it me for ſo much—. One thing I confeſs I frequently made

uſe of, which was this; If any perſon dy'd, and none durſt adminiſter, but leave the Deceaſed's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be ſure to make my ſelf a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon ſue out letters of adminiſtration, and ſweeping all away, I wiped the noſe of other Creditors.

CHAP. XL.

What a notable revengeful trick he ſerv'd the Turn-key of Ludgate.

I Went on a time to ſee a Priſoner in *Ludgate*, but thinking to come out again as eaſily as I went in, I found my ſelf juſt as the Picture I have often ſeen upon the *Exchange*, wherein is repreſented a man plunging himſelf with much eaſe into the great end of the Horn, but with the greateſt difficulty can hardly ſqueeze his Head through the other end. Hell Gates ſtand ever open to let all ſouls in, but none are ſuffer'd to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turn-key, fretting my ſelf even to death for being detained from my urgent occaſions. At length he came: I told him what an injury he did me: inſtead of excuſing himſelf, he returned me very ſcurvy language, which provoked my paſſion ſo much, that though I ſaid little, yet my invention was preſently at work to be reveng'd. Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arreſted for an inconſiderable debt, adviſing him to turn himſelf inſtantly over to *Ludgate*. In a ſhort time the poorneſs of this mans condition was generally known, and he him-

ſelf pretending he was almoſt ſtarved, got liberty to put in what ſlender ſecurity he could procure for his true impriſonment, and ſo had leave to go abroad. In the mean time I had got a Bond of the Priſoner of fourſcore pound for the payment of forty, and ſo went privately and enter'd an action of Debt. I told the Priſoner the next time he went out he ſhould run away, which he did, neither was there any ſecurity to be found ; then did I bring my action againſt the Keeper, with my *Knights* of the *Poſt*, and ſo recovered the money.

CHAP. XLI.

What a freak he play'd upon a Jeweller.

I Was intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in *Foſter-Lane*, whom I often helped to the ſale of Rings and Jewels, ſo that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his work-room, I chanced to ſpy a very rich Jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the ſale thereof ; my Lady ſuch a one having lately ſpoke to me about ſuch a thing, He gladly delivered it to me at ſuch a price to ſhew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit ſtones. Before I went, I askt him if the Lady diſlike it, whether I might leave it with his Wife or Servant ? I, I, (ſaid he) to either will be ſufficient. I was forced to watch one whole day to ſee when he went out ; and being gone, prefently went to the Shop, and enquired of his Wife for her Husband ; ſhe

anſwered me, he was but juſt gone. Well, Madam (ſaid I) you can do my buſineſs as well as he, 'tis only to deliver theſe ſtones into your cuſtody; and ſo went off undiſcovered. Not long after I met him in the ſtreet, carrying diſpleaſure in his looks; Sir (ſaid he) I thought a friend would not have ſerv'd me ſo; but I deny'd it ſtifly. Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would ſue me: I valu'd not his threats, and ſo left him; I had not gone many paces before I met with a friend, that complain'd to me he had loſt a very valuable Locket of his Wives, it being ſtolen from her. Glad I was that this ſhould fall out ſo pat to my purpoſe; I askt him to give me a deſcription of it, which he did punctually. Now, ſaid I, what will you give me, if I tell you where it is? Any thing in reaſon. Then go to ſuch a Shop in *Foſter-Lane (the ſame Shop where I cheated the man of his Ring*) and there ask peremptorily for it; I was there at ſuch a time and ſaw it; and he would have had me help him to a Cuſtomer for it? I'll ſtay at the Star-Tavern for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket: The Jeweller deny'd he had any ſuch thing, (as well he might.) Upon this he returned to me, and (by this I had another with me) and told me what he ſaid. Whereupon I adviſed him to have a Warrant for him to fetch him before a Juſtice of Peace, and that I and my friend (which ſaw as much as I) would ſwear it. The Goldſmith was inſtantly ſeiz'd on by a Conſtable, and aſſoon as he ſaw who they were that would ſwear againſt him, deſired the Gentleman to drink a glaſs of wine, and then tender'd him ſatisfaction: But I had order'd the buſineſs

that it would not be taken unleſs he would give us all three general releaſes. He knowing the danger that might enſue to life and eſtate if we perſiſted, conſented to the propoſal.

CHAP. XLII.

He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his Houſe.

WAlking one time in the Fields withan Attendantor two, who would be conſtantly bare before me, if in company with any perſons of quality, but otherwiſe, *hail fellow well met;* I was got as far as *Hackney*, ere I thought where I was; for my thoughts were buſied about deſigns, and my wit was ſhaping them into a form; caſting my eye on the one ſide of me, I ſaw the prettieſt built and well ſcituated Houſe that ever my eyes beheld. I preſently had a covetous deſire to be Maſter thereof: I was then, as Fortune would have it, in a very gentile Garb; I walkt but a little way further, and I ſoon found out a Plot to accompliſh my deſires. And thus it was: I returned and knockt at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Maſter was within? I underſtood he was, and thereupon deſired to ſpeak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himſelf, deſiring me to walk in. After I had made a general Apology, I told him my buſineſſe, which was only to requeſt the favour of him, that I might have the priviledge to bring a Workman to Superviſe his

Houſe, and to take the Dimenſions thereof, becauſe I was ſo well pleaſed with the Building, that I eagerly deſired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The Gentleman could do no leſſe than to grant me ſo ſmall a civility. Coming home, I went to a Carpenter, telling him I was about buying an Houſe in *Hackney*, and that I would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the eſtimate. Accordingly we went, and found the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a ſtranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the Butts and Bounds of the Houſe on Paper; which was as much as I deſired for that time.

Paying the Carpenter well, I diſmiſt him, and by that Paper had a Leaſe drawn with a very great fine (mentioned to have been paid) at a ſmall Rent; Witneſſes thereunto I could not want. Shortly after I demanded Poſſeſſion. The Gentleman thinking me out of my wits, only laught at me: I commenced my ſuit againſt him; and brought my own Creatures to ſwear the ſealing and delivering of the Leaſe, the Carpenters evidence, with many other probable Circumſtances to ſtrengthen my cauſe; whereupon I had a Verdict: The Gentleman underſtanding what I was, thought it ſafer to compound with me, and loſe ſomething, rather than loſe all.

CHAP. XLIII.

How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good Security for an Hundred pound which he would borrow.

ATtiring my ſelf in one of the richeſt Garbs I had, I went to a Scrivener in *Bow-lane*, and acquainted him I had an occaſion for an Hundred pound. He demanded the Names of my Security. I told him where they lived, two perſons of eminent worth (whom I knew were gone into the Country) and deſired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modeſt. The Scrivener according to my deſires went and found them by report to be what they were, real, able, and ſufficient men: two or three days after I called upon him to know whether I might have the money upon the Security propounded. He told me I might, bringing the perſons; and appointed me a day. According to the time I came with two of my Complices attired like wealthy grave Citizens, who perſonated ſuch perſons ſo to the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the leaſt ſuſpition. The money being ready, I told it over, and putting it up in a bag, I and my inſignificant Bondſmen ſealed, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom, if he did not meet, I was confident he could never find out by reaſon of our feigned Names.

It chanced that my forged and fictitious name

ſhook hands with that of a Gentleman in *Surrey*, who was a great purchaſer, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after I had cheated this credulous Scribe, underſtanding likewiſe from him the exact place of his abode; and as the Devil would have it, his Chriſtian name was the ſame, as well as his Sirname, with that of mine I had borrowed. Whereupon I went to the Scrivener again, and told him that now I had a fair opportunity to benefit my ſelf very much by a purchaſe, provided he would aſſiſt me with 200 pound more. But Sir, ſaid I, take notice (in a careleſs and generous frankneſs) that it is out of a particular reſpect to you, that you might profit by me that I come, again, neither will I now give you any other Security than my own Bond, though I did otherwiſe before. But if you will deſire to be ſatisfied as to my Eſtate, pray let your ſervant go to ſuch a place in *Surry*, there is a piece of Gold to bear his charges, and I will ſatisfie you further for the loſſe of your Servants time. He being greedy of gain, very officiouſly promiſed me to do what I required, and would ſpeedily give me an anſwer. Imagining what time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and underſtood from him by the ſequel that he received as much ſatisfaction as in reaſon any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how ſtrangely the *Surry* Gentleman was ſurprized when the money becoming due was demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in Hangings the Scrivener lookt when he found himſelf cheated.

CHAP. XLIV.

How he was revenged on a Broker for arreſting him for ſome Goods he had paſt his word for upon his friends account.

NOtwithſtanding I dayly thus, almoſt, cheated one or other, procuring thereby conſiderable ſums of money, yet, by my drinking, Whoreing, and defending my ſelf from ſuch as I had wronged, I ſeldom kept any money by me. One day as I walk'd the ſtreets ſecurely, as I thought, a fellow faſtned his *Fleſh-Hooks* on my Shoulder. Looking about to ſee what this ſudden *clap* meant, I ſaw a fellow behind me, whoſe face lookt ten times worſe than thoſe *Philiſtines* that are pictured on Chimny pieces, ſeizing upon *Samſon*; his mouth was as largely vaulted as that within *Alderſgate;* his Viſage was almoſt eaten through with Pock-holes, every hole ſo big, that they would have ſerved for Children to play at Cherry-pit; His Noſe reſembled an Hand-ſaw; take both Head and Face together, and it appeared like the Saracens on *Snow-hill;* queſtionleſs ſome *Incubus* begot him on a Witch. Having a little recovered my ſelf from my amazement, I askt him what his buſineſs was with me? He ſpake but little, leaving his errand to his Mace (which he ſhewed me) to relate. Away they carried me to *Woodſtreet* at the Kings-head, from whence I ſent for Bail, which ſpeedily came to me: having put in Bail to one Action, I found another en-

ter'd: having done the like to that I found another, half a dozen more bearing it company; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble I had put them to, I deſired them to leave me, reſolving to go to *Ludgate*. The two Serjeants that arreſted me conducted me thither, having my name enter'd in the Paper-Houſe, as Horſes in *Smithfield* are in the Tole-booth: *Cerberus* turned the Key, and ſet the door as wide open as *Weſtminſter*-Hall Gate in the Term-time to Country Client, to receive me from my Hell-guides, which puts me in mind of that old Verſe,

Noctes atque dies patet atri janua ditis.

I no ſooner was enter'd into this inchanted Iſle, where ſome lie wind-bound ſometimes ſeven years together, but a fellow (whom at firſt ſight I took to be a Gardner, becauſe he had a kind of *Reddiſh* beard, *and turn'd up* withal) came to me, and underſtanding I was a Priſoner, ſeem'd mighty courteous, profering me his Chamber, for my Garniſh ſake. I accepted his kindneſs, and went with him to view this Cobweb-hung Chamber, for ſo it proved; I demanded of him who ſhould be my Bed-fellow? that Gentleman there Sir, ſaid he, that ſits by the fire-ſide: I could not forbear ſmiling, for he was a fat ſquobby fellow, though his brain ſeemed to be lean. I believe he was his own Barber, and was forc'd to make uſe of a Knife inſtead of a Razor; for his beard it was cut round like a rubbing bruſh. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have ſerved excellent well when he was dead to make cloke-bags of. Not content with this lodging, I fought out another; liking it ſomewhat better then the former, I pitcht on it. Aſſoon

as they underſtood my reſolution, they worried me preſently like angry Maſtiffs, barking for their Garniſh; I told them they ſhould have it to morrow, at which they grumbled like the greateſt ſtrings of a Baſe-Viol. Before I went to Bed I muſt pay for a pair of ſheets, that never came nigh *Holland* by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my Bedfellow brought me a Candle not ſo long as his noſe to light me to Bed.

The next morning I made it my buſineſs to get out aſſoon as I could; ſome I paid, others I nonſuited, and ſo got clear. Being out I reſolved not to reſt till I had revenged my ſelf on this Broker that had thus troubled me. I needed not means for the Devil ſeldom failed to help my inventions. I pretended to go into the Country, and in order to it pack'd up a Trunk of what I had moſt valuable and portable, and getting a Porter, ſent it to an Inn where a *Norwich*-Carryer uſed to lye, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter, I enquired for ſuch a Carryer, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week. I askt them them where I might lay my Trunk ſafe: they ſhewed me a Room; where bidding the Porter ſit down, I called for ſome Ale, telling the Porter, moreover, that I would have him be a witneſs of what there was in the Trunk, leſt I ſhould be diſhoneſtly dealt by; whereupon I unlockt it, deſiring him to take notice, which he did, and to be more ſure took an Inventory in Writing. Having pauſed a little, now I think upon it (ſaid I) Porter, it will not be ſafe to leave this here in a publique houſe, as in a friends, wherefore prethee go buy a Cord, and thou ſhalt carry it elſewhere.

Whileſt he was gone, I took out the chiefeſt things and put in rubbiſh, or what I could get, and ſo lockt it again. The Porter returning, we corded the Trunk, and carried it to this Broker, who took it kindly from me, that I would intruſt him after our controverſie, and received it. The next week I told him I would call for it, in order to the ſending it into the Country. The time being come, I took the ſame Porter with me, and demanding the Trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. Come, Porter, ſaid I, you muſt uncord it again, for I have preſent uſe for ſomething therein contain'd; which being done, I ſeemingly amaz'd, cryed out I was rob'd, taxing the Broker for ſo doing, villifying him for his knavery. He proteſted that he never lookt on it to his knowledge ſince the receipt thereof. Well Sir (ſaid I) this ſhall not ſerve your turn, this honeſt Porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he ſaw it at firſt. In a great ſeeming heat I left him, but before he ſlept I ſent a couple of Serjeants to him, who arreſted him; coming to tryal, by the aſſiſtance of two (reſolv'd Jurors) and this Porter, I overthrew him, and recovered above forty pound, beſides coſt of Suit.

CHAP. XLV.

How he cozened a rich Uſurer, and a young Tradeſman.

BEing reſolved to go and look out ſome of my Conſorts to rejoyce together for my good

ſucceſſe in my advantagious revenge, I met with an old comrade that had lately *heav'd a Booth, Anglice* broken open a Shop, who told me he had a quantity of good comodities, and deſired me to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in Brokeage in goods indirectly come by: I promiſed him I would. The next day he delivered what he had into my hands, I inſtantly carried them to an old Uſurer that would graſp at any thing, telling him I only deſired to Mort-gage them for ſuch a time, requeſting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking upon them to be thrice the value of that ſum, lent me freely the quantity o mony propounded, and in my ſight took the Goods and laid them in a place next his Bed-chamber. The ſame day I met with this friend, who demanded of me whether I had done his buſineſſe? No, not yet (ſaid I) it will be to morrow firſt: However let us drink a glaſs of wine, which he readily conſented to. Having drank pretty ſmartly, he could not contain himſelf (ſo powerful are the operations of Wine, as it frequently makes a man divulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruine) I ſay he told me whoſe Shop it was he robb'd, and at what time. I ſeem'd to take little notice then, though I intended to make good uſe of it. Parting with him, I went ſtraightway to the perſon rob'd, and told him that accidentally I was inform'd of his late loſſe, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honeſty, to aſſiſt him in the recovery of what was ſtollen from him. But before I acquainted him with any thing, I required of him a Bond of 10*l.* if I helpt him to his Goods; which he granted me. I adviſed him to get the Lord Chief Juſtices Warrant, which he

did, and taking ſome friends with him, I directed them where they ſhould go, and in what place they ſhould find them. He would have had me gone with him, but that I excuſed my ſelf, alledging it would be inconvenient. Taking a Conſtable with them, they went & found what they ſought for according to my direction, which they ſeiz'd, leaving the old man to condole his loſſe, which had been no great matter, had not his life lain in his Purſe.

Having thus carried on my miſchievous contrivances with continued impunity; the next I fell on was a young Merchant, to whom I went gentily habited, with a foot-boy waiting at my heels. I lookt out ſeveral Commodities, and laid them aſide, aſſuring him that I would e're long lay out a conſiderable parcel of money with him. We diſcours'd upon the price, and in the concluſion cloſed. The next day I appointed the Goods to be ſent home to my Houſe, and in the interim deſired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my deſign was to raiſe in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room (eſpecially) very richly hung with coſtly Furniture. My motion was entertained, and away we went, where I treated him nobly; the next day the Commodities were ſent in with his Servant, who expected his money, but I pretended that my Caſhier was abroad, and ſo deſired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be ſpoken with. Thus he did ſo often till the young man was weary. At laſt the Maſter himſelf came, who met me juſt as I was going out; who had not the patience to ask for his

money, but preſently railed moſt bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, *&c.* and that he would not put himſelf to the trouble of poſting me up, but would have a Warrant for me inſtantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himſelf, having a couple of my Emiſſaries ready for him againſt his return. It was not long before he came ſtrutting with a Conſtable. Perceiving him coming, I ſent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting it into the Conſtables hand, charged him in the Kings name to execute it upon ſuch a one, meaning the Merchant; who dared not deny it, but carried him before a Juſtice, before whom my two Rogues ſwore flat ſelony, and ſo was committed. Sending for friends, they adviſed him to make an end thereof. Whereupon I was much ſolicited; and upon conſideration I conſented to cauſe my friends to forbear proſecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of my villany, that hath proved ſo burdenſome to the world, and deſtructive to ſo many Families; wherefore give me leave a little farther to anatomize my own vicious nature, and I ſhall ſo lay open the Ulcers and Sores of my Impoſtumed Machinations, apparent to the ſight of every one, that the moſt Oſpray and Owl-eyed ſpectator ſhall confeſſe there never was a more neceſſary and commodious diſcovery revealed.

Brother, ſaid I, for ſo I muſt call you now, your *flagitious* deeds claiming that title, and muſt be compell'd I ſee to give you ſuperiority, the upper-hand, for I am confident the line of other mens inventions never ſounded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful miſchief. When I conſider how

powerful and imperious vice is of late grown ; and what horrid facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that ſwarm in all places: I admire that the Fabrick of the Earth is not continually palſyed by Earth-quakes, ſince there is a Creator above that overſees ſuch actions. That the Earth her ſelf (though an indulgent Mother) doth not receive into her Womb her off-ſpring, and therein for ſhame hide them : that the air is not choaked with Froggs, and that black pitchy miſts do not perpetually maſque the face of Heaven, and leave the world in obſcurity ; and that the Sun doth not hide his face from ſeeing ſuch enormous crimes, blacker than is the Eclipſe of his countenance : and laſtly, that the Sea is not turned to blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorſeleſſe uſages of one another ; our kindneſſe being commonly attended with diſcourteſies of a Vermilion hue. Thus Brother you ſee I am ſenſible of my miſcarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have proceeded, but that I found this diſcourſe grated in his ears ; wherefore I deſired him to profecute his ſtory, which he did in this manner.

CHAP. XLVI.

He diſcovers the ſubtlety of ſome Citizens he had to do withal by Broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the conſequent was, the ruine of young Gentlemen.

LIke an Hawk as I told you, I flew at all Game, not confining my ſelf to any one thing particularly: where I could abuſe the Law, I did; and if I had an opportunity to Trepan, I feldome failed, *&c.* Some part of my time I ſpent in the enquiry of what young Heirs were arrived, into whoſe ſociety I was ſure by one means or other to inſinuate my ſelf. Theſe Country Wood-cocks I knew how to catch with a City Spring; whom I very well underſtood, had rather be out of the world than out of the faſhion, who would be brave for the preſent time, though their Gallantry coſt them all their future Fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus: Sir, you undervalue your ſelf by the meannefs of your Habit, it being ſo unſuitable to your quality: if you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promiſing eſtate in reverſion; if you are willing, I will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in ſuch haſt as to ſend me preſently. He could not be ſo eager to have his gaudy deſires ſatisfied, as I forward to accompliſh them.

I knew where to go readily to one, with whom I went ſnips; in ſo ſaying, I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profeſſion. If I diſcover the fraud of any particular perſon, as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong; but if I detect by what deceitful and ſiniſter means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a green-witted Gallant, it may ſerve for an *uſe of inſtruction*. In the moſt famous Univerſities there are ſome Dunces reſident, that by diſgracing themſelves, diſgrace alſo their fellow Students. In the moſt virtuous Courts there will be ſome Paraſites. So in the moſt goodly and glorious City under Heavens Canopy, there are ſome Aſps lurking, that ſting the reputation of their Brethren by their poyſonous and corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all *Trades* but *Book-ſelling*.

But to my purpoſe: a young Gentleman coming out of *Norfolk* to ſee the City, and finding ſo many (beneath him in eſtate) gallant it ſo much above him, he grew very melancholy: hapning to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I askt him the cauſe of his ſadneſs? after I had preſt him very much, he ingeniouſly confeſt the true original of his penſiveneſs. Piſh, ſaid I, is that all? let me alone to effect what you deſire; neither ſhall you wait longer than the morrow. Leaving my Gentleman, away I went to a perſon fit for my purpoſe, and gave him an account of my buſineſs: glad he was, thankt me for my pains, promiſing me a reward, and would needs have me to a Tavern to conſult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repaired the next day to my Gentleman, who over-joyed to ſee me was

impatient to know whether his wiſhes were conſummated. Come along with me, ſaid I, and we will try what we can do. I have bin very importunate with the Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollifie him; it may be your preſence may do much. Finding him in the ſhop, I called him aſide, and told him this was the Gentleman. My young Gentleman, that would be a Gallant preſently, fell aboard him, and (with much fervencie and proteſtations) he woo'd the Mercer to credit him for 30 *l.* worth of Commodities. I call'd him aſide, ſaying, What will 30 *l.* worth do? take up 100 *l.* worth; and what you uſe not, I'll diſpoſe by ſale, to furniſh your Pockets with money. He thankt me kindly for my advice, and returned to the Mercer, who askt him, If he ſhould credit him with ſo much, what ſecurity would he propound? This ſtruck my young Gentleman as mute as a Cods-head. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to ſay, plaid the *Rope-maker*, being extreme *backward* to truſt him: Bonds he refuſed, Judgements he would not hear of, Statutes he ſcorned: for, ſaid he, Gentlemen of late have found out ſo many tricks to cozen their Creditors, (I by the ſame means having had ſeveral Collops cut from the body of my eſtate) that I will not credit any more: whereas he ſpake this only to grinde the blunt appetite of my *Commodity-taker* into a *ſharper edge*, and make him more greedy of his own ruine; imitating in this a cunning and deceitful, though petulant and wanton Curtezan, who is nice when a ſick-brain'd young Gallant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindneſs, only to make him more fierce upon his

own confuſion: holding him off like a Fencer, a month or two, that he may come up the more roundly to her purpoſe. But to the matter. My Gentleman being as it were denied, I ſeconded him thus: Sir, you know not what you do in refuſing to credit this Gentleman; he is his fathers heir, a man of a vaſt eſtate, and very aged: This his ſon is about a very great Match, a rich heireſs; and though he hath not money for the preſent, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of *Commodities*, you need not doubt your payment; and it will do him at this preſent a thouſand pounds worth of good. The Mercer began to hearken to this, and proteſted to my *Green-gooſe* that he would be glad to do any a pleaſure, ſo as not to injure himſelf; that if he could but poſſeſs him with a belief that he ſhould have his money in ſix months, he would freely let him have 100*l.* worth of what he pleaſed. The yong Gentleman proteſted it, and I warranted it; and the Mercer (though ſeemingly loth) condeſcended, upon this Proviſo ſtill, that he ſhould procure ſome man elſe to be bound with him, as good as himſelf: for, ſaid he, we are all mortal, and not having a leaſe of our lives, we may die before to-morrow; where then is my 100 *l?* Signior Unthrift is once more put to his *non-plus*; but at length he fell to intreat me to do it, who would not by any means; and ſo we parted. He would not let me reſt for two or three days together; ſo that at laſt, provided he would give me 10*l.* I agreed; and ſo we went again to the Mercer, and entring into Bonds, we had the *Commodities*. Having made my yong Gentleman an abſolute Gal-

lant, I went to ſell what was left, of which I made 40 *l.* but I made my Gallant to be contented with 30. alledging, that when goods came once to be ſold, they will not yeild the moiety of what they coſt, though new: and out of that 30*l.* I had my 10 *l.* for ſuretyſhip. Thus I perſwaded him to be very well ſatisfied. He revels about, whilſt I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as brains. Now doth my Mercer dream of nothing but his pay-day, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young Novice not minding it, the Mercer invited him to a dinner in *Fiſh-ſtreet.* Dinner being almoſt ended, for a third courſe came up a couple of *Sergeants* ſtewed with *Mace*, who arreſted him at the ſuit of the founder of the feaſt. Not procuring Bail, he was carried to the Counter, where he lay ſome time. His friends hearing of it, endeavour'd to get him out, by ſuing out an *Audita querela.* My Mercer hearing of that, adviſed with me what was beſt to be done. Agree, ſaid I, with ſome Officer in the Exchequer, and turn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him ſo much money: for the Chancery will not or cannot allow any thing in ſuch a caſe againſt his Majeſty. He ſo doing, did his buſineſs for the preſent. Thus have I read, when Jews have bought a red-hair'd boy, at firſt they cloath him in ſilks, raviſhing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have Muſick from his ears, or Banquets from his taſte; and thus uſe him, till they ſee he is plump, fat, & fit for their purpoſe: but when the poor boy leaſt thinks of his imminent ruine, he is taken by a brace of ſlaves, and

tyed up by the heels, ſo beaten by degrees to death with Cudgels, purging the rankeſt poyſon out of his mouth, and making Mumy of his fleſh. I ſhall leave it to the Reader to make application. In ſhort, I perſwaded the Mercer to take a Bond of 500*l.* of his priſoner, to be paid after his fathers deceaſe. This Widgeon being in the nets, ſealed to any thing for his liberty. He was not the firſt ſo ſerved, by thoufands: and that is the reaſon there are ſo many Creſted Citizens: for Gentlemen being begger'd by their Extortion, they have no other means then to *fall in* with their wives, *purchaſing* from them a ſupply. This is it that makes the road every where ſo full of High-way-men, who will borrow of men when they have little minde to lend, but not without giving them *Bonds*. This makes *Tyburn* the Metropolitan, and other petty Gallowſes, have ſo many *hangers on*; and this is the cauſe ſo many ſuch Citizens ſons are plagued after their fathers deaths, as their fathers when living have plagued others. Theſe are the Boars that plow up whole acres, nay fields of Gentlemens lands with their ſnouts: theſe are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards; and theſe are they, whoſe fiery conſciences drink up whole Fiſhponds at a draught; and laſtly, they are the *Hurricanes* that root up the trees of whole Woods together. From ſuch *libera nos Domine.*

To conclude, take this as an infallible Maxime, that the worſt of Creditors are either very rich, or very poor men. The rich man can ſtay for his money, and ſo will have all or none; the poor will have no pity, nor indeed can he, ſince the debt may be all he is worth.

CHAP. XLVII.

How he infinuated himſelf into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he uſed to build his intereſt upon their ruine.

HOw can that *Tyrant* flouriſh in his Commonwealth, when the foundation of his Reign was built on the Sepulchre of the right and lawful Heir he murther'd? And how can that man proſper, whoſe rife he rear'd from other mens ruines? Such was I, who having oftentimes been gulled by Knaves, turned Knave my ſelf, and did as greedily hunt after ſuch I could make a prey of, (to repair the damages I had ſuſtain'd by others) as the devil doth after Uſurers fouls, being on their death-beds, reſolving to live like a Bandite on the ſpoil. Like an old Souldier having been beaten to the world, (or indeed more properly, beaten by the world) I began to ſummon up all my ſenſes and my idle brains to a ſtrict account, how to get that up again, my riot and folly had ſpent; and thinking I had no way to recover my ſelf, but by what ruined me, I did caſt about me, and fiſhed after this manner. I prepared my lines, provided baits, and made ready my hooks, which had ſuch conſtant and firm barbs, that after I had ſtruck a Gudgeon in the gills, I was ſure to hold him, though I ſuffer'd him to play a little in the ſtream. The Flouds I daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, Play-houſes, Cock-pits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving no place unſearch'd, wherein there might be any thing worthy a Bait. If ſuch I found, like a ſhadow I was never from his heels, but followed

him clofe, efpecially if he was a young Country-Gentleman, whom his father had fent up to fee faſhions in the Citie: and rather then he ſhould go out as raw as he came in, I failed not to feafon him in one of the Cities Powdering-Tubs. Firſt, I made it my buſinefs to know what his father allowed him; then would I ſtudy his natural difpoſition and inclination, and accordingly fute my ſelf to him, ſo that by my behaviour towards him, he ſhould look upon me to be his *Maſculine Sweet-heart*, his boſom-friend, and that like *Hippocrates* twins we muſt needs live and die together. Having accordingly by much ſweat and induſtry adapted and fitted him to my humour and purpoſe, and wrought him to ſuch a ſoft and waxen temperature, that I could make what impreſſion I pleaſed on him, I brought him acquainted with ſome of my accomplices, who all vail'd bonnet to him, invited him from Tavern to Tavern, not letting him expend a peny; or if he wanted money, I would ſupply him with four or five pound. This Innocent (not having yet ſcented the Citie-air) all this while thinks himſelf in *Elyſium*, fancying he enjoys more delights then the *Turks Paradiſe* affords; and withal imagineth himſelf not a little graced, to be entertained among ſuch ſeeming Gallants. For my Rogues (give me the liberty to call them ſo) lookt on it as the greateſt piece of policie to wear good cloaths, though their pockets were worſe furniſhed then a Chandlers box, that ſeldom hath any greater money in it, then Two-pence, Three-pence, Groats, *&c.* Sometimes my Cully did meet with ſome that knew me, who would adviſe him to have a care of me, and not to keep me company, for I was a dangerous perſon,

and in the end would be his ruine. Whereas it was but to little purpoſe: for when youth is in its full vigour, and height of deſire, neither wholeſome counſel, nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of their future deſtruction. Still I continued my feeming reſpects and kindneſſes to him, which I onely intended as the *Præludium* or Prologue to that Play which was to come after: for my Country *Cock-brain* being honeyed with theſe ſweet delights, thought that whatever he could return, was not able to give an anſwerable ſatisfaction. Watching a fit opportunity, (when he was well warm'd with Wine) then would I perſwade him, (which was no difficult matter) to be bound with me for ſo much, *&c.* which I promiſed I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience: but he knew not, that what I borrowed for an hour, I borrowed for an age. When I could ſqueeze no more juyce out of him, then I left him to the mercy of his Creditors, to be dealt withal as the Popinjay in the Fable, who being ſummoned to appear with the reſt of the winged Tribe, before their King the Eagle, borrowed of all the finer ſort of birds feathers to adorn him, and make him appear ſplendid before his Soveraign. After he was diſmiſs'd, he proudly flutter'd up and down the woods with his borrow'd gallantry; which made the little Titmouſe, Wren and Hedge-ſparrow adore him. They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, demanded again their own, and ſo deplum'd him, whereby he ſeem'd ten times worſe then thoſe ſmall birds that lately did admire him. Such Popinjays are they, who borrow of every Citizen, to make themſelves ſhew glorious in the worlds eye; but when the Creditors ſhall

come and claim their own, and get it, they will ſeem more foul, then lately they did fair. So various and villanous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an Owl, to appear onely by night in the Citie. If I did at any time tranſgreſs that cuſtom, I did then like the dogs of *Egypt*, which when they come to drink of the river *Nilus*, lap here and there, not daring to ſtay long in one place, for fear the Crocodiles that lie lurking within the banks, ſhould pull them into the Current: ſo did I, skulking here and there, firſt to one Tavern, and then, not daring to ſtay longer there, ſhifting to another. But to proceed.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How he could make Ink that would diſappear from the Paper, accordingly as he pleaſed, by the ſtrength or weakneſs of the compoſition. His imitating exactly both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon.

READing one time a book that an Italian writ, I found therein a deſcription of ſeveral ſorts of Ink, and how to make them; but more eſpecially, an Ink that ſhould laſt a week, a month, or two, according to the compoſition. I made an experiment, and found it hit indifferently well: perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I

reſolved not to reſt till I had found out the true Receipt; which I did at laſt, by much ſtudy and induſtry. Having obtain'd it, I ſo highly valued it, that methought I would not have parted with it for the *Philoſophers Stone.* Not to be tedious, I did abuſe therewith many perſons with Bonds, Leaſes, Deeds, Acquittances, *&c.* there appearing in ſuch a time nothing but the bare Seal, the paper remaining as white as if never writ on. By the help of Graving, I could counterfeit Seals exactly, inſomuch that I have often cheated the *Grand Cheater, Oliver*, the late hypocritical and bloudy Tyrant; and by an exact imitation of an hand-writing his Council was too ſenſible of what Cheats I put upon them. That I was no bungler at it, I ſhall give you this inſtance. Accidentally coming acquainted with a Gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featur'd, her ſparkling eyes ſet me all in a flame, ſo that I reſolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Oftentimes I viſited her, and by the modeſty of my carriage towards her, ſhe perceived not my burning luſt. One time having a fit opportunity, ſhe being alone, I communicated my thoughts to her: waving what amorous diſcourſe paſt on my ſide, I would have fallen roundly to the matter; but ſhe underſtanding my intent, cry'd out; whereupon I deſiſted, ſeeing it was to little purpoſe if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, ſhe expreſt an abſolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vow'd ſhe would neither ſee nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared ſhe was in earneſt; ſo that I ſaw 'twas time to be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a ſheet of paper of her writing, and clapt it into my pocket;

and ſo took my leave. Coming home, I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge: and thus it was. I underſtood from her whereabout, her husband liv'd, and what his Chriſtian name was, with ſomething of her concerns; that her husbands mother could not endure her, (becauſe her ſon married her without a portion, though a wife, diſcreet, vertuous, and handſome woman) and whereabout he liv'd, with name, *&c.* I counterfeited a Letter, as from this vertuous Gentlewoman, to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more conſtant, ſhe had no more to ſay to him, *&c.* The contents you ſhall have in the Letter it ſelf, as followeth.

Moſt beloved by me of men!

I cannot blame you ſo much as my ſelf; it is cuſtomary for man to proffer, but then it ſhould be a womans duty to refuſe: but alas! how could I withſtand the powerful perſwaſions of your eloquent tongue, eſpecially when they carried with them ſo much ſeeming reality of affection and conſtancy? I finde you now like other vow-breaking men, who having obtained the fruition of their deſires, their appetite nauſeates that which before it ſo eagerly crav'd. Call to minde thoſe many endeared and melting expreſſions you did voluntarily utter, when I was encircled in thine arms; and if that will not reduce you to your former ſtation, and good eſteem of me, now ſo much ſlighted by you, conſider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, not caring how much I wronged him to pleaſure you. If nothing will prevail, know then, this ſhall be my reſolution, that ſince you have alienated my affection

from my Husband, and you thus unworthily desert me, I will procure a Subject elsewhere shall out-do you in every thing, as much or more as you have out-done my Husband. I am young, plump, handsome, and buckſome; what then should hinder me from enjoying such a person, my heart will not rest satisfied till I have found? which having done, he shall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will desire, but never shall re-assume your place again within my breast. Farewel.

This Letter was sent to her Mother-in-law in the Country, who was glad she had matter to impeach her daughter to her son. Assoon as he saw the Letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have sworn it to be his wifes: but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to sink down for grief. Perturbation of minde would not let him rest in his Country-dwelling, but rid up Post to *London*, where he soon found out his wife. The unexpected sight of him at first surprised her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occasions were very urgent in the country: however, like a truly-loving wife, she was over-joy'd to see him, and would have kiss'd him, but that he rudely thrust her off; which action struck her to the heart, and overwhelmed her in amazement. Prethee, Sweetheart (said she) what is the matter? There, read it, said he, throwing her the Letter. She read it, and swounded. He let her lie, not caring whether she liv'd or dy'd; and had dy'd indeed, had not her Maid come up accidentally. Being recover'd, he ask't her whether it was her

hand. She could not deny it: which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilſt ſhe was ſilent with aſtoniſhment, taking ſuch inward grief, that ſhe betook her ſelf to her bed. Nothing could comfort her, neither would ſhe take any thing to ſuſtain life. Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of ſomes lives; in the ſame hand I ſent him a Letter, wherein I gave him an account of the deſigne, proclaiming to the world this Gentlewomans honeſty, unſpotted and unſtain'd. The Gentlewoman recover'd in a little time after; but this trick had too much ſeiz'd upon my Gentleman; for like a fool he fell diſtracted in a ſneering poſture, as pleas'd to think his wife was honeſt *notwithſtanding*. I have been ſomewhat long in this relation, becauſe it was a paſſage very remarkable. Now I ſhall tell you how I cheated a young Citizen and an Upholſter.

CHAP. XLIX.

How he cheated a young Citizen newly ſet up, and an Upholſter.

A Young Citizen about to ſet up, and wanting ſome money, was directed to me, to procure ſo much as his preſent occaſion required. I treated him very civilly, promiſing him very fairly; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day; which being come, contrary to my expectation or deſire, he brought a crew with him, to ſee the receipt of

the money. Judging this time inconvenient for my deſignes, I told him I expected the money this very day; but if he pleaſed to ſeal the Bond, and have it witneſſed, he might keep it himſelf; and bringing the Bond with him the next day, he ſhould not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone. I diſcours'd with him a while: at laſt I deſired him to let me ſee the Bond; which he delivered into my hand, being ſign'd and ſeal'd before. I took this as a good and lawful livery, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant. I told him he ſhould know when the Bond became due. Why Sir, ſaid he, you will not ſerve me ſo? Doſt thou think I am ſuch a fool, ſaid I, to lend thee ſo much money upon a piece of paper, which next Showre of rain will waſh away with thy ſelf into the common Shore? Shall I truſt thee, when thou canſt not truſt thy ſelf? At this the young man began to be clamorous; but one of my accomplices ſoon ſtill'd the Clapper of his mouth, by a ſound knock on the pate, which laid him aſleep: and in the mean time we marcht off. Juſt as the money came due upon the Bond, my flock-pated Cit was gone to tell his friends in the Country the danger of Counters and Priſons in the Citie. At another time I wanted money to ſupply my preſent occaſions, but could not inſtantly think of any other means of aſſiſtance in this neceſſity, but to ſell my Featherbed, together with its appurtenances. Whereupon I packt them up, and deſired a friend to go with the Porter,

and ſell them to an Upholſter. My friend did ſo, and brought me half their worth; but withal, that which was more then their worth, the mans name. A week after, I wanted my bed, and reſolved to have it again. To that end, I went to him that bought it, and asked him before a couple that I took with me, whether at ſuch a time he had not ſuch commodities ſold him. He acknowledged that he had. I deſired to ſee them: and he as readily granted it. Sir, ſaid I, theſe are my Goods: I was lately robb'd, and now I know you are the Receiver: I muſt have you before a Juſtice, to know how you came by them. The naming of a Juſtice ſo terrified this ſilly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would ſwear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. I ſwore they were mine, (and therein I was not perjur'd) but told him I could not receive ſtollen Goods ſafely, though they were mine own. In ſhort, I recovered my Bed and furniture, with money to boot.

CHAP. L.

He is at laſt met withal, and laid up in Priſon by one of his Creditors. The abuſes and tricks Sergeants uſe to arreſt men. Laſtly, he eſcaped, by putting a trick upon his Keeper.

HAving gone thus far without any remarkable check or controul, at leaſt any ſuch as might bear a proportion with the villanies and

injuries I had done, I abſolutely thought that nothing was diſhoneſt or difficult that had in it either pleaſure or profit. Meeting with no moleſtation or hinderance, I took my freedom to do even what I liſted. One time thinking my ſelf moſt ſecure, I then found my ſelf in the greateſt danger, being arreſted in an Action of 5000 l. Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was ſtill too cunning for them: yet at laſt they over-reacht me; it will not be amiſs to relate in what manner. They had information, that every week I had Letters come to me out of *Eſſex*, and that the Porter which brought them had ſtill free admittance to me: wherefore the Serjeant provided himſelf a Frock, and a Rope about his middle, which would better have become his neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my lodging. Knocking at my door, and being demanded his buſineſs, he told them he had Letters for the maſter of the houſe, nominating me. Looking out, and ſeeing no one but a ſeeming Porter, I order'd that he ſhould be let in. Affoon as he was enter'd, he bid my Wor ſhip good morrow, and in ſtead of delivering me his Letters, ſhewed me his Mace; which I wiſht might be the onely ſpice and meat too he ſhould eat for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betraid, I went quickly along with him to the Compter; and afterwards, finding I could make no compoſition with my Creditors, turned my ſelf over to the *Kings-Bench*. Various are their tricks and inventions to enſnare whom they intend to arreſt. Sometimes I have known a Creditor ſeem to comply with his Debtor, telling him

that paying ſome inconſiderable matter, his Bonds ſhould be renewed with longer time: then appoint him a place of meeting, where he ſaith he will bring a Counſellor and Scrivener; a Counſellor to adviſe them in management of their buſineſs, and a Scrivener to write what they determined. He acquainted a Serjeant and a Yeoman with his Plot, who were as hot upon it, as an *Italian* on a Wench of Fifteen. The Serjeant going with a Barreſters Gown on his back, and the Yeoman with his beard cut as cloſe as a Stubble-Field, with a Pen in his ear, and ſome Parchment in his hand, effected their deſigne without ſuſpition. A Merchant I knew, that intended to break and go beyond Sea, was betraid by his ſervant, who informed his Creditors that juſt at ſuch a time his Maſter would be gone; that on the morrow he would ſend for Coopers to hoop ſome Dry-fats to pack his goods; and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they muſt make that their time. Some Sergeants were preſently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red caps, canvaſe breeches, with Ads in their hands, and hoops about their ſhoulders, went to the Merchant, and were entertained whilſt he was giving them direction; but in ſtead of hooping the Dry-fats, they hoopt him in their arms, and arreſted him. Before they parted with him, they made him part with ſo much money as would ſatisfie his Creditors and them; and made him ſee them beſides, not to enter any more Actions againſt him. They will change themſelves into as many ſhapes as *Proteus*, to bring about their deſignes: ſometimes like a grand wealthy

Citizen, othertimes like a Country fellow newly come to town, with boots and ſpurs all dirty. Now as I have related their manner of arreſting, ſo let me in ſhort inform you of their uſing (or rather abuſing) priſoners. Firſt they enquire of the perſon whether it be the firſt time he was arreſted: if ſo, then they know the better how to deal with him: perhaps they will carry him to the Tavern, pretending to do him kindneſs, where they will adviſe him to ſend for ſome friend; and one of them will be the Porter himſelf; but in ſtead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his Creditors, and perſwades them to uſe this opportunity to recover their debt: mean while, the other that is left behinde doth *milk* him. The meſſenger returning, ſorrowfully tells him his friend is not at home. Getting as much as they can by ſpunging, and ſucking the very *heart-bloud* of his pocket, the Compter muſt be his refuge at laſt. Sometimes, when they ſee a man in fear of Arreſting, they will without warrant of the Creditor give him a caſt of his Office, which they often do before they enter their Action; and have ways to prevent any miſchief that can come by ſearch of the Offices. Other times, for a fee, they will ſend to the party to keep out of the way, as was concluded beforehand. Oftentimes, upon an Arreſt, if the Creditor ſtand not by, they will let the partie eſcape for a Brace of *Angels*, or ſo; and tell his adverſary that he cannot ſet eye on him. And whereas their Fee for an Arreſt is to be but 1 *s.* yet will they hardly be perſwaded to do their Office under a *Crown*: and albeit the Statute ſay that the partie arreſted ſhall pay but one *Groat*,

I will not excuſe him for an *Angel.* If a man oppoſe them, or endeavour an eſcape, they will both *gripe* and *pinch* him, and afterwards clap an Action of *Aſſault and Battery* on him at their own Suit. I could ſay more of them, but that for fear, I muſt be favourable, who am now, as I tell you, a priſoner in the *Kings Bench*, which may be called *The Bankrupts Banquetting-houſe*, where he feaſts himſelf on diſhes borrowed from other mens tables; or, *The Prodigals Purgatory*, and *A Peſthouſe for decaying Citizens.* Weary of this place, wherein are as many maladies and miſchiefs as flew out of *Pandora's* box opened by *Epimetheus*; I invented this ſtratagem: One day I pretended much buſineſs abroad, and ſo got leave to go out with my Keeper, reſolving not to return with him. Having been from Tavern to Alehouſe, and ſo to Tavern again, pretending the diſpatch of much buſineſs, I at length told my Keeper, that I would viſit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requiſite to be trim'd firſt. He conſenting, we went to a Barbers. I ſat down in the Chair firſt; and being diſpatcht, I deſired the Keeper to ſit down too, and I would pay for *ſprucifying* his *Phiſnomy.* Whilſt he was trimming, I talkt of one thing or other, to hold him in diſcourſe. At laſt ſaid the Barber, *Shut your eyes, or elſe my ball will offend them.* Shutting his eyes, I took an occaſion to ſlip out, planting my ſelf in an houſe hard by; the Barber not imagining I was a priſoner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the ſmart, but opened his eyes; and ſeeing me not in the ſhop, roſe up, and that ſo haſtily, that he overthrew *Cutbeard*,

and the baſon on him, running out into the ſtreet with the Barbers cloth about him, and *Don Barberoſo's Turbant* on his head. The people ſeeing him thus with the froth about his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The Barber with his Razor ran after the Keeper, crying, *Stop him, ſtop him, that I may be revenged on the Rogue.* The other nere minding the Outcry, ran ſtaring up and down as if his wits had lately ſtole away from him, and he in purſuit of them. Some durſt not ſtop him, others would not, thinking the Barber by his poſture intended to have his Teſticles for abuſing his wife. To conclude, the Barber at laſt ſeis'd him, and having recovered his cloaths, and made him pay 6 d. for ſhaving, the Keeper was diſmiſt with a kick or two in the arſe; the Barber not ſuffering him to ſpeak a word in his own defence. Thus freeing my ſelf, I reſolv'd to take the Country-air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy remembrance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Some while we ſtaid together; but at laſt his buſineſs call'd him one way, and my *Padding Trade* invited me another.

CHAP. LI.

He is laid up in Oxford-*Goal by his Hoſt, he is cheated at Cheſter; and after ſome time is ranſomed thence by ſome of his Comrades, Knights of the* Road, *they paying his Debts.*

OUr Crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable Purchaſe; which after we had divided, I told them, that I would but viſit a friend at *Oxford*, and repair to them again within two or three days. My old Acquaintance being overjoy'd to ſee me, after ſo long abſence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the ſociety of the Wits; who would frequently drink too, till they had loſt them. The Company pleaſed me ſo well, that I thought it a ſoleciſm in civility to be ſober, when they made any appointment for mirth; and they being true *Bacchanalians*, in the uppermoſt Claſſes of *Ariſtippus's* School, ſcorn'd to be outvy'd by a junior Sophiſter; and therefore, do what I could, they would be drunk before me: they never contended about any argument that tended to ebriety, but ſwallowed them all. I thought they would never have done ſpeaking of Sack; every one endeavouring who ſhould expreſs moſt in its praiſe. One ſaid, *That Diogenes was but a dry fellow;* and the only reaſon he could give for it, was, *That it is ſhrewdly ſuſpected by the Commentators on his Tub, that that wooden-houſe of his was given him by a Beer-brewer, who being a enemy to all good wits and learning,*

gave him this Cask, which formerly had contained that pernicious liquor, Beer, that by the meer ſcent he might deſtroy his underſtanding. But *Bacchus* is ſo witty a Philoſopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his inſtructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of meaſure; it is he that makes us ſpeak fluently, and utter our minds in abundance: for my part, I am commonly ſo over-joyed in his company, that I have often feared I ſhould never be my own man again. Said another, It is Sack was the *Promethean* fire, not ſtoln from *Jove's* Kitchin, but his Wine-cellar, to increaſe the native heat, without which we are but cold clay; but that celeſtial liquor applyed even to the dead, will cauſe a revivification: this is it which gave *Ganymede* beauty, and *Febe* youth. Can you think, that ever *Ariſtotle* would have been taken notice of, had he drank Ale or Beer; or, that *Alexander*'s conqueſts had been heard of, had he been ſober? therefore to make his Captains famous to poſterity, he taught them how to muſter Quarts and Pottles, and by accuſtoming them to be dead-drunk, ſhewed them the way to contemn death. All this is true (ſaid another, ſo drunk, that what he ſpake could hardly be underſtood) but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all light things aſcend? what better way is there to underſtand high matters, then a light head? *Copernicus* by the lightneſs of his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that firſt found out the motion of the earth; which he could never have done, had not Sack been his inſtructor. Hence grew the Proverb, *In vino veritas*, as if Sack were the only Butt truth ſhoots at, the piercing of which cauſeth the other

to be drawn out with it. For my part Gentlemen, ſaid I, my paſſion was never more ſtirred then the other day, comming by a red-lettice, unto which I have a natural antipathy: there did I hear a Tapſter aver, that *Helicon* was nothing more then an Hogs-head of March-beer, and that *Pegaſus* was anciently a Dray-horſe; and then ſpeaking of *French* wine, in deriſion, called him friſking *Monſieur*; and the *Spaniſh, Don Rhodomontado*; ſwearing that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the Drawers in the Town to daſh him as he would. Then tumbling out two or three ſmall-beer oaths, he wiſht that he might never look through his red-lettice Percullice, if he did not verily believe he ſhould ſee *Monſieur* burn'd with a pox to him, and *Spaniſh Don* mull'd to death with butter and eggs.

It is a thing beyond my reaſon,
That we ſtrong Ale for Sack ſhould quit,
Since 'twould have blown us up by treaſon,
Had not Ale beſtirr'd our wit:
Then give us Ale, but baniſh Sack;
That Spaniſh Don *muſt have the rack.*

I could do no leſs for his malepertneſs, but broach his Hogs-head, which to convince him of his error, ran Terſe Claret: I heard afterwards, this accident converted the Infidel. We ſpun out various diſcourſes of this nature, as long as we could ſee, and then each man reel'd to his reſpective lodging. The next morning, walking abroad to finde out ſome of my laſt nights aſſociates, unfortunately my *Cheſter*-Landlord (who having ſome buſineſs to do in *Oxford*, was newly

come thither to diſpatch it) eſpy'd me, and without accoſting me (like a ſubtile Sophiſter) watcht me whither I went : being houſed, he preſently fetcht two Officers, and coming out into the ſtreet napt me. I ſent to thoſe friends that had been ſo merry with me ever ſince my coming to that City ; but they underſtanding the buſineſs, came not neer me ; one pretending indiſpoſition of body ; another, that he was not within ; a third, that he was about urgent occaſions, which having finiſht, he would wait upon me ; but in fine, none came to my relief, ſhewing themſelves right pot-companions, whoſe courteſies it may be, ſhall extend to the payment of a Reckoning, when their friend wants it to diſcharge it himſelf ; but diſappear and vaniſh, when their aſſiſtance is implored to draw him out of Priſon. Seeing no remedy, I patiently ſuffer'd my ſelf to be confined. My adverſary viſiting me, I treated with him about my releaſment, offering him what I had, which was neer upon half ; but his reſolution was to have all, or there I muſt lie. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain againſt the inconſtancy of Fortune ; and ruminating within my mind the miſeries that attend all ſorts of priſons, I judged that of Debt to be the moſt deplorable ; and though I wanted liberty, which commonly doth depreſs the mind, yet by the vertue of Canary (which I could not be without) my fancy ſcorned to be fetter'd, but would in ſpite of fate, uſe her freedom. 'Tis ſome kind of pleaſure and comfort, for a man ſometimes in adverſity, to deſcant on his own miſerable condition ; which becauſe I found experimentally true, I applied my ſelf to my uſual

cuſtom, the uſe of my pen, differencing theſe Metropolitan Priſons thus :

To Bedlam *men are ſent bereft of wit ;*
When 'tis reſtored, then they are freed from it :
Confin'd to Newgate *long, men can't complain,*
For once a month they're cleer'd from it and pain ;
In a ſhort time their Bolts wear off, and then
They may be ſure ne're to come there agen ;
Diſcharged thence their fettered ſouls ſhall be,
Only an hour confin'd, and then ſet free.
Bridewell, *no wiſeman yet did e're diſpraiſe thee,*
For thou doſt feed the poor, correct the lazy ;
The expiration of a little time,
Forgives offenders, and forgets their Crime.
Hereafter from the Priſon, Heav'n defend me ;
Rather to Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewel, *ſend me ;*
For there Wit, Work, or Law doth ſet men free,
Nothing but Money here gets liberty.

Having lain here above a week, I ſent away a Letter to my Brethren, informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the ſum I was impriſoned for ; which was ſent me by them, and brought by one of our truſty Knights : paying my Debts and Fees, I returned again to them.

CHAP. LII.

He returns to his Brethren the Knights of the Road, *whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, ſtrangers; he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch.*

MY Companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was ſome deſign in hand; but according to their uſual courſe, fell to drink high: obſerving two or three faces, I tipt a wink to one of my Brethren, being in another room; I asked him, who they were; he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the *North*; to which he added, We have been pumping them (ever ſince we did thruſt our ſelves into their company) to know what ſtore of Caſh they had about them; but we find little more then will defray their neceſſary expences on the Road; only, ſaid he, there is one of them hath a very rich Watch: I bid him return to his place, and I would warrant him to have it before he ſtirred. I came in again to the company, not taking the leaſt cognizance of any, but ſhewed much reſpect and civility to them all, as a ſtranger; I purpoſely askt what it was a clock: one of the Gentlemen, and of my friends both, pulled forth their Watches, ſtriving who ſhould firſt give me ſatisfaction to my queſtion; after this, they viewed interchangeably the workmanſhip of one & the other, both praiſing the ſeeming goodneſs of each others Watch. At laſt my friend makes a propoſition: Come, Sir, if you pleaſe we will make an exchange upon ſentence and repent-

ance. The ſtranger deſired to underſtand his meaning: Why, Sir, ſaid he, we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent perſon, and what difference he ſhall judge there is between them, ſhall be given in money by him whoſe Watch is leaſt worth. It was concluded upon; but they could not agree into whoſe hands to put them. At laſt it was mutually agreed upon between them, that I being a ſtranger to them both, ſhould be the decider: I ſeemingly refuſed it, but they would not hear me alledge any arguments to the contrary; whereupon I went out, and immediately cauſing my horſe to be brought forth, without the leaſt delay I mounted, and away I rid. My Comrades knew where to meet me at the next ſtage. The next morning they found me out, telling me how they all ſtormed to be ſo cheated, to avoid ſuſpition: and now did they all embrace me, promiſing to themſelves great hopes in me from this adventure.

CHAP. LIII.

He puts a notable Trick upon a Phyſician.

NEar adjacent to our general randezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy Phyſician, who had ſhewed himſelf fortunately expert in divers Cures, where it ſeemed that humane art had not ſufficient power to give a remedy. The fame of his great skill, and of many admirable cures, which to the ſhame of other Phyſicians, he had perſormed, made him ſo generally beloved and ſought after, that in a ſhort time he purchaſed by his ſanatory induſtry, above 500 l. *per annum*, and ſeldom had leſs by him then a thouſand pound. Thus much I caſually underſtood from one accidentally, ſpeaking of this his rich Neighbour: but that which pleaſed me moſt was, that (as he ſaid) he ſeldom carried leſs then an 100 pieces of gold about him conſtantly, proceeding from a fancy derived from an extream love he bore that Metal. I could not ſleep for contriving a way how I might diſembogue this Urinal of what it contained: ſometimes I way-laid him in his return; but he was ſo well eſteemed of, that he ſeldom returned home without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended ſome diſtemper, and ſo have applied my ſelf to him for Cure; and imagining that he would privately diſcourſe with me about my Malady, that then I would preſent a Piſtol to his breaſt, ſwearing, that ſhould be his immediate and unavoidable Executioner, if he did not without the leaſt noiſe or reſiſtance, deliver ſuch a quantity of Gold; but this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with ſo

much hazard. At laſt I thought of this ſtratagem, which ſafely produced its effect: One day after dinner I rid to his houſe (ſeemingly) in extream haſte, which he might perceive not only by my own affrighted looks, but by my horſe, which was all of a foam. I aſkt his ſervant, with much quickneſs, whether Mr. Doctor was within; yes, Sir, (ſaid he) if you pleaſe to walk in, I ſhall call him to you. I waited ſome time (for moſt of that profeſſion muſt take ſome ſtate upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came. Sir, (ſaid I) the report of your great experience in your happy Practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your aſſiſtance, and that inſtantly, if you have any reſpect to the preſervation of life: the trouble I ſhall put you to, ſhall be gratefully recompenſed to the utmoſt of my ability. The Doctor inquired of me, whom it was, and what manner of diſtemper the perſon laboured under. I readily told him, it was my Wife, who for ſome continuance of time, had been extreamly troubled with the flux of her Belly; the more that is applied to it by us, the more it increaſeth; wherefore, our help failing, I beſeech you lend us yours, and favour me ſo far as to ride with me to her. The ſeeming ſincerity of my words prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon the moſt diſtruſtful. This Doctor (who as I was informed, was accuſtomed to be induced more by gain, then fair words) gave me this deſirable anſwer: Sir, far be it from me that I ſhould refuſe to do my endeavour to any perſon whatever, much leſs to a Gentleman of your rank and quality, in that little skill which I have in the knowledge and practice of Phyſick: if I can effect any thing for the good of the good

Gentlewoman your Wife, I will attend you thither with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth. Without attending any further diſcourſe, his horſe was made ready, and ſo we rid away together. As we rid through a ſmall Wood, leading him the way, I turned my horſe about, and clapt a Piſtol to his breaſt, ſhewing him withal an empty bag: See here, Sir, (ſaid I) my Wife, which hath a long time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you pleaſe, the laſt I think more proper; for ſhe no ſooner receives anything for her (and my) ſuſtenance, but ſhe immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now Sir, if you do not find out ſome means to mitigate this diſtemper (the cure I ſhall never expect, as knowing it impoſſible) this Piſtol ſhall ſend you to *Æſculapius*, to conſult with him what is moſt fit to be adminiſtred: come, Sir, let me adviſe you, and ſave your ſelf the trouble of ſo long a journey; your gold (an hundred pieces as I am told) are the conſtant attending Eſquires of your body) I ſay, that is the beſt and only *Recipe* for a remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what gold he had about him, which was neer upon the ſum expreſt: there was a rich Diamond-Ring on his finger, which I deſired him likewiſe to give me, which ſhould ſerve for a perpetual *memorandum* of his kindneſs to me. I commanded him, as he tendred his life, to ride back again, without ſo much as once looking behinde him; and that if he offered to raiſe the Country, if I was ſure to die that inſtant, I would be the death of him firſt. The Doctor followed my dictations ſo exactly, that I never heard more of him.

CHAP. LIV.

He falls in love with a wealthy Widow, who is poetically inclined; he courts her, and in a ſhort time enjoys her, and after that ingratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money ſhe had.

HAving gained ſo much money by my own induſtry and ſole procurement, I reſolved neither to acquaint my Brethren therewith, nor aſſociate my ſelf any longer with them, being ſo encouraged by this ſucceſs, that I concluded I might atchieve gallant things by my ſelf: being belated one night, & ſome miles from any town, I knockt at an houſe that ſtood in my road, imagining it at firſt a publick houſe for entertainment; one of the ſervants coming to the door, I found it no ſuch thing: ſhe demanded my buſineſs: Prithee ſweet heart (ſaid I) acquaint your Maſter, that there is a Gentleman requeſts the civility of a nights lodging: ſhe goes in and informs her Miſtreſs what I ſaid; who came to me with much reſpect, telling me, She queſtioned not but I was a Gentleman, and therefore ſhould be welcome to the mean accommodation ſhe was capable of ſhewing. I rendred her many thanks, and ſo alighted; ſtrict order was given to the Groom, that he very carefully lookt after my horſe: this being done, I was conducted into a very fair room; there did I make my apology in the beſt Rhetorick I had, for I perceived ſhe was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintneſs of her expreſſions; *Ex pede Herculem:* Many things I forged, as

that the ways being dangerous, I was fearful to adventure any farther, having a great charge upon me. Such was her urbanity, that laying aſide all niceties, ſhe bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the houſe afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glaſs of wine, or bit almoſt, that I committed to my mouth, ſhe uſhered thither with ſome Apothegm or other: the whole ſeries, indeed, of her diſcourſe, was compoſed of nothing but reaſon or wit, which made me admire her; which ſhe eaſily underſtood, I perceived by her ſmiles, when ſhe obſerved me gaping, as it were, when ſhe ſpoke, as if I would have eaten up her Words. As her ſoul was beautiful, ſparkling with celeſtial ornaments, ſo was the caskanet that contained it very fair, and enricht with Natures chiefeſt gifts: She was very clear skin'd, well bodied; a ſharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding ſmall and white hand; and then ſhe liſpt a littie, which became her ſo well, that methought it added a grace to the reſt of her internal and external qualifications. Being about ten o'clock, ſhe adviſed me to repoſe my ſelf, ſuppoſing I was weary. I condeſcended, though with much regret to leave her ſo ſoon; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwiſe. She conducted me to my Chamber, where bidding me good night, ſhe betook her ſelf to her own Chamber. That night I could hardly ſleep, not ſo much for pure love, as the heat of luſt; next morning, very early, I heard her ſtirring, which made me wonder; but ſhe told me afterwards, that ſhe got up ſo ſoon, fearing I ſhould

have gone away, and ſhe not take her leave of me. About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me up a Sack-poſſet; and a little after, her Miſtreſs came, courteouſly ſaluting me, and enquiring how I ſlept: I return'd an anſwer, in as handſom terms I could utter: her eyes plainly diſcovered to mine, that ſhe had more then a common reſpect for me. Having left me a while, I aroſe, and made my ſelf ready for my journey: after ſeveral diſcourſes which ſhe had ingaged me in, purpoſely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, ſhe attending me to the court: my horſe being brought out, halted down-right (ſhe had cauſed him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent I might ſtay longer.) Not knowing what to ſay or do, Well, Sir, ſaid ſhe, ſince the unhappy accident hath fallen out ſo unexpectedly, make uſe of my houſe, & what is in it, till your horſe be recover'd of his lameneſs. This was a propoſition that my ſoul longed for; wherefore I could not but ſhew much ſatisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walkt in again, & proſecuted for diverſion ſake our former diſcourſe, interlining it with ſome love-touches at a diſtance, which ſhe would frequently deſcant on pleaſantly. We in this ſhort time became intimately acquainted; which need not be much wondred at, conſidering the greatneſs of ſympathy between us; ſo that now the conqueſt of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt ourſelves weary, Come, ſaid ſhe in a very familiar manner, I will ſhew you the product of ſome idle hours; and with that brought me ſeveral Epitaphs, Elegies, Anagrams, Anacroſticks, Epigrams, *&c.* of her own compoſition, too many here to relate; but for their

wit, deſerved to have each line characterized in gold; ſome I would here inſert, were not the radiant luſtre of her conceits ſo great and glorious, that they would abſolutely extinguiſh the dim-ſightedneſs of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occaſion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly inſinuated in theſe lines, reflecting on her from what I had read.

Siſters thrice three I've read of, and no more,
Till your quick wit compleated half a Score:
Since you are one, let me perſwade you then,
Be kind to me, for they are kind to men.
Deareſt, be like them, they are ſoft and blithe;
Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.

Theſe lines ſo powerfully wrought upon her, that ſhe could not forbear to tell me, that ſhe was much obliged to me for what I had writ. You cannot Madam, ſaid I, cancel your obligation, till you have made ſome recompence: with that, ſaid ſhe ſmilingly, What will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmoſt ambition of my deſires. You have it Sir; neither can I deny any deſerving man a thing ſo inconſiderable. By your favour Madam, love I mean. I never was ſo uncharitable, ſaid ſhe, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply ſo merrily: for a fort which ſo capitulateth, is half ſurrendered. Since I had broke the ice, I was reſolved to proſecute my deſign; wherefore in plain Engliſh I told her, that I loved her from the firſt interview, ſo ardently, that my conſtancy ſhould

prove the reality of my affection: ſhe deſired me to leave that to the teſt of time; that ſhould ſhe believe me ſuddenly before ſhe had made tryal, ſhe ſhould not only looſe the good eſtimation ſhe had gained by the prudent and diſcreet management of her affairs, every one accuſing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be involve her ſelf in a Labyrinth of all manner of troubles. Tryal, ſaid I, you ſhall have: and knowing the manner of courting a widow, a tryal I gave her, knowing that Parleys operate little on a widow, and there is nothing ſooner gains a conqueſt then a ſtorm or a reſolute aſſault. This action made her ſo firmly mine, that I durſt not ſpeak of leaving; which when I did at any time, her Soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me. Some two months we ſpent in all manner of ſelf-pleaſing delights, till at laſt I begun to be tyred with her too frequent invitations; the more I endeavoured to ſatisfie her, the further I was from it. Not only by her, but by others, this experiment I found, that the oftner I treated them, the more eagerly and earneſtly they deſired it. Being now incapacitated to hold out in this manner longer, I thought it high time to be gone, but not without ſufficient recompence for my ſervice. She daily ſollicited me to marry her, which I promiſed her from time to time, waiting an opportunity when I might become maſter of her treaſure. One day in a frollick, and the more to encourage me to make a ſpeedy conſummation of our loves by marriage, ſhe ſhewed me all her writings which concerned her eſtate (by which I found her to be ſo wealthy a fortune, that I of-

ten times curſt my unhappy ſtars, that they had thus debar'd me from the complement of ſo great a bliſs.) After this, ſhe ſhews me a trunk wherein was contained her caſh: then taking me about the neck with ſuch fervency of affection, that I thought ſhe would have ſtrangled me, & with the repetition of kiſſes, ſhe ſmiling, askt me, whether theſe things ſatisfied me or not. I told her they did, but they were not to ſtand in competition with her moſt affected ſelf: with that ſhe gave me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was. and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days. In the mean time I ſtudied how I might be gone, but could not contrive a way, ſhe not induring me to be out of her ſight. In fine, I feigned ſome indiſpoſition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles for the benefit of the freſh air, and return: with much willingneſs ſhe conſented. Juſt as I was about to take horſe (having furniſhed my ſelf with as much mony as I could well carry without diſcovery) ſhe wept bitterly (as having I think a prophetick Spirit.) I ask'd her the cauſe of her diſcontent: all bathed in tears, ſhe anſwered me with a deep ſigh, I ſhall never ſee you more: Hard-hearted man: can you thus leave a woman that loves you thus dearly, nay, that dotes on you? I made many proteſtations to the contrary; which were not believed. Seeing that I could not prevail on her belief, I bad her farewell, ſetting ſpurs to my horſe, and was out of ſight in an inſtant. I could not but condemn my ſelf extreamly for this inhumane action: but conſidering that there is no ſlavery greater then that of the ſmock, I foothed

my ſelf up in mine own unworthineſs; paſſing by a little Ale-houſe, I called in, and over a pot of Ale I compoſed theſe enſuing lines, which I ſent to her by a meſſenger I procured in the houſe, directed thus:

Deliver theſe to the fair hands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman, *at her dwelling-houſe, near* Redding.

The Contents were theſe, or to this purpoſe.

Madam,

A Poeteſs you are, and Prophet too,
Thus to divine I'm gone from you
Eternally. 'Tis true: D'ye think that I can eat,
Though ne're ſo choice, always one ſort of meat?
No faith; I'd rather wear a Porters frock,
Then to be ſhrowded in one womans ſmock.
You ſay you are with child; Piſh, don't complain,
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain:
Y'are only big with fancy, which may prove
A witty Brat, like Pallas *ſprung from* Jove.
And have you then conceiv'd? How can I chuſe
But write Encomiums *on my fertile Muſe?*
Mind not the Father, nor his Brat, for it
Will like the Father live (no doubt) by wit:
Let Pegaſus *be Godfather, the crew*
Of the nine Muſes, Goſſips; ſo adieu.

I deſired no anſwer, therefore ſtayed not till the return of the meſſenger, but rid that night to *Maidenhead.*

CHAP. LV.

He comes up to London, *ſends to a particular friend whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requeſts him to compound with his Creditors, which he did in a ſhort time; and in a ſhort time after, he attempts the robbing of an houſe, but is taken and clapt up in* Newgate: *The miſeries of an impriſoned eſtate, with the manner of his eſcape out of that Priſon.*

THe next day I rode towards *London*, and about twylight took up my quarters in the Suburbs the day following, I ſent for a friend whom I could put confidence in, who came immediately upon the reception of my Letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my reſolution; yet I would not acquaint him how ſtrong I was, nor by what means procured: 'twas enough that I gave him commiſſion how far forth he ſhould proceed, and no farther, which was half a Crown *per* pound. He went (after I had given him a liſt of them all) to every one particularly, and treated with them ſo cunningly, and they deſpairing of ever recovering a farthing, condeſcended to his propoſals; whereupon he gets them all to ſubſcribe, and then brings the Paper to me, which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the Money, which every one received proportionably, each man reſpectively giving me his general releaſe from the beginning of the world: they to whom I had conſeſt Judgements, filed according to Law their diſcharges.

But when my Creditors a little while afterward, ſaw me walk the ſtreets in ſo ſplendid a garb, ſome of them were ready to die with anguiſh: but that which troubled them moſt, was my ſupercilious looks when I met any of them, and my ſlighting ſalutations. What I did in this reſpect, was only to have the freedome of walking the ſtreets, without the moleſtation of chargeable arreſts. I kept ſuch beboiſt company, that the remaining part of my money grew low, and in a very ſhort time after, was all ſpent. All my drunken Companions failed me, and I having nothing left me but my cloaths, neceſſity made me to condeſcend to the enquiry after the kind-natured Gentlewoman my Wife: her neareſt relations could not give me any account of her, giving her over for loſt. I wandred up and down, imploying all the powers of my wit and invention, in the ſearch of what might conduce to ſupply my prefent neceſſities. While I was thus hammering out ſome new deſign on the Anvil of experience, I bethought my ſelf where probabiy I might find my Wife: Firſt, I went to *Ratcliff* high-way, and made enquiry of *Dammaris*, &c. the Metropolitan Bawd of thoſe parts, for a Gentlewoman of ſuch a complexion, ſtature, and age, ('twas but a folly to mention her name, for thoſe that follow that trade change their names as often as they do their places of abode) but that cart-load of fleſh could give me no information, neither was it poſſible for me to have ſtaid to hear it, ſhe ſo ſtunk of Strong-waters, ſtronger then that Cask that never contained any thing elſe; I went down all along to the Croſs, in

my way I ſaw many Whores ſtanding at their doors, giving me invitation; but being poor, they could not afford the charge of *Fucus*, ſo that their faces lookt much like a piece of rumbled Parchment, and by their continual traffick with Seamens Breeches, I could not come near them, they ſmelt ſo ſtrongly of Tarpawlin and ſtinking Cod; yet ſtill no tidings of her I fought for. From hence I went to *Fleet-yard*, but there they were ſo dawbed or plaiſtered with paint, & botcht with patches, that had I ſeen her there, it was impoſſible for me to have known her. Away I went to *Luteners-lane*, *Sodom*, and *Dog* and *Bitch-yard*; but the Pox, it ſeemed, had not yet fitted her for thoſe places. From hence I went to *Whetſtons-Park*, where I ſaw my Mad-dame ſtanding at the door: her frequent trading, and thoſe many ſhots ſhe had received between wind and water in the ſervice, had ſo altered her countenance, and diſproportioned her body, that I knew not whether this Frigate was Engliſh or Flemiſh built: but at laſt, hailing whence ſhe was, I boarded her, and made her lawful prize: miſtake me not, I rummag'd not in her Hold, fearing ſhe was a Fire-ſhip. The ſight and knowledge of me, made her ſhed ſome Babyloniſh tears, which I took little notice of, knowing them to be either cuſtomary to that Sex, or the effects of a moiſt brain. In we went together, where we had, according to the cuſtom of the houſe, Pint-black-pots of ſmall Ale for two pence, and quarterns of Strong-water half fill'd for ſix pence, with Biskets; which as ſoon as brought, every one broken, though not a bit afterwards eaten. We muſt be ſmoaking too, though the Pipe

muſt be thrown down careleſly, and often broken as ſoon as put to the lips: one of the Plyers being gone down to draw ſome more drink, ſhe begged me to conceal my ſelf for the preſent, and comply alſo with the cheating cuſtoms of the houſe, and ſhe would willingly pay all. I had hardly ſmoakt two whiffs more, but that a fellow came where we were, ſwearing *dam-me*, why do you ſtay with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconſtant Quean? have I ſpent my eſtate on you, and muſt you now grow weary of me? and with that drew his knife, making a proffer to cut her noſe off. I was ſo amazed at what I heard, and ſo irritated by paſſion, that I knew not which of them to be revenged on firſt. Sir, ſaid I, I have been longer acquainted with her then you, and may juſtly claim a better title and more priviledge; but as you have affronted me, ſo I ſhall require ſatisfaction inſtantly, not referring our difference to be decided by the field, an Umpire that Cowards frequently make choice of: ſo drawing my knife alſo, and ſeizing on his noſe, which I intended to have divorc'd from his face, I was prevented, for it dropt off into my hand. This accident ſo aſtoniſht me, and withal being much affrighted at the ſight of his Deaths-head, I durſt not meddle with him any further, leſt handling any Member, it would have dropt off in the ſame manner: he made a blow at me, but inſtead of ſtriking me, I expected when his fiſt would have flown from his body into my face: he kickt at me, but that leg being up, the other was incapable of ſupporting his body, and ſo he fell down. The old Bawd hearing this diſturbance, ran to us as faſt as the vaſt

bulk of her body would give her leave, whoſe pace was not much fwifter then a fnail in his full career, who having faſted too long, by the conſtant repercuſſion of the Sun-beams on him in a miſling morning, forrageth a garden for pillage. From the place whence ſhe ſtarted, to that where we fcuffled, was about ſix yards diſtance; and from the time of her ſetting forward, to the time ſhe came to us (not to belye the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the haſte ſhe made. Sirrah, ſirrah, ſaid ſhe, come you hither to breed quarrels, and abuſe civil Gentlemen, and it may be build a fconce too? get you out of my houſe, you Raſcal, or I'll fcald you out. By this time the Pimp came to their aſſiſtance, and ſo they all conjoyned to ſhove this poor fellow out of doors: and notwithſtanding he had for two or three years frequented the houſe, yet they neither pittied nor relieved him as a maimed fouldier, the marks whereof were a ſufficient teſtimony, beſides the loſs of a Member or two. Having diſcharged my reckoning, my Wife appointed me a place where I ſhould meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of diſcourſe, we wav'd every thing that tended not to my preſent deſign, which was the contrivance of ſome way to live. At laſt we reſolved to take an houſe and live together; I thought it was as good to be Pimp to my own Wife, by which means the major part of the gain would be mine, as Pimp to another for 12 pence a day and ſpunging. What we had determined, we ſoon put in execution: what money ſhe had was laid out in utenſils belonging to our Trade, as for bedding, linnen, chairs and ſtools,

&c. The Tally-man or Broker, who ſells his goods to be paid by 12 *d.* a pound *per* week: the truth of it is, we found of him, but more eſpecially his ſervants, excellent cuſtomers; for they would for a private favour, cut off a ſcore, ſometimes two or three from the Tally. Our ſtock being but ſmall, my Wife was forced to be both Bawd and Whore; but our trade increaſing, ſhe goes frequently to the Carriers, where at laſt ſhe had pickt up a couple of very well-featured Country-girls, and brings them home, entertaining them as ſervants; but ſhewing as much kindneſs to them, as if they had been our neareſt kindred, purpoſely to induce them to ſtay: The Whore, my Wife, intended to have ſold their Maiden-heads at a dear rate; but in truth, I ever lov'd ſuch things too well to put them to ſale, having them in my poſſeſſion. To be ſure thereof, I gathered my Roſe-buds the firſt night, leſt the infectious and contagious breath of ſome one *Suburbicarian* ſhould blaſt them: in four days time afterwards, I fitted them for their occupations, leaving the inſtructive part thereof to my Wife to ſeaſon them withal. I never ſaw two young Jades underſtand their trade ſooner in my life; for in a Months time they could Cant indifferently, Wheedle moſt cunningly, Lye confoundedly, Swear deſperately, pick a Pocket dexterouſly, Diſſemble undiſcernably, drink and ſmoak everlaſtingly, Whore infatiately, and brazen out all their actions impudently. Now did I begin to renew my acquaintance with the Tribe of Rogues, with whom I grew ſo intimate, that I was ſeldom out of their company, either at home or abroad. To relate all the tricks & rogueries we

committed in one half year, were an half years work: therefore to be ſhort, we were grown ſo notorious, and ſo generally taken notice of, that at laſt my Wife, and her two Maids of diſhonour, were apprehended by the Marſhals men, and carried to *Bridewel*; I my ſelf narrowly eſcaping by flight: The next day I boldly went to viſit them; methought their beating of hemp became them excellent well; and in troth I'll ſay this for them, there hath not been ſeen in that place a more ſerviceable ſtrong-dockt Crew for many years. Looking very earneſtly upon that Hemp my Wife was beating, a deep fit of Melancholy ſeized me, proceeding only from my imagination; for I fancied that very Hemp would make that very Rope which ſhould put a period to my life. The time of my viſiting them, fell out on the day of their correction; underſtanding ſo much, I reſolved to ſtay and ſee them well laſht, I hop'd: My Wife being manacled, and the whip ready to encircle her Waſte; Hold, ſaid I, and then directing my ſelf to the Maſters of *Bridewell*; May it pleaſe your Worſhips, this woman now under correction, is the moſt impudent brazen-fac'd Whore in the whole Town; I have known her a long time, ever ſince, and ſome ſmall time before ſhe undid her Husband, a very honeſt man indeed, and had the good report of all his Neighbours; but this confident Slut could not then be content without her Stallion, whom ſhe maintained by what ſhe purloin'd from her Husband, and ſo utterly ruined him: ſince ſhe hath been the deſtruction of ſeveral, ſome in their eſtates, others in their bodily health, and now ſo far from being penitent, that ſhe glories in

nothing more, then in the relation of how many ſhe hath undone here and hereafter: wherefore I beſeech your Worſhips, for my friend's ſake, that good honeſt man, and for the good of her own ſoul, add one half-dozen ſtripes to the number intended, and let them be laid home. I had no ſooner ended my ſpeech, but I vaniſht immediately. Juſt as I was out of the gate, I met with two of my roguing friends, whom the Devil had ſent, I think, to way-lay me: they were going, it ſeems, to ſee ſome of their Doxies, that had that day been committed. Being over-joy'd to meet me ſo accidentally, they would needs have me go to the Tavern with them: over a glaſs of wine we conſulted about divers matters, no goodneſs to be ſure; the reſult whereof was, that I ſhould go to ſuch an houſe, and try if by any means I could get into it unperceived, and abſcond my ſelf in order to my opening the door for them about twelve a clock. According to the time nominated I went, and with much facility conveyed my ſelf into a lower room, wherein there was a bed, under which I crept, being confident I might lie there ſecurely, till all the houſhold were retired to take their reſt. After I had lain about ſome two hours on the ground, there came into this room a ſervant; I peept out, and by the light of his candle, ſaw that which I thought would have diſtracted me with fear; it was the laying the cloth, by which I underſtood, the Maſter of the houſe intended to ſup there: ſuddenly after, meat was brought in and ſerved to the Table; then came five or ſix perſons, who paſſing divers complements (all which needleſs ceremonies at that time, I wiſht

with their inventers were ſtark naked upon the top of the Snowy Alps) every one took ſeats. Had not there been at that time ſome ſmall pratling children running up and down, and making a noiſe, the affright their appearance had put me in, would have betrayed me; for my knees knockt ſo hard one againſt the other, that they made a noiſe like a Mill-clack, or the ſtriking of two marrow-bones together: for my life I could not prevent the Palſie from ſeizing every limb of me. My cruel fates had ſo ordered it, that there was a ſmall Dog in the room, and a Cat, both dearly beloved by their Miſtreſs; who would be continually flinging down ſomething or other, which they continually quarrelled about, as jealous and envious upon the diſtribution of their Miſtreſs favours: at length ſhe threw down a ſmall bit; the Cat being ſomewhat a more nimble ſervitor, and diligent waiter than the Dog, took it, & ran with it underneath the Bed; the Dog ran after the Cat ſnarling, endeavouring to affright her, that ſhe might forſake the purchaſe: The Dog approaching near, and too much intrenching upon her right, ſhe puts him in mind of his duty, by one ſcratch with her Claw, and chaſtiſeth him for his raſhneſs with two or three more: this ſo angred him, that he made a furious aſſault upon Puſs, who defended her ſelf as well as ſhe could; but at length they cloſed, and grappling each other, they made a moſt hideous noiſe. The ſpot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the bed upon my buttocks: The ſervant that attended being over-haſty to quell the noiſe, by parting the fray, ſnatched up the fire-ſhovel, and throws

it underneath the bed; had it hit my noſe with the edge, as it did my breech with the handle, I ſhould have had it pared off even with my face. The Cat inſtantly provides for her ſafety by flight, but the Dog ſtill remained behind grumbling, and now and then barking with ſuch eagerneſs, that he became very offenſive to the whole company. Wherefore the ſervant was commanded to drag him forth, which he did, beating him, and throwing him out of doors: in the mean time I was left in ſuch a condition, as if I had been breathing my laſt. As ſoon as the door was open'd, the Dog came in underneath the bed with more fury than before: this ſecond alarm did my buſineſs (or as they vulgarly ſay, made me do my buſineſs) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me by the noſe, but that I ſnatcht away my head from him: but not obſerving the bed-poſt behind, I thought I had daſhed my brains out againſt it; fear alſo having bereft me of my retentive faculty, I did let flie at one and the ſame time, which made ſo ſtrange a noiſe together, that they all roſe from the table to ſee what was the matter: their noſes quickly informed them of ſome part, for the room was preſently ſtrongly ſcented; looking underneath the bed, they could ſee poor *Jain Perus* giving up the Ghoſt (as dying perſons uſually evacuate their ordure before their departure) they pulling me forth, and quickly revived me, they roughly handled me, and then beat me, till I was ene dead again. Being taken in the preſent offence, I could expect no other but to be ſubject to the rigour of their vengeance; I could make no plea ſufficient to ſtay their fury, or ſatisfie their re-

venge; having ſetcht a Conſtable, I was carried before a Juſtice of Peace, who with little examination cauſed my *Mittimus* to be drawn, and ſo I was ſent to *Newgate.* I was no ſooner within, and under lock and key, but ſetters confined my legs from ſtragling, and bracelets were clapt upon my arms. The Rogues came all flocking about me for their Garniſh, which I gave them: ſome of the gentiler ſort added more to it, ſo that we had abundance of drink. But never did I hear ſo confuſed a din of *Dam-me* and *Sink-me*: others ſinging ſo loud (*alias* roaring) that I thought my ſelf in *Hell,* and that theſe were damned ſouls that roared through extremity of torments. I thought none had been ſo wicked as my ſelf, till I came among theſe *Hell-hounds.* Not a word come from any of their mouths, but what was ſeconded with an Oath, curſing their bad Stars, and Blaſpheming. The Miſery of this, or any other priſon is ſufficiently repreſented, if by nothing elſe than want of liberty, that rich inheritance of living ſouls: as it is the greateſt of injoyments, next that imperial Gem of health, ſo the want thereof next to ſickneſs muſt needs be of all other the moſt bitter. Since then to be confined to the confines of a Gaol, is to be in part unman'd, entomb'd alive, what and how great is that wretchedneſs that is occaſioned not only by a want of liberty, but by a continual dread of ſhameful death! The terror of this place full of torture is ſo exaſperated by the imagination of a noble mind, that Hell it ſelf cannot contain more exquiſite woes and pains, a continuance whereof were ſufficient to puniſh all offences, if the Law diſpenced with that debt due to Juſtice, the life of the offender. Your companions are

none but licentious wretches, ſouls which daily ſurround you with their loathſome perſons overſpread with ſcabs and lice. Here ſighing is our air, our comfort coldneſs, our food deſpair, our muſick ratling of chains, our recreation the deſtruction of vermin; laſtly, our expectation death and damnation. The keeper with the grim aſpect of his ſtern countenance makes us tremble, with fear of a new martyrdom, whilſt the inſulting raskal on the tiptoes of his pride need not skrew his ill-favoured face to a frown, for he knows not how to look otherwiſe; which ſo dejects the ſpirits of we poor impriſoned ſlaves, that the contrition of our looks ſeems to implore his ſmiles, whoſe flinty heart having renounced remorſe, caſts a defiance in our ſad and pitious faces. I might inſiſt much further, but that I am haſtning to get out of the miſerable and foul-excruciating priſon. One day after I had exonerated nature, I chanc'd to view the ſeat, and found that it was no difficult matter to go down the vault by the help of a Rope. A truſty friend coming to ſee me, I told him what I had obſerved, and what I wanted: ſome three days before the Seſſions, he brought me Rope enough to have hanged us all. Having a reſpect unto two more, which I honoured for their admirable good parts, I informed them of what I intended; which preſently we put in execution. Firſt I went down, but I could have wiſhed my ſelf up again; for I was up to the neck, and knew not but I might be deeper, but to my great comfort I found to the contrary; the reſt deſcended after me, with the like good ſucceſs. Having gotten us to an houſe, in which we could put confidence, we quickly freed our ſelves from our Iron tackle.

CHAP. LVI.

He and his two Comrades (which he had delivered) diſguiſe themſelves, and having been old experienced Gameſters, they taught him all the tricks on Cards, by which they uſually cheated their Cullies or Mouths; and alſo how to nap, palm, or Top a Dye; With all things thereunto belonging.

WE had places enough to ſend to for change of apparel, as rich as we pleaſed, or as beggerly again on the contrary, according as our deſign required. Having layen in *Lavender* about a fortnight in this houſe, not only to ſweeten us, but that the rumour of our eſcape, and ſearch for us might be over, we got our ſelves change of habits: Then did we all conſult with our Looking-glaſſes for the change of our faces, not ſuffering our own judgements to paſs, without the approbation of the reſt. In the firſt place I got me a coal-black Perriwig (my own hair being flaxen) and a ſmall falſe beard ſuitable, with whiskers in the *Spaniſh* faſhion; It was no great trouble to black my eye-brows every morning; then clapping a patch on my left eye, ſtealing out of the room, while my Companions were buſied about the ſame thing, not minding me, and coming in again preſently, my appearance did put them all into a very ſtrange confuſion. I changed my voice, and asked them what they were doing; and ſpeaking to them in a tone they were not acquainted with, their chops mov'd inceſſantly, but the Devil a

word I could underſtand; they had got a palſie in their jaws by their ſudden ſurprizal; To have obſerved the ſeveral Monkey-faces, and Baboon-poſtures, could not but extract laughter from the ſevereſt Cynick. Why don't you anſwer me, and that quickly, ye ſneaking dumb Raſcals? Looking moſt piteouſly one upon the other, expecting who ſhould ſpeak firſt, at laſt ſaid one, We mean no harm, we are only preparing ſome things for a Mask, which ſhortly will be preſented to the Citizens, and we are perſons therein concerned. I could not hold longer, but burſt forth into an exceſſive laughter, by which they underſtood their miſtake, not without ſhame enough, to think that the apprehenſion of danger ſo ſlightly grounded, ſhould ſo terrifie them, being ſtruck dumb, and almoſt dead with a pannick fear. To be brief, we very well liked the manner of our Metamorphoſis; and having borrowed ſome money as the neceſſary tools of our intended Trade, we adventured abroad. The firſt mouth we pickt up was in the *Long-walk* by *Chriſt-Church*, upon the account of a wager: there came towards us a young man, who by his garb ſeemed to be a Merchants man, (he afterwards proved ſo, and his Caſheer) I ſtept to him and ſaid, Sir, if it may not be too troubleſome to you, I beſeech you reſolve me one queſtion: This Gentleman hath laid an Angel with me, and referr'd the deciſion thereof to the next that came this way way, whether this next adjacent Hoſpital be S. *Thomas*'s, or S. *Bartholomew*'s. Said the young man, I can aſſure you it is S. *Bartholomews*. Why then friend (ſaid I) you have loſt. Sir, will you be pleaſed (if it may not be any great hindrance

to your preſent affairs) accompany us to the next Tavern, and participate of the loſings? for I ſcorn to pocket it. He condeſcended, and ſo we went together; we diſcovered not any thing till the ſixth pint, and then my friend, as by chance, found a pair of Cards in a corner of the window, which he himſelf had layed there before. Here is a pair of Cards (ſaid he) come, to paſs away the time, let us play for a pint or ſo; ſo I really took up my friend: *Putt* was the game; I won of him two or three pints, and ever and anon I would drink to the ſtranger, ſo that now he began to be warm'd, and ſeemed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and ſometimes prompting me to ſee him when he did *putt* to me. At laſt my friend played the High Game, as the term of Art renders it; that is, he gave me two Trays and an Ace, and reſerved for himſelf two Trays and a Duce. My Antagoniſt puts to me: I pretended I knew not what to do, ſhewed my game to the ſtranger that looked over my ſhoulder: he jogs me on the Elbow; I ſtill delayed; come Sir (ſaid my opponent) what will you do? I will hold you five pound on theſe very cards in my hand. I receiv'd the ſecond jog; will you go my halfs Sir, ſaid I? He anſwered me, that he would. But alas, we loſt: it could be no otherwiſe. This ſo animated the ſtranger, that he perſwaded me to play again, and that he would go the moyety of every ſtake. Sometimes 'twas ſo ordered that I won; but in fine I loſt forty pound, my Cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplex'd that he ſhould thus loſe his Maſters mony; but that he might forget the condition he was in, we drank

round ſome half a dozen healths: So that now I thought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk by ſome new trick or ſtratagem.

Now did we fall to the *Preaching of the Parſon*, a trick on the Cards, which hath deceived the moſt curious eye, and the warieſt of men; with which we gained from our young Merchant, the major part of his money.

Laſtly, to the intent we might without any further delays give him an acquittance for the reſt of his money, we drew out ſome other implements, *viz.* Dice fixt for our purpoſe, as *High-fullums*, which ſeldom run any other chance then four, five, and ſix; *Low-fullums*, which run one, two, and three, &c.

By theſe means we ſent him home pennileſs and heartleſs, whilſt we drank healths to the confuſion of ſorrow.

CHAP. LVII.

From hence he goes, by the direction of his comrades, to a new faſhion Bawdy-houſe; *he deſcribes it, and relates his own ſucceſs.*

UPon the diviſion we found each mans ſhare to amount to 40 *l.* a piece. Being overjoy'd at our firſt good ſucceſs, we reſolv'd to return thanks for our good fortunes in ſome private Meeting-houſe, where we might have a Siſter to aſſiſt in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all Societies never wants his Factor, or one to follicit his buſineſs: For, I had no ſooner intimated my deſires, but preſently one of my Rope-brokers gave me information of a place fit for that purpoſe, and that the like was not any where to be found. Being prickt on with the deſire of novelty, and to underſtand the curioſities therein, I went according to my directions ſolely; for company in ſuch deſigns commonly fruſtrates expectations. They adviſed me when I came to the door, to pretend I came to enquire out lodgings: At the firſt, I verily thought my ſelf abuſed by theſe Rogues, or miſtaken in the houſe, when I ſaw a Porter ſtanding at the door with his tipt-ſtaff: To undeceive my ſelf, I confidently, yet civilly askt him, whether there were any Lodgings to be let there? Yes Sir, (ſaid he) which you may view if you will give your ſelf the trouble of walking in. I had no ſooner entred the door, but I was met by a grave Matron, who readily under-

ſtood (as I conceived) my approach, by her ſentinels above in the windows. Madam (ſaid I) I am informed, that here are lodgings to be let. There is ſo, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) and with that conducted me into her Parlor (which was gallantly furniſhed) there to take a ſtricter view of me, as to my perſon, but more eſpecially my garb, by which ſhe might partly judge how well lined my pockets were. After the reſolution of ſome trivial queſtions, for diſcourſe ſake, ſhe was ſo well ſatisfied in me, that ſhe ſhewed me the way up one pair of ſtairs, into a very large and fair Dining-room hung with rich Tapiſtry, and adorned round with excellent Pictures, the Effigies of divers Ladies (as I took them to be) renowned and celebrated in all ages, for the faireſt and moſt beautiful of that Sex. A ſervant brought us up immediately after our entry into that room, a bottle of Sack, without any order given, as I could perceive; out of which the old Gentlewoman drank to me, expreſſing my welcome. For want of other diſcourſe (as I thought) becauſe we were both ſilent a while, for I was contemplating her face, in which I could then ſee ſtill the goodly ruines of a beautiful and handſome countenance; Sir, ſaid ſhe, as you are a Gentleman, you may have ſome knowledge in that noble Art of Limning, ſince for its excellency it is in theſe our days (and hath been in moſt ages) much ſtudied by the Gentry of this Nation; wherefore, your judgement, Sir, which of all theſe Pictures is the beſt drawn, or according to the rules of Phyſiognomy, hath the beſt features? Madam, ſaid I, I ſhall freely give you my judgement; which is, This, in my opinion

(pointing at one) for ſhe hath a full large front, her archt eye-brows are thick and black, without any ſtragling hairs; her eyes are of the ſame colour, and by their intuitive faculty ſeem to penetrate that which they look on; paſſing her cheeks, which carry in them an excellent air, and her noſe, which is neither too long nor too ſhort, view her lips, whoſe plumpneſs and redneſs reſemble a double Cherry; and then for the dimples in her cheeks and chin, I could make them the ſubject of an whole days diſcourſe: what might be ſaid more of this repreſentation, I ſhall wave, wiſhing my ſelf no greater happineſs, then to diſcourſe the reſt with the real ſubſtance; which is not impoſſible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to believe your own eyes; and ſo inſtantly thereupon withdrew her ſelf, leaving me amazed at what I had already ſeen, my heart the mean time beating an alarm to my paſſions, to be all in readineſs at the approach of this Celeſtial Creature. Hearing a ruſtling of Silks, I drew my eyes off the Picture, and looking towards the door, there I ſaw enter an Angel; for I could not believe there could be ſo much perfection in any one mortal: with profound reverence I ſtood at a diſtance, admiring, or rather adoring her perſon, till ſhe ſmilingly and familiarly deſired me to ſit down. Being come to my ſelf, I could talk to her; and in half an hour, confidence had repoſſeſt her ancient ſeat in me. It will not only take up too much time, but alſo offend the ears of the modeſt Reader, here to inſert what diſcourſes we had; therefore I ſhall wave them, and come to the concluſion. Sir, ſaid ſhe, I queſtion not but that you are acquainted with

the cuſtoms of the Houſe. I proteſted to her, I was altogether ignorant. Why, you know that you may call for what Wine you pleaſe, not exceeding four Bottles; and if you pleaſe to eat, you ſhall have ſome choice bit ſuitable to the ſeaſon, &c., if you ſtay not all night, your expence ſhall be but forty ſhillings, and you ſhall have to boot, the enjoyment of a Miſtreſs beſides: but if you ſtay all night, then thus muſt you do (and with that drew forth ten pieces of Gold) whether you fancy me or any elſe, that matters not, you muſt depoſit before you go to bed ten pound, laying it underneath your own head, and for every kiſs, &c., take a piece back again, and if you draw in this manner all your own ſtake, you may next day be diſmiſt with a great deal of applauſe, without expending a penny, but what you ſhall be pleaſed to diſtribute voluntarily among the ſervants. I was ſtark mad to be at it, and ſo impatient, that I preſently told out ten pieces. Telling my money the next morning, I found I had eight pound of my ten, but I deſerved to have had my money trebled: however, for the preſent, I thought forty ſhillings was never better ſpent, nor husbanded with ſo much recreation and delight. By her I underſtood what manner of cattel they were that frequented that houſe, though proſtitutes and free-booters, yet ſuch as ſcorned a piece of Country-dirt: ſome whereof, were perſons of no mean quality, which came thither to ſatisfie (what was impoſſible to do) their inſatiate luſts, and therefore enacted that Law or Cuſtom of depoſiting ten pieces, meerly to incite ſuch who were confident of themſelves to make trial of their

skill for the lucre of gain ; and to the intent that it might not be diſcovered, either by their Husbands, or ſuch relations or friends that had received cauſes of jealouſie, they had their peeping-holes, where they might plainly and fully ſee ſuch who came upon the like accounts. If the Gentleman was unknown to that Gentlewoman whoſe Picture he elected to bear him company that night, ſhe with much freedom would appear, and tender her ſelf as the ſubject of his pleaſure; otherwiſe abſcond her ſelf. If ſo, and the Gentleman prefs hard for a ſight of her the Picture repreſented, why then Madam Bawd finds ſome excuſe or other, as that Picture ſhe bought caſually at ſecond-hand as ſhe paſt through *Long-lane*, or that it was the gift of ſome friend of hers ; with many other fictions, meerly to make him deſiſt from the purſuance of his deſires. Being very much pleaſed in the ſatisfaction of my fancy, I took my leave, not without ſome acknowledgement thereof, in theſe confequent lines.

What is a Bawdy-houſe ? *I fain would know :*
It is a thing appears ſo by the ſhow.
Is that a Brothel, *or an houſe of State,*
Where Tip-ſtaff Porters do attend the gate ?
Then there are many noble ones I ſee,
And Palaces may Courts of Bawd'ry be :
This was a ſtately houſe, and yet was ſuch ;
In ſtately houſes Ladies take a touch.
It muſt be ſo, th' have little elſe to do,
Then ſtudy how to anſwer thoſe that woo.
Such pamper'd fleſh muſt yield, and few gain-ſays
Their own luſts motions, but with formal nays ;
Rather then want that ſatisfaction, moſt
Stick not to purchaſe it, though at the coſt

Of health aud wealth; delighting thus in ſence,
They never think too much the recompence.
Why ſhould they then fond ſouls rail at an Whore,
Since they themſelves are on that very ſcore?
And damn all Brothels *too to Hell; but ſtay*
What houſe is not a Brothel-houſe *I pray?*
Many I've ſeen, with this none can compare;
A new Exchange where Ladies ſell their Ware
To none; they ſcorn thereon to ſet a price,
But leave it ſolely to the Chapman's choice:
No Sale-ſhop, but a Game at In *and* In;
Throw In *and* In *but ten times, and you win.*
Here by a female Council 'twas judg'd fit,
He that reaps pleaſure here, muſt pay for it;
Not with his purſe, ſo much as brawny back,
Solely affecting ſuch who hold them tack:
And to provoke men on, no want of wine;
Nay, all delights do here in one combine
To raiſe mens fancy, that he may do o're
That thing he did but even then before.
Her roſie dimpled cheeks, vermilion lips,
Did bluſh to ſee her ivory thighs and hips:
Her round ſoft belly ſwelled with pride below
Like a ſmall Hill 'twas overſpread with ſnow:
Let a warm hand but touch it, and it will
Its moiſture into pearly drops diſtill;
We kiſt and parted, I ſigh'd, ſhe did ſob;
She for her luſty Lad, *I for my* Mob.

CHAP. LVIII.

He finds out his two Comerades (*the* Gameſters) *and after ſome conſultation had, they reſolved to reaſſume their* quondam *trade of* Padding; *are taken, and committed to* Newgate.

FRom this houſe of pleaſure, (where I muſt ingenuouſly confeſs I never received more for ſo little expence) I went in ſearch of my two Gameſters, whom caſually I met: The next Tavern was our Council-chamber, where Wine was the dictator. We there unanimouſly concluded, it was a thing beneath us to pick up here and there Crowns or Angels but reſolved on Have at all, knowing that a five hours adventure might make us poſſeſſors of 500 *l.* With this reſolution we went and bought us horſes, with all things requiſite for our intended expedition: being all ready and well prepared, we took our leaves of *London* for a while; we had not rid above fifteen miles, but we baited: the Hoſtler knowing me, and what deſigns I had formerly been upon, and imagining I was ſteering the ſame courſe, whiſpered me in the ear, that he had a deſire to ſpeak with me inſtantly: taking my opportunity, under the pretence of looking to my horſe, he informed me, that there were three within drinking, that on the next morning would travel ſuch a Road, and that they had a great charge with them. I thankt him, bidding him come to my chamber at night, where I would diſcourſe farther with him. Then

he gave me a ſummary account of all; and after a ſmart drinking bout, with promiſes to him of reward if we proſpered, we betook our ſelves to our reſt: in the morning very early we called for our horſes, and rid in that very Road through which thoſe three Travellers were to paſs, where we planted our ſelves very conveniently: about three hours after, we could diſcern them at a diſtance: by that time we had made our ſelves ready, they were at hand: juſt at the bottom of a ſmall hill we bid them ſtand; they askt us to what intent: We told them, that we were younger Brothers, and wanted mony, and therefore muſt borrow ſome of them. With that, they all in an inſtant drew their ſwords; being not unprovided with Pocket-piſtols, we fired at them, and they again at us: we were all at level-coyl, and very equally matcht; the ſecond ſhot killed my horſe, and a fourth bereaved my Conſort of life; the third Rogue ran away: being in a labyrinth of perplexity, I thought it the beſt way to ſell my life at as dear a rate as I could (knowing very well that if I were taken I ſhould be hanged.) I fought with my ſword as long as I could ſtand upon my legs, wounding both them and their horſes; but at laſt one unhappily ran me through the ſword-hand, and thereupon I was diſarmed. I was carried by them before the next Juſtice of Peace, whom they enquired out, and by a *Mittimus* was committed. I could not now expect any thing but death: but the next news I heard was, that I muſt be removed to *Newgate*, there being other things to be alleadged to my charge. I was mounted again, in order to my removal, but very ill hors'd, being,

bound thereunto and pinnion'd, my greateſt grief (when I came into *London*-ſtreets) was to hear the various diſcants of the good women on me; ſome ſaying, What a pity it is ſuch an handſome young man ſhould come to the gallows ſo ſoon? Others judged I had deſerved it, otherwiſe I ſhould not have rid to Town in that poſture pinnion'd, and ſo attended with a guard. As ſoon as the keeper ſaw me, leaping for joy, O Sir, are you come again? we will take care that you ſhall not be any more annoyed with ſmells proceeding from the Vault; and ſo without more ado, laid as much iron on me, as there is in ſome Smiths ſhops, and confined me cloſe Priſoner to the Dungeon.

Which made me curſe thoſe acts the Fates have done,
To cauſe a ſetting ere a riſing Sun:
But ſince my doom is now decreed by Fate,
I muſt indur't, repentance is too late.

CHAP. LIX.

He much condemns the follies of his paſt actions, and in token of his unfeigned repentance, gives ſome general inſtructions to his Country-men, firſt how to know Padders on the Road, *by infallible ſigns; with other remarques worthy the obſervation of any Traveller, laid down in ſome conſequent Chapters.*

BEing in this terreſtrial Hell, (where darknefs, horror and defpair furrounded me) my conſcience ſtarted out of her dead ſleep, and preſently demanded of me a ſevere account of what I had done. My guilt was ſuch, I had not a word to ſpeak for my ſelf, but wiſhed my production (as my actions were) inhumane. What did not then the apprehenſion of an approaching and unavoidable death, fuggeſt to my thoughts! to have only dyed (though with the moſt exquiſite, terrifying, and ſoul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing the ſpirit of man ſhould ſhrink at; but the conſideration of an eternal puniſhment hereafter, juſtly inflicted on ſuch who have offended an infinite God, abſolutely diſtracted me: So that methought I already heard the howls and hollow grones of damned Souls, which add to the weight of their everlaſting miſery. Having ſomewhat appeaſed my enraged conſcience, by a faithful promiſe and conſtant reſolution to lead a new life, if I ſhould eſcape the danger of the Law, I de-

termined with my ſelf, to ſhew the firſt Fruits of my reformation, by publiſhing ſomething to the world, that might ſerve as a guide for Travellers, how they might paſſe in ſafety on their way. To that purpoſe I acquainted my Keeper with my good intentions; but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the publick, and therefore rejected my good motion, till I greas'd his fiſt, and then I had the accommodation of a Candle, Pen, Ink and Paper, *&c.* The uncertainty of their attire, various diſguiſes, non-conſtancy of reſidence, and changgeable names, makes me incapable to do what I would: Therefore I will do what I can (according to my ſmall experience, occaſioned by my no long continuance among them.) Riding on the Road (if you have company) it may be two or three ſhall overtake you, and ſeem to be much afraid of you: they will pretend to be even now ſet upon by half a dozen ſtout fellows, but that they did beat the Rogues, forcing them to fly for ſafety: and this fiction they uſe to ſeal with basket-hilt-oaths: thus by your anſwers they will find whether you dare fight; if not, they will wait an opportunity to act their roguery on you; which having done, as a reward for what unwillingly you have left them, they will pretend to give you a word ſhall protect you better than your ſword, from any injury ſhall be done you upon the like account; but this is nothing elſe than a meer cheat, and no ſecuring charm; for we valued not words, when our wants were in purſuit of Monies. Not but that we uſed ſome formal words among our ſelves, when ready to

ſeize a prize; and obſerving other company, either before or behind, to deſiſt a while, by which we knew what we had to do, and the ignorant Travellers ſuſpected no wrong.

CHAP. LX.

What is to be taken heed unto, before the Traveller begin his Journey.

MOſt reſpected Country-men, and more eſpecially you, who frequently paſs the Road, the moſt part of my notorious wicked life having been conſumed in all manner of cheats and debauchery, and that in part of late maintained by robbing: ſeeing now the wretchedneſs of that courſe of life, and being ſenſible of the injury I have done my Country, I looked upon my ſelf as bound to ſatisfie the debt I owe to you, to the uttermoſt of my power; which reacheth to an act not more ſatisfactory, than good advice how to avoid thoſe dangers which too many of late days have fallen into, ſince Dammee Plumes of Feathers came in faſhion. Firſt then, if you carry a charge about you, make it not known to any, and conceal the time of your departure in your own breaſt; for it is a cuſtom no leſs common than indiſcreet and fooliſh, among ſome ſort of perſons, to blaze abroad among their reputed friends, the time of their intended journey, and vainglorioufly make them acquainted with what conſiderable ſumms they ſhould carry with them; by which means

the Son hath oftentimes betrayed the Father, and one friend another, by informing or complotting with ſome of the Padding ſociety ; the diſcoverer ſharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quarter or more of the gain he betrays, when but for this fooliſh humour they had not been way-lay'd. Again, have a ſpecial care, both of the Hoſtler, Chamberlain and Hoſt himſelf : the two firſt the Thief is ſure to bribe ; and the laſt, in expectation of a ſhare with them (as it is ſo ordered) or in hopes that the major part of what they get ſhall be profuſely ſpent in his houſe, gives them items where the booty lies. Eſpecially be ſure on the road to aſſociate with none but ſuch as you find inclined rather to leave your company then keep it ; for they are very ſuſpicious perſons, and oftentimes prove dangerous, that preſs into your ſociety, and are very inquiſitive to know whither you intend, ſpinning out the time with many impertinent queſtions. But if you would know whether the ſtrangers intentions be honeſtly inclined, take occaſion to make ſome ſtay : obſerve you in the mean time their motion : for if they make an halt, or alight, ſo that you may overtake them, follow at a diſtance ; but if their pace be ſo ſlow that you needs muſt overtake them, look about you, and provide for your ſafety ; for there is no ſurer ſymptom of an Highway-man than ſuch purpoſed delays. The other uſual marks of ſuch Moths be theſe ; they commonly throw a great Leaguer-cloak over their ſhoulders, covering their faces, or elſe they have viſibly diſguiſed their faces in ſome manner or other. Now of late they find very uſeful a Vizard, in every reſpect, (but

for the largeneſs) like the *a-la-mode* Vizard-masks ſo much worn by Gentlewomen, who endeavour to conceal the ſhame of their wanton actions by abſconding their faces. If you meet with any who have none of theſe things, as ſoon as they come ſomewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face: if they turn their heads from you, keep your diſtance, and ride from them with what expedition you can; but being ſurprized by any you know, be very careful that you diſcover it not to them; for theſe Deſperado's never think themſelves ſecure, till they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting aſunder the thread of your life. Obſerve whether their beards and hair of their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit; and be ſure to beware of him that rides in a Mountier-cap, and of ſuch as whiſper oft; or of any one ſingle perſon that intrudes into your company; for that is one way they have to enſnare the Traveller: he will tell you a great many merry and facetious ſtories, meerly to ingratiate himſelf with you; which having obtained, he ſhews himſelf more than ordinary civil, and ſo fearful of any thing that may prejudice his new acquaintance, that he no ſooner eſpies two riding toward them, but he apparently trembles, and will preſently queſtion his new friends, what charge they have about them: if little, the beſt way were to yield to theſe approaching perſons, if Thieves, rather than hazard a life; but if it be any thing conſiderable, he will preſently vow to be true to them, and rather than they ſhould come to any danger or loſs, he will fight with them as long as he hath breath. Theſe ſo cauſleſly ſuſpected, were perhaps down-

right honeſt fellows: but before they have travelled five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they overtake two or three more, one it may be riding aſide with twiſts of Hay inſtead of Boots, it may be with a Fork, Bill, or Goad in his hand, like a Country-Boor. It may be your newly-entertained treacherous Friend will tell you that he will make good ſport with this Country-Bumpkin, and ſo to that purpoſe ask him ſome fooliſh impertinent queſtion, which the other ſhall anſwer as ridiculouſly; ſo ſpinning out the time till a convenient place and a fit opportunity ſerve; then ſhall this pretended friend ſeize one of you himſelf, and my Hedge-creeper turn Hector, and lay hold on another: and now will it be in vain for you to ſtrive, for nothing but money will ranſome you out of their hands.

CHAP. LXI.

Inſtructions in what manner, at what time, and what Road is moſt ſafe to ride.

THere are ſo many ways to rob the innocent, that it behoveth every man to be very circumſpect, how, when, and where he rides. If you have a quantity of money about you, chuſe rather to ride by night then day; for by this means you are freed from any Horſeman or Cutter whatever. But this courſe cannot ſeal your protection from baſe ſheep-ſtealing penny-Rogues, the baſeneſs and lowneſs of whoſe ſpirits will ſtoop for a Noble, though they hang for their pains; therefore take

heed of their long poles, and that they do not ſuddenly ſtart out and lay hold on your bridle, As for the nobler ſort of Rogues, this they believe as an undeniable Maxime, that none will ride by night that are worth the robbing. Beſides, they are oblig'd to take their Inn betimes, leſt through miſtruſt they ſhould be apprehended: Moreover, they hardly dare adventure in the dark, becauſe they cannot diſcern what dangerous defences the aſſailed have, as Piſtols, or other private weapons in readineſs, nor ſee their own advantages: and withall, it will be no difficult matter to convey in the obſcurity of the night, what they have undiſcovered, into ſome ditch. Chuſe to travel in by-roads, for it is a general rule with High-way-men to keep their ſtation on the greateſt Roads, that of the number that paſs by, they may ſelect ſuch as they think will prove the richeſt booties. Here now as a Corollary, take notice of a fooliſh cuſtom: Some when they ride by any place that commonly ſpeaks danger, they will buſtle up together ſide by ſide; which is the uſual overthrow of ſuch. Wherefore take my counſel here, when ere you ride, in fear eſpecially, ride far aſunder, at leaſt a ſtones throw: by ſo doing none durſt ſet upon you, fearing leſt this ſtragling order give ſome leave to eſcape undoubtedly, and ſo raiſe the Country in their purſuit.

CHAP. LXII.

How a man is to behave himſelf if beſet or ſurpriſed.

WHen the Rogue bids you ſtand, look not about as if amazed, or hoping for a reſcue; for this doth but encourage them to the height of reſolution and expedition: but looking ſternly, as if fear were a ſtranger to you, making your brow the throne of rage and fury, draw, and undauntedly tell them, that though you have but little, yet you would willingly ſacrifice your life rather than loſe a penny; and add ten more to it (if you had them) then have your reputation ſtained with cowardiſe. This is the readieſt and moſt certain way to ſave both your mony and credit; for they fighting with a guilty conſcience within and without, againſt Country, Law, and Juſtice, if nobly a man reſiſts (this I know experimentally) the ſtouteſt, and moſt undaunted, and higheſt ſpirit of them all will ſtoop to diſcouragement. Some I have known, that durſt out-brave the roaring Cannon to the mouth, yet their courages have found an alteration, when on this account they have met with a bold and nobly reſolved Antagoniſt: but if by your own negligence, and the malevolency of fortune, the pleaſure of your journey is eclipſed and clouded by a ſudden ſurprifal, and that you ſee no hopes but that you muſt yield, be not ſo unwiſe as to ſtrive when it is too late, but give them the beſt words you can;

and rack your wits to pleaſe their ear, moſt devoutly wiſhing you had more moneys to ſupply their preſent occaſions; and ſo baniſhing all dejectedneſs from your looks, deliver ſome, and ſo perhaps they will let you paſs without further ſearch. If they make a ſecond offer, yield freely to it: then it may be they will ſift you ſoundly; never in that time lay your hand near your money, and ſeeming fearleſs, it will be a means to make their ſuſpition of a greater ſum to vaniſh. This I have known my ſelf, that when I have taken ſo much as pleaſed me well, by mens fear I have had grounds to think they had more, and ſo made me reſearch; laying my hand but near the place where they had concealed the reſt, ſuddenly would they cry out, that they were undone, when as yet I had found nothing; but by this their fooliſh and undiſcreet carriage I have found the remainder, which otherwiſe might have been ſecure and ſafe from me.

CHAP. LXIII.

Directions, if robbed, how to follow the Thieves; which way to ſet Hue *and* Cry *after them; how to coaſt, and where to find them.*

IF you are robbed, there is no help but to indeavour to ſurprize the Thieves by a ſtrict purſuit: Therefore let no *Remora* or delay deter you from obtaining your wiſh, and ſo ſeize them that ſo lately ſeized you. In the firſt place, ſcowre the next Road, not ſtreight before, but either on the right or left hand; for they know *Hue* and *Cries* never croſs the paſſages, but go ſtraight along. If in ſo doing you miſs them, then conclude they are ſheltred in ſome Inn which you have paſt, and therefore you muſt ſet ſome careful Spies, with a ſufficient aſſiſtance near at hand, and be confident you will ſee them come that way, without the leaſt apprehenſion of fear, or fear of apprehenſion. But this obſerve, that if they light of any conſiderable ſum, then do they ride that night to their general Rendezvous in *London*, which is too ſure a ſhelter for them: but obſervably take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their ſubtilty, as any ever the Devil enrich'd their knowledge with; For, if you are robbed in the eaſtern quarter, purſue them not in the direct Road to *London* with *Hue* and *Cry*, for by ſome other way they are fled; but haſte to the City, and in *Weſtminſter*, *Holborn*, the *Strand* and *Covent-garden* ſearch ſpeedily, for there they are. If Northward they light on you, then to *South-*

wark, the *Bankſide*, or *Lambeth* they are gone; and when you find any one, ſeize all with him, for they are all Companions that are together.

CHAP. LXIV.

Cordial advice, and infallible inſtructions for the Innkeeper, *how to know Thieves from his honeſt Gueſts.*

METhinks the many tragical examples of Innkeepers, who have harboured and countenanced Thieves, were ſufficient (I ſhould think) to deter thoſe that ſurvive from doing the like; wherefore my advice to them in general is, that their chiefeſt care be, not to wink at any ſuch life-deſtroying actions for hope of gain, leſt that ſweet be imbittered by future trouble and diſgrace. That you may know them, obſerve theſe Rules: Firſt, they are extraordinary curious about their horſes; they will have them as ſtrangely dreſt, as ſtrangely fed, with Maſhes, Bread, Fleſh, and mingled provender, and that in an unuſual quantity. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horſes, they will endeavour to palliate their deſign therein, by telling that their tricks and good abilities deſerve it: nay, ſometimes they will boaſt, that their worthy ſervices will ſoon repay the coſt; uſing the like dark words to that effect, which are palpable grounds for ſuſpition. It is their cuſtom likewiſe to ask, Whoſe horſe is that? or, What is the owner thereof ſtanding by? of what function or quality? whither he intends to travel? how far, and when? Obſerve again,

that their Cloak-bags are for the moſt part empty, carrying them only but to make a ſhew. Next, the Chamberlain conducting them to their Chamber, he is preſently diſmiſt; but let him hearken, and if they are High-way men, 'tis ten to one but they fall to ſhare what they have purchaſed that day; and he ſhall ſee every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the Chamber. This they never deſer, leſt he which hath the purſe ſhould cheat the reſt. But above all, for their diſcovery, make this trial; Cauſe one to knock haſtily at the gate, giving him inſtructions in the mean time that attends on them, to obſerve their carriage then, and he ſhall ſee them ſtart and ſtare in each others face with ghaſtly looks, being ſtruck with fear and amazement: ſpeak ſo that they may hear you, ſeemingly to ſome or other in the houſe, asking what Officers thoſe are? what is their buſineſs? or whom do they look for? or the like. If they ſeem much frighted, bid them fear not, for none ſhall ſearch where they are, to offer them any injurie; and that they are as ſafe with him, as in a well fortified Caſtle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions ſo far, as that you may gather, not only ſubſtantial grounds for more then bare conjectures, but it may be they will confeſs ſomething too, deſiring your concealment and ſuccour, and they ſhall think themſelves for ever ingaged: after this you may uſe your own diſcretion. Then again, you may perceive by their loitering and diſregard of time, what they expect; for they only bait but to obſerve what purchaſe they can ſee paſs by; which when they have eſpyed, they will pretend imme-

diate buſineſs calls them to be gone, and ſo mount in great haſte. Again, when they come to an Inn to lodge, they commonly come in divided, or in ſeveral Companies, fruſtrating the *Hue* and *Cry* by their number: beſides, if one part be ſurprized, the other may eſcape; and when the reſidue comes in, they ſeem as ſtrangers one to the other, enquiring of mine Hoſt what their Companions are, what Country-men, whether he knows them? and if they find he hath either jealouſie or ſuſpition of any of them, they will feign ſome of buſineſs that neceſſitates their ſpeedy departure: but if you take them for honeſt men, as they met by ſeeming chance in your Kitchin, ſo after ſome formal civil ſalutations, and drinking together, they ſoon became acquainted, and before they part, ſhew much familiarity. Thus as I was farther endeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits, to repair what wrong my Country had ſuſtained by me, word was brought me, that I muſt immediately appear at the Bar, and there anſwer what ſhould be objected againſt me; and it was but juſt that I ſhould be now expoſed to the Law of Juſtice, ſince I had ſo often rejected and ſlighted the Law of Mercy.

CHAP. LXV.

He receives ſentence of Condemnation; he thereupon ſeriouſly contemplates Death, and conſiders Eternity.

APpearing at the Seſſions, and ſeeing ſo many of my Adverſaries ready to give in their evividence againſt me, I concluded my ſelf a leman;

my very countenance betrayed both my thoughts of guilt and defpair. In ſhort, I received ſentence of Death to be hanged at *Tyburn*, by the neck till I was dead. I thought theſe ſad tidings would have prefently deprived me of my life, and ſo have ſaved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to *Newgate*, I fancied nothing but Gibbets ſtood in my way, and that I ſaw no other trades but Cord-winders. Being entred the priſon, I was forthwith put into the Dungeon, laden with ſhackles: I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Phyſician of the ſoul, I mean a Miniſter, came to viſit me, who adviſed me to repent, ſince it was high time; and endeavouring to disburden my conſcience, by extracting from me a general ingenious confeſſion of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this perſon to have no other deſign, but merely for my ſouls ſake, I diſſected the actions of my whole life, not omitting any thing that might be accounted ſinful. He was amazed to hear ſuch notorious Roguery in one Man, and ſo young; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he adminiſtered his corroſives, and ſo thorowly ſearcht every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him. In the firſt place, he made me ſenſible of the wickedneſs of my life, and that every, nay, the leaſt evil action, deſerved the loſs of eternal and inexpreſſible happineſs, and inſtead thereof, torments everlaſting and intolerable. It will take up too much time, to give an account of every thing this pious man alleadged for my information, contrition, and conſolation: ſo effectually and powerfully he delivered his divine Meſſage, that the ob-

duratenefs of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melting into tears, was willing to have its flintineſs broken by the hammer of Sacred Writ. Finding me in ſo good a temper, he leſt me to God and my ſelf, for the perfecting of that work he had ſo hopefully and ſucceſsfully begun. I began to conſider what I was, only a ſtatue of duſt kneaded with tears, and mov'd by the hid engines of reſtleſs paſſions; a clod of earth, which the ſhorteſt Fever can burn to aſhes, and the leaſt ſhowre of rheums waſh away to nothing; and yet I made as great a noiſe in the world, as if both the Globes (thoſe glorious Twins) had been unwombed from that formleſs Chaos, by the Midwifry of my wit: all my actions were attended with ſo much ſucceſs, and ſo anſwerable to my deſires, as if I had been one of heavens privy-Counſellors; which ſwelled me up with ſo much arrogance, that I ſpake thunder, lookt lightning, and breathed deſtruction; and by the eloquence of my own vanity, I perſwaded my ſelf, that the machinations of my brain were able to unhinge the Poles: but it is otherwiſe decreed, that the Miniſters of Juſtice ſhould put a period to my boundleſs pride, to make me know I am but a man, and that mortal too. And having but a ſhort time to live, I thought it very requiſite to think of that which muſt ſhortly be the means to convey me either to bliſs or woe; by ſo doing, I ſeized on death before it ſeized on me. It was the fitteſt ſubject I could buſie my ſoul about; for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality? and what ſo neceſſary, as the thought of death? *Seneca* ſaith, *When he was a young man, he ſtudied to live*

well; when aged how to dye well: but I never practiſed *Artem bene vivendi*, and therefore am ſo ignorant in *Arte bene moriendi;* which makes me ſo fearful, that I know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks I already hear that doleful ſaying, *Ite imparata in paratum.* My ſole companions were now deſpair and fear, for the King of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing abſolutely fearful, but what tends to death, and I am confident, the fear of death is worſe than the pains of death: for, fear of death kills us often, whereas death it ſelf can do it but once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, becauſe fears betray, and cares diſorder thoſe ſuccours which reaſon would afford to both: and though ſome ſay, he is more ſorrowful than is neceſſary, that is ſorrowful before there is neceſſity; yet that ſoul cannot be in a good condition, ſo long as it fears to think of dying; but did I not ſorrow now, and juſtly fear that meſſenger that muſt bring me before the Tribunal of Heaven, I ſhould have too little time to waſh away ſo many black ſpots, eſpecially having nothing but objects of terror and amazement before my eyes; but I never needed have feared what I ſhould ſuffer when dead, if I had not deſerved it whilſt I lived. Life is not alike to all men: To ſuch a wicked wretch as I am, the beſt had been, that I never had been, and the next beſt were to live long; in this condition, it was ill for me that I was born, worſe for me that I muſt die: for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death; whereas a good man is otherwiſe minded, he counts his

end the beſt of his being, for that brings him to the fruition of his hope: could death end miſery, it ſhould be the greateſt happineſs I would wiſh: but my conſcience will not let me lye, for I fear the end of my prefent miſeries will be but the beginning of worſe; yea, ſuch as death it ſelf cannot terminate. Now came into my mind the conſideration of Eternity: and with it, I remembred how it was reprefented by the Ancients, which very much helpt my prefent Contemplation; which was thus: A vaſt Den full of horror, round about which a Serpent winds it ſelf, and in the winding bites it ſelf by the tail. At the right-hand of this Den, ſtands a young man of a moſt beautiful and pleaſant countenance, holding in his right-hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his left an Harp. In the entrance ſits an old man oppoſite, and having his eyes very intent on his Table-book, writes according to the dictations of the young man ſtanding by. At the left-hand of this Den, ſits a grave Matron gray-headed, and having her eyes always buſied. At the mouth hereof, are four ſtairs aſcending by degrees; the firſt is of iron, the ſecond of braſs, the third of ſilver, and the laſt of Gold: On theſe are little children ſporting up and down, playing, fearleſs, and inapprehenſive of falling. The ſight of this Emblem of Eternity inculcated into my thoughts this interpretation: The Den, which was bottomleſs, ſignified to me the incomprehenſibility of Eternity; the circumferating Serpent, Time; the young man, Nature: on Earth and Hell are her arrows faſtned; but in Heaven there is the Harp, fulneſs of joy, and pleaſures inexpreſſible: The old man

I lookt upon to be Fate; the grave Matron, Providence; the Stairs, diſtinct Times and Ages; the Children running up and down the Stairs without fear of danger, do ſignifie fooliſh Man and Woman, who regardleſs of their ſalvation, ſport and play with it ſo long, till they ſlipt into Eternity. So have I been careleſs of that which ſhould have been my greateſt care, though I knew (but would not know) that the leaſt and lighteſt touch of death were ſufficient, in a moment to tranſlate me from Time to Eternity. Were we all to live a thouſand years (whereas the Executioner is to put a period to my life in one day longer) we ſhould before we had ran half our courſe, in our very non-age, apply our ſelves to repentance and newneſs of life. Now, now is the time, every hour, every moment: now one part of an hour (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all Eternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my time (this one day I have left me) to cancel my debts and treſpaſſes againſt Heaven, which I can never do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to come hereafter. Let ſuch who have liv'd (as I) in all manner of wickedneſs, conſider what Eternity is, which may make them return like the penitent Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a Circle running back into it ſelf, whoſe center is every where, and circumference no where, that is to ſay, infinite: It is an Orb that hath neither beginning nor ending: Or it is a Wheel,

Volvitur & volvetur in omne volubilis evum.

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever:
A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning never.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about, which returns again to the ſame point from whence it began, and ſtill wheels about again. It is an ever-running Fountain, whither the waters after many turnings flow back again, that they may always flow. It is a bottomleſs pit, whoſe revolutions are endleſs. It may be compared to a ſnake bowed back unto it ſelf orbicularly, holding its tail in its mouth; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaſeth to begin. What is Eternity? It is a duration always preſent; it is one perpetual day, which is not divided into that which is paſt, and that which is to come: Or, it is an age of ages, never expiring, and never changing: Or, more properly, it is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the bleſſed always begin a bleſſed life, in which the damned always die, and after all death and ſtrugling therewith, always begin again to die. As Hell-torments are eternal, ſo will the conſcience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid deſpair for the life paſt: Their worm ſhall not die. The Poets of old alluded to this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable of *Tytius*, whom *Virgil* feigneth, that a flying Vulture every day gnaws and tears his Liver, which is every night again repaired and made up, that every day the Vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the worm I ſpeak of? and what is his Liver, but the conſcience always gnawn and tormented? Not only this (as he that preacht my Funeral-Sermon told me) but all the torments of the damned ſhall never have end, becauſe there can be no place

for ſatisfaction: For although theſe inexpreſſible torments ſhall continue many millions of years; yet ſhall there not one hour, no, nor one minute of reſpite be granted: Let us then be no longer forgetful of our ſelves, and ſo degenerate into beaſts, but ſeriouſly to conſider our end, and what ſhall come after. All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almoſt at my journeys end: I ſit on the Stairs of Eternity, expecting when one ſmall thruſt ſhall plunge me into the bottomleſs pit, where one hours puniſhment ſhall be more grievous (as *Thomas a Kempis* ſaith) then 100 years here in the bittereſt of torments: There they are tortured for infinite millions of ages, & are ſo far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for any end. The conſideration of theſe things brought me to that paſs, as I was content to ſuffer any thing in this life, ſo that I might not ſuffer in the life to come. Though a King, I ſhould willingly and patiently have endured what *Andronicus* did, Emperour of the Eaſt; who (as Hiſtory relates) being overcome and taken priſoner by *Iſaac Angelo*, had immediately two great chains of iron put about his neck; and being laden with fetters, was brought before *Iſaac*, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abuſed at their pleaſure. This rabble being incenſt and ſtimulated on by revenge, ſome buffeted him, ſome baſtinado'd him, others pulled him by the beard, twitching the hair from his head, daſhing out his teeth, dragging him in publick through the ſtreets: the inſolence of women was ſuch, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his Imperial face. After all this,

they cut off his right-hand: thus maimed and bruiſed, he was thrown into the Dungeon of Thieves and Robbers, without either attendance, or the leaſt thing neceſſary to ſuſtain life: Some few days being paſt, they put out one of his eyes: thus mangled, they put upon him an old rotten ſhort coat, ſhav'd his head, ſet him upon a ſcabbed Camel, with his face towards the Tail, put on his head a crown of Garlick, made him hold in his hand the Camels Tail inſtead of a Scepter, and ſo they carried him through the Market-place very leiſurely, with great pomp & triumph. Here did the moſt impudent crew, and baſe among the people, like Tygers, after an inhumane manner fall upon him, not conſidering in the leaſt, that not three days before he was no leſs then an Emperour, crowned with a royal Diadem, whoſe frowns were inevitable death, was honoured, yea, adored of all men. Their rage and madneſs fitted every one with inſtruments to execute their revenge: Some ſtruck him on the head with ſticks, others filled his noſtrils with dirt, others ſqueezed ſpunges upon his face ſoaked in humane and beaſtial excrements: ſome threw ſtones, others dirt at him. An impudent woman as he paſt, came running out with ſcalding water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All theſe indignities which they exerciſed upon this poor Emperor, did not ſatisfie their inſatiate revenge, but bringing him to the Theatre, took him down from the Camel, and hung him up by the heels: yet did he behave himſelf like a man, by bearing patiently what was inflicted upon him, being never heard to cry out againſt the cruelty of his fate. All that he was

heard to ſay, was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miſerere, Domine miſerere.* Thus hanging up, one would have thought their malice ſhould have ceaſed; but they ſpared him not as long as he lived; for pulling his Coat from his body, they tore him with their nails. One more cruel then the reſt, ran his Sword through his bowels as he was hanging: Two others, to try whoſe Sword was ſharpeſt, cut him and gaſht him in ſeveral places; and ſo ended his life miſerably, but was not ſuffered to be buried. Oh, that my condition were as *Andronicus*, to ſuffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not periſh for ever! I ſhould be content to be miſerable for ſo ſhort a time, that I may not be miſerable to all Eternity. Queſtionleſs he could never have ſuffered ſuch things ſo conſtantly and couragiouſly, but that he had Eternity in his thoughts; and were our minds imployed about the ſame ſubject, any adverſity or affliction we ſhould more eaſily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Monday morning I ſlept not, neither did I eat or drink: then did I hear my paſſing-bell (having heard the day before my Funeral-Sermon) every ſtroke methought carried my ſoul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilſt I was in the depth of Meditation, and my ſoul breathing out this ſhort ejaculation.

Is there no hope now of Relief,
In this Extremity?
Mercy e're now hath ſav'd a Thief,
And may do as much for me.

Behold, a friend came to me(that never viſited me during my imprifonment) but now in the time of need brought me a Reprieve; when I lookt thereon at firſt, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I dreamt, or that grief had ſo diſtracted me, as that I imagined things that are not. My friend at length cleer'd up my doubts; but I ſhall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I were beſt accept of this ſelf-preſerving courteſie: For, methought I had ſo well ſettled my eternal concerns, as that I had nothing elſe to do but die.

About a fortnight after, I was ſent aboard, in order to my tranſportation; my ſentence of Death being converted into a ſeven years baniſhment.

CHAP. LXVI.

Being on Board he deſcants on his enſuing miſery; yet draws comfort to himſelf from the ſufferings of others. He relateth how he was freed from his intended baniſhment by a double Shipwrack; the manner thereof he amply declareth.

THe Ship that was to tranſport me lay at *Wollidge:* about the latter end of *Aug.* 1650. I was conveyed aboard a luſty Ship, a *Virginia*-Merchantman, and was inſtantly clapt under hatches; but I knew they would quickly call me aloft, if there was any fighting work; as ſuch a thing might eaſily be, ſince the Sea was no where free from ſuch as would make a prize of what Veſſels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, ink, and paper about me, I buſied my thoughts and pen in contriving conſolation for my diſquieted and diſconſolate mind, thus:

Why ſhould not I with patience ſuffer? ſome
Have kiſt what brought them to their Martyrdom.
Many a Saint hath ſuffer'd on a Croſs;
And our good King endur'd three Kingdoms loſs.
Shall I (fool) then at any crofs take grief?
Tyburn's *the way to heaven for many a Thief.*
But muſt I now to Sea? well, 'tis no matter;
Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter.
Let not my ſoul deſpond, ſince 'tis my hap,
I'll ſcorn that Whore, *and truſt to* Thetis *lap:*

Though ſhe may foam with anger, and the wind
May aggravate her paſſion, I may find
Her calm again, and ſet me on that ſhore,
Where I may Moor, and put to ſea no more.
Neptune *may ſhake his* Trident, *and each wave,*
Or tumbling billow may become my grave.
A thundring Cannon may pronounce my death,
Or a ſmall ſhot bereave me of my breath:
All which may throng together in full crowds,
To make m'a winding-ſheet *of* tatter'd ſhrowds.
The winds ſhall ſing my requiem, *and my knell*
Shall be a peal of Ordnance, they ſhall tell
My angry fates I'm dead, and the Sea muſt
Intomb without the form of duſt to duſt.
But I hope better things, and do believe,
My good events will make the furies *grieve.*

About the beginning of *September* following, we ſet ſail for the *Downs*. As ſoon as we had weighed Anchor, a thick melancholy cloud encompaſſed my thoughts, and ſo much ſadneſs ſeized my ſpirits, as if I had been not ſo much taking my leave of my dearly beloved Country, as leaving the world. Though my ſoul could not foreſee the leaſt danger, nor be troubled at the apprehenſion of what ſlavery I was to undergo in my exilement; yet certainly I found this ſtrange anguiſh and propaſſion to be ominous, proceeding from ſomething divine, which is able to unriddle the Apocrypha of nature, and made my ſoul ſenſible of ſome approaching miſchief. Having been about 5 days at Sea, one morning, juſt as the Sun began to gild our Hemiſphere with his Golden rays, the Boatſwain made us all turn out, & commanded all

hands upon deck: coming aloft, I could not ſee a man in whoſe face there was not written the pale characters of fear and amazement; which were the infallible marks of ſome ſudden and enſuing danger. Upon my firſt coming on board, I could diſcern a great many red nos'd fellows (a drunkards trueſt *indicium*) but the apprehenſion of preſent danger had now extinguiſht all thoſe flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water: The faces indeed of the ſtouteſt amongſt us, were ſo altered by this affrightment, that we knew not almoſt one another; loſing our natural complexions through the extremity of paſſion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew what a prayer was; another ſhedding of *briny tears*, to make room for more *ſalt waters*: for my own part, I found my ſelf not much moved, having lately made my ſelf acquainted with death. By this time I underſtood what had paſt; that is, our Ship had ſprung a leak, and was ready to ſink. Seeing every man in that poſture, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preſervation; Come (ſaid I) Gentlemen, let us not thus cry out, and never lend our aſſiſting hand; let us to the pump, and let every one be imployed in this grand concern. Whereupon we all unanimouſly fell to work: but as it is uſual in ſuch extreams, we were all buſie about doing of nothing: what we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and ſo perfected nothing to our ſafety. Some were ſent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the ſymptoms of death in their countenances; for they all with heſitations and quivering of tongue, with words abruptly or half ſpoken, ſignified to us, that our Ships wound was incurable, that the leak

could not be ſtopt, but that we muſt inevitably periſh within ſome minutes. Theſe words I received as from a Deaths-head, which I never heard ſpeak before; and truly his very looks would have ſufficiently declared what meſſage he was about to deliver, *viz.* ruine and immediate deſtruction. Our inexpreſſible fears bereaved us of the power of counſelling one another; neither did we know what was beſt to be done. Our Maſter commanded our Long-boat to be caſt out, and withal, ordered ſome eight Guns to be fir'd, which methought reſembled ſo many toles of my *Paſſing-bell*, when I was deſign'd to paſs by St. *Sepulchres Church* in a Cart, guarded by fellows whoſe viſages were the true reſemblance of the *Saracens-head* on *Snow-hill*, for terror, horror, and mercileſs proceeding; as to all which, theſe *Cannibals* will outvie that inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man indeavoured to ſhift for himſelf, and I amongſt the reſt (being loath to be drowned alone) leapt ſhort of the boat, and fell into the Sea in *Charontis Cymba;* but neceſſity then forcing me to uſe treble diligence to recover my ſelf, with much difficulty I got into the boat: I was no ſooner there, but another leapt down upon me, and had like to have beaten the reſt of my breath out of my body: which I took kindly enough: for I would have been content to have born them all on my back, nay, boat and all, ſo that I might have eſcaped with life. We were conſtrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed our ſelves to the Sea, driving us we knew not whither. Now were all our hopes *daſhed*, as well as our ſelves, by the waves; for we were almoſt in deſpair of humane help: for we were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at

that time wear a ſmooth brow, but contending with the wind, ſwell'd into prodigious mountains, which every moment threatned our overwhelming. How could we expect ſafety in an open Shaloup, when ſo ſtately a Caſtle of wood, which we but now loſt, could not defend it ſelf, nor preſerve us from the inſolency of the imperious waves? We were many leagues from any ſhore, having neither Compaſs to guide us, nor proviſion to ſuſtain us, being as well ſtarv'd with cold as hunger. Several bags of mony we had with us; but what good could that do us, where there is no exchange? We could neither eat nor drink it; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchaſe our deliverance. Therefore we may juſtly eſteem of money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an uſeleſs burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preſerve us, leſs than a miracle: and as we were all ſinful creatures, eſpecially my ſelf, we could not expect that nature ſhould go out of her ordinary way to ſave us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

Jam jam tacturos ſidera ſumma putes.

Neptune ſure at this time was very *gameſome*, for he play'd at *Tennis* with us poor mortals, making a *wave* his *Racket* to bandie us up and down like *Balls:* Sometimes he ſeem'd ſo proud and *lofty*, being raiſed ſo *high*, as if he had been about to *ſcale Heaven;* which the incenſed Deity perceiving, ſeemed again to throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambition & preſumption: yet I could not ſee, but that the extremity of our condition

pleaded for us, crying aloud for pity and compaſſion. I was now ſilent, committing my ſelf into the hands of providence; yet verily believing, that the inverſion of the old Proverb appertained to me, that being not born to be hang'd, I ſhould be drown'd. Commonly we are not ſo much mov'd with a clamourous and importunate beggar, who hunts after our Alms with open mouth, and makes *Hue* and *Cry* after our Charity (as if we had rob'd him who begs of us) as with the ſilence of impotent and diſeaſed *Lazaro's:* their ſores ſpeak loudeſt to our affections; *Quot vulnera, tot ora;* each wound is a gaping mouth ſtrenuouſly imploring mercy; the ſight whereof, cannot but melt the moſt obdurate ſpectator into a charitable compaſſion. This was our caſe, our miſery was louder than our prayers, and our deplorable condition, certainly was more prevalent then our imperfect devotions. In this moment of death, when we were without the leaſt expectation of any deliverance, the wind chopt about, and drove back one Ship that had over-run us: this was unqueſtionably *Digitus Dei.* This Ship made towards us, and we, what in us lay, towards it: The wind blew hard, and the inſulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, roſe high upon us: ſo that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hats. It was my chance to ſit on the weather ſide; fain would I have exchanged my place, but ſuch complements are uſeleſs in a ſtorm; ſo that I was conſtrained to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. But now began another deſpair; for with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship, nor ſhe us, although ſhe hung on the Lee to retard her courſe. Thus our pregnant hopes

brought forth nothing but wind and water (for the Ship rode on furiouſly before the wind, and we came after in purſuit of her, as ſlowly as if an hedg-hog had been running with a Race-horſe;) ſo that we which before flattered our ſelves with an aſſurance of ſafety, were as much confounded with a certainty of periſhing. In my opinion it is better to have no hopes at all, than be diſappointed in them: doubtleſs it did redouble the puniſhment of *Tantalus*, to touch what he could not taſte. That Mariner, who ſeeing a fatal neceſſity for it, is contented to die in a tempeſt, would be exceedingly troubled to periſh in a Haven, *In Portu perire*. In this very condition were we, having a Ship near us, but could not board her for ſtrefs of weather; ſo that ruine attended us, though all the while we lookt ſafety in the face. Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not ſee which way to row: though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit: for not ſeeing our danger, we underſtood it not; but redoubling our ſtrength, we brake through the waves, and by the aſſiſtance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our courſe truly; and now did we find we were very near her. As ſoon as we toucht her on the Lee-ſide, the Sea-men, with the reſt in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than my ſelf, never regarding their *exil'd Priſoner* (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a Cope, which once had like to have deprived me of my life, but was now the preſerver: which I held faſt, to keep the Boat from ſtaving off. Our Boat was half full of water, and the waves

daſht it ſo violently againſt the Ship-ſide, that every ſuch ſtroke ſtruck me down, ſo that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to eſcape by ſwimming over a large *River*, and coming aſhore, to be drowned in a *waſh-bowle*. At laſt with much difficulty I got aboard too. The Maſter, Merchants, *&c.* having ſav'd their lives (even miraculouſly) one would have thought they ſhould not have been ſo penſive as they were for the loſs of their goods. Thoſe which loſt much took it very heavily; thoſe which loſt leſs, their affliction was greater, having loſt all: I was the moſt glad, joy riding in triumph in my chearful countenance, having loſt nothing, neither could I any thing, but my life. Having eſcapt ſo miraculouſly, it was unchriſtian-like to murmur at any loſs; and as ridiculous, as if a man being reſtored to life, ſhould complain that his winding-ſheet had ſuſtained ſome damage by lying in the grave. The Ship wherein we were, was bound for the *Canaries*, the wind blowing very faire for that coaſt. The ſecond night after our deliverance, about ten a'clock, having ſet our Watch, we laid our ſelves down to reſt, with the thoughts of much ſafety and ſecurity, but it was otherwiſe decreed; for about one a'clock we were forced to uſe all hands *aloft*, a moſt terrible ſtorm beginning to ariſe, and the wind blew ſo furiouſly, that before morning we loſt our Bow-ſprit and Mizon: we durſt not bear the leaſt ſayl, but let the Ship drive whither the winde and waves pleaſed; and before the next night, we could not indure our remaining Maſts ſtanding, but were neceſſitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were tumbled up

and down for four days, and as many nights, contending with the waves in a *Pitcht-battel*, not knowing where we were, till our Ship ſtruck ſo violently againſt a Rock, that the horrid noiſe thereof would have even made a dead man ſtartle ; to which, add the hideous cries of the Seamen, bearing a part with the whiſtling winds and roaring Sea; all which together, ſeemed to me to be the trueſt Repreſentation of the Day of Judgement. The Ship ſtuck faſt ſo long between two Rocks, as that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out ; the only means left us for our ſafety. We all got upon a Rock, and the Morning-ſtar having drawn the Curtain of the night, we found that we were a very little diſtance from the ſhore; getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at laſt eſpied a ſmall houſe, the ſight whereof made us direct our foot-ſteps thither, ſteering our courſe ſolely by the compaſs of our eyes : being come to the houſe, the Maſter thereof ſtood at the door ; we addreſt our ſelves to him in *Engliſh*, but his replications were in *Spaniſh*, which we underſtood not: wherefore I ſpake to him in Latine, in which language he anſwered me, *Tam compte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily. In that tongue I made a ſhift to tell him the ſad Iliades of our misfortunes. This noble *Spaniard* underſtood it better by our looks, than my relations ; which made ſuch a deep impreſſion in his ſoul, that his *gravity* could not forbear the ſhedding of ſome few tears, ſo that one would have thought he ſuffered Shipwrack as well as we. He deſired us to come into his houſe, and refreſh our ſelves : what little meat he had, ſtew'd in a horſe-load of herbs, with ſome pottage onely ſeaſoned by a piece of

Bacon, that had ferv'd for that purpoſe at leaſt a dozen times) he ordered to be ſet before us; being no ways ſparing of his wine, better than any I ever yet could taſte in Taverns; this good man being not acquainted with *daſhings*, *dulcifyings*, &c. Seeing us eat ſo heartily, he cauſed another diſh to be provided, which was compoſed of ſuch variety of creatures, that I thought he had ſerved us in as a *Meſs*, *the firſt Chapter of Geneſis*: This *Ola-podrida* was ſo *cookt*, that the diſtinction of each creature was *fauc'd* out of our knowledge. Having ſatisfied our hungry ſtomachs, he diſmiſt all excepting my ſelf, deſiring me to accept of what kindneſs he could do me, for he confeſt he took much pleaſure in my ſociety and diſcourſe. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer: in ſome few days he told me he was to go to Sea, being Captain of a Veſſel that lay in *Perimbana*, a ſmall Seafaring Town near the place of our Shipwrack; and asking me whether I would go with him to the *Indies* (whither he was bound) I readily conſented, and in ſome few days after we did ſail from thence, to perfect our intended Voyage.

CHAP. LXVII.

From Perimbana, *a ſmall maritime Town on the* Spaniſh *coaſt, he ſets ſail with Captain* Ferdinando Velaſquez *bound to the* Eaſt-Indies; *but by the way meets with three Turkiſh Galleys, and by them is taken, miſerably abuſed, and impriſoned.*

AN hour before day we left the Port, and failed along the coaſt before the wind ; about noon we diſcerned three veſſels, whereupon we gave them chaſe: in leſs than two hours we got up to them, and then we could eaſily perceive that they were Turkiſh Galleys; whereof we were no ſooner aſſured, but we betook ourſelves to flight, making to Land with all ſpeed poſſible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatned us. The *Turks* underſtanding our deſign, preſently hoiſted up all their ſails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us ſo cloſe, & getting within a ſmall Faulcon-ſhot of us, they diſcharged their Ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more ; and ſo battered our Ship beſide, that we were forced to throw a great quantity of our lading over-board. The *Turks* in the mean while loſt no time, but grappled us ; we on the other ſide, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour and undaunted courage depended our lives, or loſs of liberty, with perpetual ſlavery, reſolved to fight it out. With this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execu-

tion; but being over-powred with numbers, we were ſo overpreſt & wearied, that we deſiſted from making any further reſiſtance: For, of 35 men we had at firſt, we had only remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the *Turks* caufed to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a ſign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called *Mocaa*, and received by the Governor and Inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of thefe Pirates. In the company was likewiſe one of the chiefeſt Sacerdotal dignity; and becauſe he had been a little before in Pilgrimage at the Temple of their Prophet *Mahomet* in *Meca*, he was honoured and eſteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan Impoſtor rid in a triumphant Chariot up and down the Town, covered all over with ſilk Tapiſtry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies, beſtowed on the people his benediction as he paſſed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great Prophet for this Victory obtained over us. The Inhabitants hearing that we were Chriſtians taken Captives, flockt about us; and being exceedingly tranſported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that I thought it a vain thing to hope to eſcape alive out of their hands; and all this, becauſe we owned the names of Chriſtians. When I was in *England*, I juſtly was ſentenced to die for my villany, and now here only for the bare profeſſion of Chriſtianity, I muſt not be ſuffered to live. The wicked *Cacis* (as they called him) inſtigated them on to thoſe outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worſe they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they

ſhould receive from *Mahomet* hereaſter. We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph; and as we paſt along, we had our heads waſht with womens Roſe-water, throwne down upon us from Balconies, with other filth, in deriſion and contempt of the name of Chriſtian; wherein every one ſtrived to be moſt forward, being inſtigated thereunto by their Prieſt. My ſufferings then, put me in mind of my former wiſhes, to be as unfortunate *Andronicus*, miſerably afflicted here, that I might eſcape eternal torments hereafter: I received in part the effect of my *quondam* wiſhes, no ways acceptable to my preſent deſires. Having tyred themſelves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were, they clapt us into the Dungeon, where we remained 21 days expoſed to all kind of mifery, having no other proviſion allowed us, than a little Oat-meal or Rice and water, which was diſtributed to us every morning, what ſhould ſerve us for that whole day: for variety ſake, we had ſometimes a ſmall quantity of Peaſe ſoak'd in water.

CHAP. LXVIII.

He is brought forth into the Market-place, and there put to ſale; he is bought by a Jew *(a miſerable avaricious man) and by a ſtratagem he delivers himſelf from that Maſter, is ſold to a* Græcian, *in heart a Chriſtian: the Ship being taken, and his Maſter drowned, he eſcaping to ſhore by ſwimming, is at his own liberty.*

IN the morning the Gaoler repairing to us, found two of our miſerable companions dead, by reaſon of their wounds, which were many, and not lookt into. This made him haſte to the *Guazil* or Judge, to acquaint him of what had hapned; who upon information given, came to the priſon in perſon, attended with Officers and other people: where having cauſed their irons to be ſtruck off, he ordered their bodies to be dragged through the Town, and ſo caſt in the Sea. We that remained were chained altogether, and ſo led out of priſon unto the common place of ſale, to be ſold to him that ſhould give moſt. By reaſon of my ſtrength (which thoſe that lookt on might argue, from the ſtreightneſs and firmneſs of my limbs, being elevated by the Pole above a common or middle ſtature) I was firſt bought by one, whom at the firſt ſight, I could not well tell whether he was Man or Devil; for his complexion was of the ſame colour as the Devil is uſually rendred: to ſay all in ſhort, he was a *Jew*. He carried me home to his houſe, where I no ſooner arrived, but he markt me for his own:

My employment was conſtantly to turn a hand-mill; if I reſted at any time, though ever ſo little, the puniſhment he inflicted on me was, three or four blows on either the belly, or ſoles of my feet; which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence: my diet was ſuch as only ſerved to keep me alive. In general, he uſed me ſo cruelly, that becoming deſperate, I once thought it better reſolutely to cut the thread of my life, than ſpin it out longer in ſo much wretchedneſs and miſery. Revenge too induc'd me to the undertaking of this attempt, as knowing him to be the moſt covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himſelf when he ſhould loſe what he payed for me: but conſidering my ſelf, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend (what I intended not) to kill my ſelf: I made choice of ſuch a time, when I was ſure ſome one or other was ſet to watch me; who perceiving that I was about to deſtroy my ſelf, ruſht in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my Maſter of what he had ſeen; adviſing him withall to ſell me out of hand, otherwiſe he would infallibly be a loſer by me. My Maſter taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, reſolved to put his friends counſel in practiſe; and ſo ſold me to another, who fortunately proved a Greek, that in ſhew was *Mahometan*, but cordially a Chriſtian. Once more was I delivered from miſeries that are hardly to be endured, and was imbarqued with my new Maſter in a Ship bound for the *Eaſt-Indies*. In the courſe that we held, we ſail'd with ſo proſperous a gale, that in a very ſhort time we arrived in view of the Fort of *Diu*; but ſeeing ſeveral veſſels lying before that Fort, firing againſt it in an hoſtile

manner we ſhaped our courſe to *Goa*, where we arrived in ſafety. From hence we ſayled unto the River *Lugor*: juſt as we were entring its Mouth, we ſaw a great *Junk* coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in number, and our Veſſel but ſmall, fell cloſe with our prow on the Larboard-ſide, and then thoſe that were in her, threw in to us great Cramp-irons faſtned unto two long chains, wherewith they grappled us faſt unto them; which they had no ſooner done, but incontinently ſome 70 or 80 *Mahometans* ſtarted out from under the Hatches, that till then had lain lurking there; and pouring out their ſmall-ſhot upon us, clapt us aboard in an inſtant. Thoſe that knew what it was to be a ſlave to the mercileſs *Turks*, leapt into the Sea, whereof I was one: we were not far from land, ſo that it was not long before I got ſafe to ſhore; it was my Maſters misfortune (and truly I think my unhappineſs, for he behaved himſelf to me as to one of his familiar friends) being wounded, and ignorant in ſwimming, to be entomb'd in the deep. There were ſome five or ſix more that eſcapt the danger of their enemies and the Sea, that wading up to the waſte in mud, landed in ſafety; with theſe I hid my ſelf in the next adjacent Wood. There was hardly one of us but received ſome hurt; and being now deveſted of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman ourſelves by weeping, complaining againſt our hard deſtiny, that ſhould in ſo ſhort a time bring us into ſo ſad a diſaſter. In this deſolation we ſpent the remaining tragical part of the day; but conſidering with our ſelves, that the place was mooriſh, and full of venemous creatures, we betook our ſelves to the *Owze*, ſtand-

ing therein up to the middle. The next morning, by break of day, we went along by the River-ſide, until we came to a little Channel, which we durſt not paſs (not knowing its depth) for fear of Lizards, plenty whereof we had ſight of therein; we wandred ſo long to avoid this and the Bogs covered with ruſhes, which environed us about, till that we were forced to reſt our ſelves, being ſo weary and ſo hungry, that we could not go one ſtep farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, ſo that there was only one remaining to bear me company: I now thought my condition worſe than if I had hung at *Tyburn*, ſurrounded with a full Jury of fellow-ſufferers; my companion and I, with tears, ſang the obſequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own diſſolution; Their bodies we covered with a little earth, as well as we could; for we were then ſo feeble, that we could hardly ſtir, nay, nor ſpeak. In this place we reſted ourſelves, intending to bear our friends company to their eternal reſt. Some four hours after this our reſolution, about Sun-ſet, we eſpied a Barque rowing up the River: coming near us we hailed her, and proſtrating our ſelves on the ground, beſeeched thoſe that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to ſee us in that poſture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they ſtopt: our cries for ſuccour reacht their eares, which obtained commiſeration from their hearts; ſo taking us in, they carried us with them to *Lugor*, where about Noon next day we landed. The people are ſcarful black like the Devil, whom they ſuperſtitiouſly worſhip, in the form of a bloody Dragon; They have many Idols amongſt them, which they hold

in great eſteem, as a Ram-goat, a Bat, an Owl, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremonioufly bow or kneel, groveling upon the earth, and throwing duſt on their faces; they offer Rice, Roots, Herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the Witches; theſe devilliſh creatures being both feared and eſteemed by the Savages. The female ſex, againſt the appearance of the new-Moon, aſſemble upon a Mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuouſly defie the Queen of Heaven, who hath this defpight ſhewn her, becaufe they fuppofe her the caufer of their monthly courfes. They are much given to novelties, amongſt which dogs are of very great value with them: Infomuch, that whilſt I was there, I faw ſix ſlaves exchanged for one *European* Cur. They abound with the choiceſt of natures bleſſings, as health, ſtrength, and wealth, but are very inhumane and uncivil; for they delight much to feed on mans fleſh, eating it with more fatisfaction than any other food. Upon my firſt arrival, I did not rightly underſtand their meaning by feeling my fleſh, but when I was informed, that like Butchers, they felt my flank to know how fat I was, they never toucht me afterwards with their fingers, but I fancied my ſelf either boiled or roaſted, and that their hands, my bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchres of their mouths, to be entombed in the gut-rumbling Monument of their bellies: whereas other Anthropophagi content their appetites with the fleſh of their enemies, theſe covet moſt their friends, whom they imbowel with much greedineſs, faying, they can no way better expreſs a true affection, than to incorporate their deareſt friends and

relations into themſelves, as in love before, now in body, uniting two in one (in my opinion) a bloody ſophiſtry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye-witneſs, they have Shambles of men and womens fleſh, joynted and cut into ſeveral pieces fit for dreſſing. It is uſual for ſome, either weary of life, or ſo ſick, they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themſelves to theſe inhumane Butchers, who returning them thanks, diſſect or cut them out into ſmall parcels, and ſo are ſodden and eaten. It is a cuſtom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to ſlaſh their faces in ſeveral places. They adore thoſe two glorious Planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and theevery, and they chuſe to commit any villany rather by day than night, becauſe they ſuppoſe thereby the Moon and Stars will never give teſtimony againſt them. Their heads are long, and their hair curled, ſeeming rather wool than hair: Their ears are very long, being extended by ponderous bawbles they hang there, ſtretching the holes to a great capacity. Both men and women hideouſly ſlaſh their fleſh in ſundry forms; their brows, noſes, cheeks, arms, breaſts, back, belly, thighs and legs, are pinkt, and cut in more admirable (than amiable) manner. They contemn apparel, and indeed, the heat of the Climate will not permit them to wear any; very few have nothing on to cover their ſecrets. Moſt have but one ſtone, the other is forced away in their infancy, that *Venus* may not too much allure them from Martial exploits: wherefore the women take great delight in ſtrangers. One of them ſo ſtrongly beſieged my mo-

deſty, that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontinency: I was diſpleaſed at nothing but the ſight of her; for her fleſh, no Velvet could be ſofter. There are in this place great quantity of Lions, which in dark weather uſe great ſubtility to catch and eat ſome Savages: They again in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs, do train the couragious Lions thither, where they receive deſtruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have ſeen theſe well-bred people defcend in a morning from the Mountains, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wild beaſts, ſerving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their breakfaſt; of which good chear, if I would not participate, I might faſt for them: ſo that my ſqueamiſh ſtomack was forced to give entertainment to that unwelcome gueſt, to keep ſtarving out of doors. The Ship that brought us hither, was now ready to ſet ſail, being bound for *Goa*, the Maſter whereof was a *Portugal*, who underſtood Latine and French very well, of which I was not ignorant: I addreſt my ſelf to him in the French tongue, deſiring him to accept of mine and my Comerades ſervice; which he condeſcended to with much willingneſs. At *Goa* we ſtayed not long, but from thence paſſing towards *Surrat*, a vehement and unexpected ſtorm overtook us, for three days raging inceſſantly, ſo that thoſe which were acquainted with thoſe parts, very much feared an *Hero-cane*, a tempeſt commonly of thirty days continuance, and of ſuch fury, that Ships, Trees, and Houſes periſh unavoidably in it: once in nine years, it ſeems, it

fails not to viſit them. It chanc'd that my Comerade being heedleſs and unexperienc'd in Sea-affairs, was waſht off by a wave into the Sea, and ſo was buried in the large & deep grave of the vaſt Ocean; a ſure treaſury for the reſurrection. The foulneſs of the weather forc'd a *Junk*-man of War, full of deſperate *Malabars*, a bloody and warlike people, in view of us; but the Seas were too lofty for them to board us. After three watches, the Sea changed colour, and was calmer; and by the ſwimming of many ſnakes about our Veſſel, the Sea-men knew we were not far from ſhore, landing ſhortly after ſafely at *Surrat*.

CHAP. LXIX.

From hence he ſet ſail to Swalley-Road, *and ſo from thence coaſted till he arrived at* Delyn *a Town that belongs to the* Malabars: *he gives an account of what he there ſaw and obſerved.*

SOme two hours after we ſet ſail, we were becalmed, having not the leaſt breeze of wind, the weather withal being exceeding hot and ſultry: at length we arrived in *Swalley-Road*, where was riding an Engliſh Veſſel; there we caſt anchor: the Engliſh men came aboard of us, whom our Captain welcomed with the beſt of his entertainment. I could not forbear embracing my dear Country-men, ſhewing them ſo many demonſtrations of joy, that by their looks, they ſeemed to queſtion whether I was in my right wits. Their Maſters-mate calling me aſide, askt me, how I came to be ingaged in this Veſſel? how long ſince I came from *England*? with many other queſtions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him ſuch ſatisfactory anſwers, that he ſeemed very well pleaſed. I gave him a ſummary relation of what I had ſuffer'd, ſince my departure from my own Country; the report whereof, ſeemed to extract much pity from him. In fine, I told him, I had a great deſire to ſee *England* again, and to that end deſired him to make uſe of what intereſt he could, to remove me into their Ship: he promiſed he would; and accordingly giving a Preſent to our Captain, he ſo far pre-

vailed upon him to let me go, and perſwaded the chief of whom he was concerned withal, to entertain me, which they did with much willingneſs. I was ſo like a Sea-man in this ſhort time, that none could diſtinguiſh me from one that received his firſt rocking in a Ship. I carried about me as deep an hoguo of Tarpawlin as the beſt of them, & there was no term of art belonging to any part of the Ship or tackling, but what I underſtood. I could drink water that ſtunk (as if *ſtercus humanum* had been ſteept two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat beef and Pork (that ſtirred as if it had received a ſecond life, and was crawling out of the platter to ſeek out the reſt of his Members) I ſay, I could devour it with as much greedineſs (ſcorning that my appetite ſhould be ever again taxed with any of thoſe Epithets, either nice or ſqueamiſh) as if it had been but nine hours, inſtead of nine Months, in ſalt. And to make me the more compleat, I had forgot to waſh either hands or face, or what the uſe of a comb or ſhirt was, neither did I know how to undreſs my ſelf; or if wet to the skin, to make uſe of any other means than my natural heat to dry my ſelf: I never lookt on a hat or band, but as Prodigies. But to return to my purpoſe, where I left off. In three days time we ſet ſail for *Swalley-Road*, ſteering our courſe from them, all along the coaſt of *India*, *Decan*, and *Malabar*. I knew not whither they intended, neither did I care now, as thinking my ſelf ſafe, being amongſt my friends: on the 20 of *April*, ſeven days from our weighing anchor in *Swalley-Road*, we came to an anchor at *Delyn*, a Town of the *Malabars*: We durſt not land, the people

being ſo treacherous and bloody; yet we ſuffered them to come aboard us in their ſmall Canoos, ſelling us for any trifles, Coco-nuts, Jacks, Green-pepper, Indian-peaſe, Hens, Eggs, and the like. They brought us likewiſe Oranges of ſo pleaſant a taſte, the rind vying with the juice, which ſhall become moſt grateful to the palate: We had likewiſe from them Plantanes, a fruit ſuppoſed by ſome, to be that which *Eve* was tempted withal; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow: the rind or skin will peel off with much facility; they melt in the mouth, giving a moſt delicious taſte and reliſh. Theſe *Malabars* are coal-black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled; about their heads they only tye a ſmall piece of linnen, but about their bodies nothing but a little cloth which covers their ſecrets. Notwithſtanding their cruelty & inhumanity, we man'd out our long-boat, and 15, whereof I was one, went aſhore, carrying ſome Muskets and Swords with us, ſuſpecting the worſt: Landing, they fled from us, but not without ſending good ſtore of poyſoned arrows & darts amongſt us. It is no wonder that theſe people are ſo black, for they live under the ſcorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our Ship, finding it no way ſafe to ſtay here longer; next morning hoiſting ſail, we came to *Canavar*, where we met with people more civil; whereupon we landed; and receiving things from the inhabitants of conſiderable value, for toys and trifles we gave them in lieu, we reſolved to ſtay here a while. The better ſort of theſe people are called *Nairo's*, whoſe heads are cover'd with a low tulipant, & their middles with a party-coloured Plad, reſem-

bling a Scotch Plad: The poorer ſort have nothing but a ſmall vail over their privities, wholly naked elſewhere; which veil or flap the women in courteſie will turn aſide, and ſhew a man their *Pudenda*, by way of gratitude for any courteſie received, as if they would render ſatisfaction with that, which could never receive plenary ſatisfaction it ſelf. They have a ſtrange cuſtom in their Marriages, obſerved among them by the higheſt to the loweſt: who ſo marrieth, is not to have the firſt nights imbraces with his Bride, but is very well contented to beſtow her Maiden-head on the *Bramini*, or Prieſts, who do not always enjoy it, being glutted with ſuch frequent offerings, and therefore will many times ſell them to ſtrangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and with ſhame I muſt confeſs, I did accept it, forgetting thoſe ſacred vows I made in *Newgate*, to live a more pious, ſtrict and ſober life. The Bride that night, was plac'd in one of their Fanes, as is cuſtomary, the Prieſt or *Bramin* coming to her; but inſtead thereof, according to agreement between this Prieſtly Paynim and my ſelf, I went: I wondred to find her ſo low of ſtature, but I did not much matter it then, minding ſomething elſe; which having perſormed, I departed. The next morning I had a great deſire to ſee her, but was amazed to ſee her ſo young, believing it impoſſible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may ſo call her, being but ſeven years of age) could be capable of mans reception at that tender age. Afterwards, I was informed, it was uſual for them to marry ſo ſoon: firſt, being extreamly ſalacious and leacherous, and as fit, nay, as prone to enjoy man at that age, as *Europæans* at

fourteen. Next, they extreamly honour Wedlock, infomuch, that if any of their children die whilſt very young, they will hire ſome Maiden to be married to him, and ſo lie with him the night after his deceaſe. So ſoon as we arrived (which is a cuſtom they uſe to all ſtrangers, of what Country ſoever) we had preſented us choice of many Virgins; our Boat-ſwain chuſing one he fancied for a ſmall price, ſhe guided him to a lodging, where if he would have ſtayed ſo long, ſhe would have performed his domeſtick affairs, as well at board as bed, diſcharging her duty very punctually: but he that undertakes any ſuch thing, muſt be very wary that he be not venereally familiar with any other woman, leſt that ſhe with whom he hath contracted himſelf for ſuch a time, doth recompence his inconſtancy with mortal poyſon. At his departure, her wages muſt be paid to her Parents, who returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and oſtentation. The chiefeſt among them hold it a very great courteſie, if any one will ſave them the labour, pain & trouble, by accepting the Hymeneal rites of his Bride. I ſhould have told the Reader, that the *Bramins* are ſo much reſpected and eſteemed by the commonalty, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-ſpring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner: Bringing the dead corps near to their Fanes or Churches, they conſume it to aſhes, by fire made of ſweet ſmelling wood, unto which they add coſtly perfumes in Aromatick gums and ſpices: If the wife only (for here they will not

hear of Polygamy) caſt not herſelf into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be ſome common proſtitute, having not any thing commendable in her natural diſpoſition; but if ſhe freely commits her felf to the flames, with her husbands carcaſe, ſhe from that noble act (for ſo it is eſteemed of among theſe infidels) derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongſt her furviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this reſolution by their *Bramins*, who perſwade them by ſo doing, they ſhall enjoy variety of perpetual pleaſures, in a place that is never diſturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is baniſht, there being a continual ſpring; neither is there wanting any thing that ſhall raviſh each individual ſenſe. This was .at firſt a ſtratagem invented by ſome long-headed Politician, to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reaſon of their extream leachery and infatiate venery) ſo by that means they were reduced to that good order, as that they tender'd the preſervation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. For my part, I could wiſh the like cuſtom enjoyn'd on all married Engliſh females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the deſtruction of thouſands of well-meaning-Chriſtians, which receive a full ſtop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venemous medicaments adminiſtred by ſome pretended Doctors hand (it may be her Stallion) unto which he is eaſily perſwaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wifes great care and affection for him: or elſe his body is poyſoned by ſucking or drawing in the

contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occaſioned by uſing pluralities for her venereal ſatisfaction, and ſo dies of the new Conſumption.

Or laſtly, by pettiſh and petulant behaviour, ſhe wearieth him of his life, and at laſt is willing to die, that he may be freed, not only from the clamorous noiſe of her tongue, but that the deriſion of his neighbours, and ſcandal that ſhe hath brought upon him, may not reach his ears. That all ſuch might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my diſpoſing) theſe two lines fixt as a Motto to their doors.

A Couchant Cuckold, and a rampant Wife,
Are Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.

CHAP. LXX.

From Delyn *he ſailed to* Zeyloon; *with what he there obſerved.*

THe Iſle of *Zeyloon* is very famous, and not far diſtant from the Point of *India*, called *Cape Comrein*; it abounds with all ſorts of odoriferous and Aromatical Spices; the people are Pagans, not owning a Deity; ſome though have heard of Chriſt, and others of *Mahomet*, but ſuch are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, worſhipping things in monſtrous ſhapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have ſet conſpicuouſly the Idæa of an horrible *Caco-dæmon*, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do reſort; and upon this account, a King of *Zeyloon* coming, once derided this Idol: another time, intending to make a ſecond repetition of his former deriſion, the King was even frighted out of his wits; for not only he, but his attendants all ſaw how this *Dæmon* threatned him for ſo doing, by ſhaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes: from his mouth gaping, iſſued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penitence as amazement, reſolving by his due reſpect and worſhip for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the ſight of this horrid monſtrous repreſentation would have induc'd me into the belief that this was one really. They have in another place a Chappel, in which

they adore the Devil (whom they call *Deumo*) the height whereof is about three yards, and uncovered: the wooden entrance is engraven with helliſh ſhapes; within, their beloved Devil or *Deumo* is enthronized on a brazen Mount: From his head iſſue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigneſs, having ſomewhat a larger circumference than two ſawcers; his noſe flat; a mouth like a portcullice, beautified with four tusks, like Elephants teeth; his hands like claws, and his feet not unlike a Monkeys; beſide him ſtand leſſer *Deumo*'s attending on this grand *Pagod*, ſome whereof are repreſented or pictured devouring ſouls. Every morning the Prieſt waſheth them, not departing till he hath craved their malediction; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by ſhewing his poſteriors, and therefore goes from him retrograde, ſtedfaſtly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis ſtrange that a rational ſoul ſhould be ſo much infatuated, as to adore ſuch a monſtrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, uſe to exchange their wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous *Spaniard*, yet would be very acceptable to other *Europæans*, or elſe to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one wife, ſo are the women allowed more than one husband. However, the woman hath the diſpoſal left her of her children, giving them to him ſhe hath the greateſt affection for; which he receives, not queſtioning his intereſt or right (by generation) unto the infant.

Elſewhere the Fates decreed a Cuckold's lot,
To keep that child another man begot;
And by his joy therein he plainly ſhows,
He thanks the man that pay'd thoſe debts he owes:
But theſe She-Blacks *in juſtice thought it fit,*
That he which got the child, likewiſe keep it:
Therefore both love and cuſtom made it ſo,
On the true Father they the child beſtow:
By which good Law unto each man 'tis known,
That he doth keep no other child but's own.
Were this obſerv'd in England, *I durſt ſwear,*
Some what-d'ye-lacks *would Heirs to Lords appear;*
And half of what ſome own, muſt be conferr'd
On ſuch who have a Fathers name deſerv'd.
Theſe Blacks *do tax our women, for they paint*
The Devil white, and make him ſeem a Saint;
To let them know, they are far greater evils;
For faireſt females oft are fouleſt Devils.

We ſtayed not long here, but having diſpatcht what we came for, we ſailed along the coaſt of *Choromandel*, and landed at Meliapor. The people are much after the ſame complexion of thoſe of *Delyn*, only a little more duskie, and go in a manner naked, too. Here are likewiſe great ſtore of *Bramins*, who are very buſie and induſtrious to inſtruct theſe poor ignorant ſouls in the perfect way to damnation; for which they have the honour and eſtimation of all conferred upon them. We man'd out our long-boat and went aſhore; upon our landing, it was our hap to be eye-witneſſes of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was carried before the combuſtible Pile; his moſt dearly loving wife cloſely following after, attended by her Parents & children; muſick (ſuch as they have,

which I cannot compare to that of the Spheres) playing before, behind, and on each ſide of her. She was dreſt both neatly & ſumptuouſly, to the height of the rudeneſs of their art; her head, neck, and arms (not omitting her noſe, legs, & toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of ſilver, with jewels every where about her diſtributed: She carried flowers in her hands. which ſhe diſpoſed of to thoſe ſhe met. The Prieſts going backwards before her, ſhewed her a magical glaſs, which repreſented to her ſight whatever might be pleaſing to her ſenſual appetite. The *Bramin* all along inculcating to her thoughts, the ſenſe-raviſhing and affable joys ſhe ſhall poſſeſs after her deceaſe; at which this poor deluded ſoul ſmiled, and ſeemed to be much tranſported. We followed them till they came to the fire, which was made of ſweet odoriferous wood. As ſoon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, ſhe voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating her ſelf with the fire and his aſhes: we wondred that the ſtanders-by would permit her thus to deſtroy her ſelf, imagining this raſh action proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expreſſions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of cuſtom. Such as refuſe to burn in this manner, are immediately ſhaven, & are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own iſſue or kindred, looking upon them as ſtrumpets: and indeed many of them are ſo audaciouſly impudent, that upon the leaſt diſtaſte, or not having their luxurious expectations anſwered, nothing more intended or indeavoured than the lives of their

husbands. They are in theſe parts ſo extreamly idolatrous, and ſo over-ſwayed by the Devil, that they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whoſe ſtatue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Charriot, with eight very large wheels overlayed with gold ; the aſcent or ſteps to the charriot are very large & capacious, on which ſit the Prieſts, attended by little young girles, who for devotion ſake, proſtitute themſelves freely to the heat of any libidinous ſpectator; for ſo doing, they are intitled the *Pagodes* children : A very ſtrange zeal in their bewitched or beſotted Parents, to deſtinate the off-ſpring of their bodies, from their non-age, to ſuch an abominable liberty ; for by letting them know the uſe of Man ſo ſoon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies, but alſo inveſt them with the thoughts of perpetual whoring: For, that woman that ſhall admit of more than one to her private imbraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, ſuch is their blind zeal and ſuperſtition, that as the Charriot paſſeth, ſome will voluntarily throw themſelves under the wheels, who are cruſht in pieces by the weight of the Idol and its attendants, ſuffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) Martyrdom.

CHAP. LXXI.

From Zeyloon, *he arrived at* Syam; *and what there he ſaw and obſerved.*

SYam is a Kingdom contiguous to *Pegu*, a part of the *Eaſt-Indies*; And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being fair; yet are tall of ſtature, very ſtrong and valiant, and generally ſo ſtrait, that few are found among them crooked. Formerly they were much given to *Sodomy:* to prevent which, 'twas wiſely ordered, (though ſtrangely) that the males as ſoon as born, ſhould have a bell of gold (and in it a dry'd Adders tongue) put through the prepuce and fleſh. When the deſire of copulation ſtimulates any of them, he preſents himſelf to ſome expert Midwives, who adviſe him to drink *Opium*, or ſome ſuch ſomniferous potion; which having done in their preſence, he falls aſleep; during which interval, they remove the ball, and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unguent, which affords a ſpeedy cure: then is he free to make uſe of ſuch as his fancy leads him to. The young Girls are ſerved in a worſe manner; for as ſoon as born, their *Pudenda* is ſowed up, and only a ſmall *foramen*, or paſſage left, as an *aquaduct:* about eight or nine ſhe is unſtitcht; & it is as great a rarity, to finde a pure Virgin here at ten years old, as to finde a Maid at ſixteen, in moſt places of *France*, or its neighbouring Countreys. And that theſe young leacherous Fry may be capable of that employment they are deſtinated unto, they have potions given them

to drink which have the efficacious power as to diſtend their *muliebria* to ſuch a capacity, as that (if their bells were not withdrawn) their males would finde too eaſie an entrance. The women here (ſtill the more to allure the men from that deteſtable & unnatural act of *Sodomy*) go naked; (as little a novelty in theſe parts, as for *Iriſh* and *Scotch* to waſh their cloaths with their feet, their coats, ſmock and all tuckt up about their middles, though twenty men ſtand by as (deriding) ſpectators): I ſay, they go naked to their middles, where the better ſort are covered with a fine tranſparent Taffata or dainty Lawn, which by a cunning device is ſo made to open, that as they paſs along, the leaſt air diſcovers all, to all mens immodeſt views. Their Prieſt, which they call *Tallapoi*, are ſeeming very zealouſly ſuperſtitious: they ſomewhat incline to Mahometaniſm; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for, though they wear a ſheep-skin with the wool thereon, not ſuffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in ſhew lead a chaſte life, yet I found the contrary; as you ſhall underſtand by what paſt between one of them and my ſelf. I being on ſhore with our Ships crew, I chanc'd to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of *Spaniſh*-wine: As I entred into a Wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of theſe *Tallapoi* or Prieſts, in the habit aforeſaid, with a horn about his neck, reſembling a Sowgelder's, but much leſs; with which, I was told, they, with the ſound thereof, uſed to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy Infidel eſpying me, bleſt himſelf, (as I gueſt by his geſture) & approaching near me, I imagined that he

prayed for me, by the elevation of his eyes and hands: as a requital, I proffered him ſome of my wine; and having taſted thereof, lik'd it ſo well, that by ſigns, I underſtood he deſired his horn full of me: to tell you the truth, I lik'd it ſo well my ſelf, that I had no deſire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities ſo far prevailed, that I granted his requeſt; which having obtained, he made no more ado but drank it off, making but one gulp thereof; a thing contrary to the ſtrictneſs of his profeſſion. After this, he ſeemed to bleſs me, and ſo departed. It was but a little while, before he again preſented himſelf to my view; and beckoning to me, I followed him; coming cloſe up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place, where covertly I eſpy'd three Maidens (as I ſuppoſed) to whom he by ſigns perſwaded me to go. Sitting down amongſt them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withall, and courted me after their amorous faſhion. One of theſe was the handſomeſt that I had ſeen in thoſe parts; though not to be compared, for form of face, with the homelieſt Kitchin-ſtuff-wench in *London*. I dallied with her ſo long, till that luſt conquer'd my fancy; attempting ſomething, and being in a fair way to it, this *Satyr Goat-Devil*, (I can't invent a name bad enough to call him by) preſently falls down upon us; and taking me thus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help my ſelf, that he had like to have performed his buſineſs; and queſtionleſs had effected it, but that the two Maidens ſtanding by (no ways aſhamed at this moſt ſhameful ſight) aſſiſted me, pulling him off. I preſently ſtarted up, & ſeized him; and trip-

ping up his heels, I laid him on his back : having ſo done, I bound him ; then taking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to ſpare him one inch ; and that he might not have any witneſſes left of what was done, I took away his teſticles too. The three young Girles fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them : And fearing my ſelf, that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my Ships-Comerades ; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judged it the ſafeſt way to go aboard ; and ſo we did, with all expedition poſſible.

CHAP. LXXII.

From hence he ſails to Do-Cerne, *ſo called by the* Portugals ; *who* Adam-*like*, *give* (*or, as I may ſay, take too much liberty*) *in impoſing names on all new places, and things. By the* Hollanders, *it is called* Mauritius. *Its general Deſcription.*

DO-*Cerne* or *Mauritius*, is an Iſle ſituate within the torrid Zone, cloſe by the Tropick of *Capricorn* ; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of *America*, and bending towards the *Aſiatick* Seas, from *India* to *Java*. This Iſle aboundeth with what the uſe of man ſhall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous : the circuit of this Iſland is about an hundred miles ; it procreates an healthy and nouriſhing air ; the great quantity of ever-flouriſhing & fragrant trees, doth no leſs lenifie the burning heat, when the Sun enters into *Capricorn*, as helped by the ſweet mollifying breath of the North-weſt winde, when *Sol* again adheres to *Cancer*. Now as the temperature of that body is beſt compoſed, that participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either ſuper-abounding or wanting, begets defect; What then is the temperature of this place, which is bleſt with, & abounds in all, & abortive in none? Water is here very plentiful, drilling it ſelf from the high rocks & trickling down into the valleys, ſpreads it ſelf into various Meanders, till thoſe

ſweet and pleaſant waters diſembogue themſelves into the lap of the ſalt Ocean. There is ſo great a quantity of wood, that we could hardly procure paſſage. But of thoſe many various Trees, we found none ſo beneficial to us, as the *Palmeto*: this Tree is long, ſtreight, & very ſoft, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, ſave at the top, whereon there is a ſoft pith, wherein conſiſts the ſole vegetative of that Tree; which cut out, the *Palmeto* in a very ſhort time expires. Its taſte is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nut; boiled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefeſt commodity that this Tree produceth, is the wine which iſſueth from it, pleaſant, & as nouriſhing as Muskadine or Alligant. Thus we procured ſome thereof; coming where two or three grew together, with an augure we bored ſome ſmall holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled; then with a ſmall cane or quill we ſuckt the wine out of one Tree; then we went to another, and from that to the third: by that time we had drained the laſt, the holes in the two former were full again. This courſe we followed ſo ſmartly, that in leſs than an hour, three of us were ſo drunk (whereof I was none of the ſobereſt) that had not theſe Trees been near the ſhore, for ought I know, by the morning we might have feaſted the wilde beaſts. Divers other Trees there be, ſtrange both in ſhape and nature; one whereof (meerly out of curioſity) I muſt needs taſte, which for half an hour ſo bit or ſtung my tongue, as if I had had my mouth full of Vitriol, or ſpirit of Salt. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not any thing that is good: this Tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as ſoft & penetrable, as new Cheeſe: the form of the

Tree, its uſeleſsneſs, with that hidden ſting it carries in it, together with its ſoftneſs; the laſt of which, invites me to cut theſe lines therein; which my kniſe as eaſily perſormed, as to write a mans name with a ſtick on the ſand. The lines were theſe:

Th'art like a Woman, but thou want'ſt her breath;
Who's fair, but ſruitleſs, and will ſting to death
If taſted: would I could blaſt thee with my curſe,
Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worſe.

There is another Tree, which beareth a cod full of ſharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit, in form of a Doves-egg; crack it, and therein contain'd you ſhall finde a kernel, pleaſant in taſte, but poyſonous in its operation. My ſweet tooth long'd for a taſte, and being very toothſome I did eat ſeveral; but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, & were reſolved in this mutiny, could they have ſound way, to charge my mouth with high treaſon againſt the reſt of my Members; but they were at laſt content only to diſcharge their ſury through the Poſtern of their Microcoſm; which they did ſo ſuriouſly, that I was much aſraid, my guts having ſpent all their ſhot, they would have marcht out aſter. I had (in plain Engliſh) in leſs than ſix hours ſixty ſtools, beſides purging upwards; and had not we had a very skilful Dr. Chyrurgeon of our Ship, I had unavoidably periſht. Nature in this Iſland ſhew'd her prodigality of water and wood, correſponding alſo in every thing elſe a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in. Here ſhe ſeems to boaſt, not only in the variety of ſeather'd creatures, but in the rareneſs of that variety, which

ſhould I run over but briefly, the ſubject is ſo large, that by ſome I cannot but be thought too tedious. However, I ſhall lightly touch thereon. Here, and here only is generated the *Dodo*; for rareneſs of ſhape contending with the *Arabian Phœnix*; her body is round and very fat, the leaſt whereof, commonly weighs above twenty pound: They pleaſe the ſight more than the appetite, for their fleſh is of no nouriſhment, and very offenſive to the ſtomach. By her viſage (darting forth melancholy) ſhe ſeems to be ſenſible of that injury Nature hath done her, in framing ſo great a body, and yet uſeleſs, but to pleaſe the eye; committing its guidance to complemental wings (for ſo I'm forc'd to call them) ſince they are ſo ſmall and impotent, that they only ſerve to prove her an off-ſpring of the winged Tribe. Here are Bats alſo, as large as Goſhawks. There is likewiſe great plenty of Fiſh; among the reſt of more eſpecial note, is the Cow-fiſh; the head thereof not unlike an Elephants, her eyes are ſmall, her body at full growth about three yards long, and one broad; her fins exceeding little, her fleſh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at Land, ſometimes, as in the Sea) doth taſte much like Veal. Some ſay that this Fiſh doth affect, and takes much delight in the ſight of a mans viſage. About this Iſland are flying fiſh, Dolphins, and Sharks. One of our men imprudently ſwimming one day, the weather being very hot, in our ſight a Shark came and bit off his leg, and part of his thigh, and he thereupon ſunk; we made out to ſave him, but before we came, he was drowned. Here are Tortoiſes ſo great, that they will creep with

two mens burdens on their backs; but their pace is ſo ſlow, that they would make but ill Porters, going not above ten yards in two hours, when they make their greateſt ſpeed. The birds here are ſo unaccuſtomed to frights, that I have ſhot five or ſix times amongſt a flock, letting the dead ſtill lie, and not one of the furviving did ſo much as offer to flie. The Goats here have more of the Politician in them; for they ſeldom feed or reſt themſelves, but they ſet out their ſentinels.

CHAP. LXXIII.

Hence he ſailed for Bantam ; *by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have ſuſtained, by aſcending a* burning Mountain.

WEighing Anchor, we ſteer'd our courſe for *Bantam* ; but being much ſtraitned by the way, for want of freſh water, we were compell'd to make up to the firſt Land we deſcry'd. Though the darknefs of the night blinded our eyes from ſuch diſcoveries, yet flames of fire not far diſtant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we caſt Anchor, fearing we might run foul of ſome rock or ſhelf : In the morning we ſaw a large track of Land before us, not knowing what place it ſhould be. Our Captain commanded the Long-boat to be man'd out, to procure water, if any good were there : amongſt the reſt, I went for one ; for I was very greedy to obſerve novelties. Coming on ſhore, and ſeeing this Hill now and then belch out flames, by my perſwaſions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about, to make ſome inquiſition into this *miracle* of Nature. Whereupon we all reſolved unanimouſly to aſcend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came ſo nigh the top, that we heard a moſt hideous noiſe proceeding from the Concave thereof : ſo terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our raſh attempt, and ſtood at a convenient diſtance, judging it the only *medium* of our ſafety. Whilſt we were thus in a *delirium*, not knowing what was the

beſt to be done; the Mountain was inſtantly poſſeſt with an *Ague-fit*, and afterwards vomiting up ſmoak and ſtones into the Air (which afterwards fell down in a ſhower upon our heads) we thought we could not eſcape without a miracle: and whilſt we were all ſtriving which way, with greateſt expedition, we might eſchew the danger, there roſe in the midſt of us ſuch an heap of earth, aſhes, and fire, with ſuch kinde of combuſtible matter, as that we all ſeem'd as ſo many *moveable burning Beacons:* and without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavoured to ſecure himſelf. And although I was the laſt in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me; for my companions making more haſte than good ſpeed, tumbling down the Hill before me, fell ſeveral of them together; which *blocks* lying in my way, obſtructed my paſſage, & ſo ſav'd the breaking of my neck, which otherwiſe would have been inevitable. In this prodigious conflict, moſt of us loſt the hair of our heads, not without receiving ſeveral *batteries* upon the *Out-works* of our bodies. At firſt ſight we were much afraid; but the conſequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a ſhift to crawl down the reſt of the way; and having fixt our unadviſed feet on the bottom of the Mountain, we reſolv'd we would never again pay ſo dearly for our curioſity, but forthwith went in ſearch of ſome Spring, that might ſerve as well to quench our cloathes, as our thirſt. What we ſought for we quickly found; and ſo filling our empty Cask, we made what haſte we could aboard. The Captain and the reſt ſtood amaz'd to ſee us look ſo ghaſtly, and were very impatient to know what was the

matter with us; we told them ſuccinctly what had happened, and what great dangers we underwent: inſtead of pitying us, they only laught at us for being ſuch adventurous fools. Having thus furniſhed our ſelves with what we wanted, we ſet ſail again for *Bantam;* where we ſafely arriv'd in a ſhort time.

CHAP. LXXIV.

Going aſhore to Bantam, *and obſerving the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods upon credit (as it is uſual in thoſe parts) till the ſhip is ready to ſet ſail, he by a ſtratagem turns Merchant too, and cheats a* Banyan, *or* China-*Merchant.*

AS ſoon as we came into the Harbour before *Bantam*, we preſently man'd out our Long-boat and went aſhore, to acquaint the *Preſident* what we were, and by what authority we came thither to Traffick, being impowered by the *Eaſt-India* Company. We were received with much demonſtrations of joy, and nobly feaſted for three dayes together. Here note, that the houſe wherein the *Preſident* dwelleth, is the receptacle for the whole Factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this houſe ſuitable to his dignity; the Factors all in general taking their daily repaſt with the *Preſident*. In a weeks time I learned by obſervation the cuſtom of the Country, and manner or way of Trading, our Merchant taking up Goods daily, and ſending them aboard without giving preſent ſatisfaction; it being ſufficient that he belonged to ſuch a Ship, and therefore muſt pay before he go, otherwiſe the King will arreſt the Ship, compelling him to make reſtitution or payment. One time I met with a *Bannyan*, whom I obſerv'd to have a box full of precious ſtones: I could not ſleep for thinking how I ſhould make

my ſelf a Partner with him. At laſt I hammer'd out this invention: I cloath'd my ſelf in *Indian*-ſilk, according to the cuſtom of the Country; & having ſo done, I diſcoloured my face, & clapt a black patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addreſt my ſelf to this *Bannyan*, who preſently laid open his treaſure to my view. I was not long in chuſing what I eſteem'd as moſt valuable; & demanding of him the price, we agreed he ſhould have either ſo many pieces of Engliſh gold within two dayes, or elſe take his choice of what commodities I had aboard. We made a ſhift to underſtand each others broken expreſſions; and he without the the leaſt ſuſpicion of my treachery, delivered his ſtones into my hands. Taking off my diſguiſe, I went inſtantly aboard, & hid what I had cheated the *Bannyan* of (as I might eaſily do, for the ſmallneſs of its bulk) in the Hold of our Ship, reſolving not to go aſhore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, & the *Bannyan* no where finding me on Land, came aboard of our Ship, where by ſigns he made known to our Captain his errand; that a Merchant belonging to his Ship, had bought commodities of him, & promiſed to pay him on that day. Our Captain reply'd, that he verily believed he was miſtaken (as knowing what commodities the Merchants belonging properly to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he muſt make inquiry elſewhere for ſatisfaction. The *Bannyan* ſtill perſiſted, alleadging he was not miſtaken, and that he was confident if if he might have a ſight of all the men, he could out of them ſelect the concern'd perſon. So wary I was of being diſcovered, that I acquainted not one ſoul with my project:

for had I committed this ſecret to any, (though ever ſo dear a friend) it had been mine no longer; neither could I have promiſed to my ſelf ſafety. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all call'd aloft: which was ſpeedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At laſt he came to me, & there made a ſtand, (which had like to have made my heart ſtart out of my breaſt:) he lookt upon me on this ſide, and on the other ſide; and to ſay truly, on every ſide: and having thorowly eyed me, he ran to our Captain, ſaying, That ſhould be the man (pointing to me) but that he is a *white man*, & hath *two ſees* (*id eſt*) two eyes. Whereupon I was ſtrictly examined: but for all this ſifting, I would not let drop any thing of a confeſſion, that ſhould convict me of guilt; but with lifting up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denyed that ere I ſaw this man, or ever had any dealing with him. I had now forgot what promiſes and vows I made to Heaven, (when in *Newgate*, and ſentenced to be hang'd at *Tyburn*) what a ſerious, pious, and honeſt life I would lead, if I eſcaped that eminent danger the concerns of this life and that to come were then in. Herein I ſee the old Proverb verified:

Quo ſemel eſt imbuta recens ſervabit odorem
Teſta, diu, &c.....

That Cask will ſavour of that liquor ſtill,
With which at firſt the Cask a man did fill.

Or according to that thred-bare expreſſion ſo commonly uſed:

Naturam expellas furca, licet uſque recurret.

Though man ſhould ſtop his nature from its courſe,
It will o'reflow again with greater force.

In ſhort, the *Bannyan*, ſince he could not ſay poſitively I was the man, was diſmiſt, not without a ſolemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general ; and clear'd of the Indictment.

CHAP. LXXV.

The next going aſhore of the Sea-men, this Bannyan (*for the injury was done him*) *cauſed a* Running a Muck, *that is, he inſtigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ſhip. The loſs of ſeveral men thereupon: but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himſelf aboard that time. He afterwards had like to have been killed by a* Creaſe *the* Bannyan *had hired for that purpoſe. His enemies being deſtroyed, he marrieth an* Indian Punce-woman.

THe next day, a great many of our men went aſhore; and going into *China-row*, (a ſtreet ſo called in *Bantam*) to drink Punce and Tea, a great crew of Indians and Chineſes (headed by this *Bannyan*) fell upon them, killing whom they could, (not directing their revenge upon any particular perſon, which they call a *Muck*:) ſo hot and ſharp was this Conflict, that many were killed on both ſides, but more wounded. This accident alarm'd the whole town, but moſt eſpecially the Engliſh there reſident: but at laſt, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune, that I was not then among them, otherwiſe I might have been made a ſacrifice among the reſt of my fellows. But I was fore-warn'd, having been pre-inform'd that ſuch broyls are uſual upon ſuch occaſions; wherefore I kept my ſelf out of harms way for that time.

But not long after, thinking their malice blown over, I went aſhore; and walking with others of our Boats-crew in the ſame *Row*, (where moſt of our men were us'd to reſort, becauſe of the liquor that

was there to be had, and a Whore to boot) a fellow came to me, with this *Bannyan* I cheated, and both of them with *Creaſes*, (a kind of Dagger of about a foot and half long) would have ſtab'd me, had not my friends prevented them, by ſtriking up their heels, and afterwards with their own *Creaſes* ſtab'd them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any diſturbance, going any where without any danger.

Being very hot there, our uſual paſtime was to go up a little ſmall River (joyning to the Town) four or five miles to waſh our ſelves: the trees ſo covered it over like an Arbor, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate it; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refreſht our parched bodies. I never came aſhore, but I drank very immoderately of *Punce*, *Rack*, *Tea*, &c. which was brought up in great China-Jugs holding at leaſt two Quarts: with every ſuch Jug there was brought in a Diſh of Sweetmeats, not of one ſort, but variety, and excellent good, for which we paid a ſhilling Engliſh: and if you call'd for another Jug, you paid no more, unleſs a Diſh uſher'd it in.

One houſe eſpecially I much frequented, for the Indian womans ſake that kept it: for though ſhe was black, or rather tawny, yet ſhe was well-featur'd and well-form'd, having long black hair (when ſhe unty'd the treſſes) hanging down to her legs. She from the firſt ſhewed me as much kindneſs as could be expected from that lump of Barbariſm: and I could diſcerne her inclinations, (in the ſame manner as a man may from beaſts, when they are prone to Generation) but yet it went againſt my ſtomack to yield to her motions. However, ſhe continued her love to me, not letting me pay for anything I

call'd for: and when there was no neceſſity of being aboard, ſhe would in a manner make me lie in her houſe, (which, as their houſes commonly are, had but one ſtory:) the beds they uſe are a kinde of Quilt, hard; for were they ſoft, the hotneſs of the Climate would cauſe them to be very deſtructive to mans body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels ſhe had great quantity, with an houſe richly furniſhed after the Indian faſhion. For this conſideration, I perſwaded myſelf to marry her; and with ſeveral arguments alleaged, I gained ſo much conqueſt over my ſelf, that I could kiſs her without diſgorging myſelf: and by accuſtoming my ſelf to her company, methought I began to take ſome delight in it. By degrees, intereſt ſo over-power'd me, that I reſolv'd to marry her. Thus many (nay moſt) for Money, ſtick not to give themſelves to the Devil. Having one night (lying there) ſeriouſly conſidered of my reſolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell aſleep; but wonder'd when I awaked, to ſee a thing lie by me *all black*, as if ſhe had had a *Mourning ſmock* on. It ſeems ſhe could hold out no longer: I pretended to flee from her; but ſhe held me faſt in her arms, uſing what rhetorick ſhe could to perſwade me to the contrary. I ask'd her what ſhe meant? She told me in a little broken Engliſh ſhe had got, that ſhe would *Money me;* marry me, ſhe meant: I, Money me, ſaid I, that I like well; but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I ask'd her ſeveral queſtions, to which ſhe gave me ſatisfaction; and enjoyn'd her ſeveral things, which ſhe greedily condeſcended to: whereupon I gave her the firſt-fruits of her deſires. But ere I go farther, take ſomething of my Ryming fancie with you.

CHAP. LXXVI.

He deſeants on his Marrying, and lying with an Indian-Black: Gives wholſome Advice to others; and eoneludes for this time.

AT the firſt ſight, her head ſeem'd in a Caſe,
Or that a Vizard-mask *had hid her faee,*
Or that ſhe was ſome Friend *from hell had ſtole,*
Having for Luſt been burnt *there to a* cole.
I eould not tell what this foul thing ſhould be:
A Succubus *it did appear to me;*
A damn'd black *ſoul, that was by heaven ſent,*
To make me of my blacker *crimes repent.*
I ſtartcd from her, being mueh amaz'd:
The more I was afraid, the more I gaz'd.
Then ſhe aroſe, and eaught me in her arm;
Sueh ſoft fleſh ſure intended me no harm.
'Twas time to roar, ſinee that I could not tell,
But that I was encircled *(now) by* Hell.
Stay, ſtay, (ſaid ſhe) I am no helliſh fiend,
I'm fleſh and blood, and am thy loving friend:
If my complexion do not pleaſe thy minde,
Then cloſe thine eyes, yet love: Thus love is blinde.
I underſtood her tongue, and ſtreight did ſwear
That I would baniſh this my cauſleſs fear;
And ſo betook myſelf unto the Rug
On which we lay, and after many a Tug,
I plightcd faith *with this kinde* Infidel;
But what we did, my modeſt tongue won't tell.
I would at any time (might I but ehuſe)
The faireſt White *for this ſame* Black *refuſe.*
But miſehief on't, let me ſhoot *e're ſo right,*
It can't be ſaid that I did hit the White.

Intereſt ſo blinded my reaſon, that I went inſtantly to my Captain, and gave him information of my proceedings, deſiring his conſent in the marrying this Indian, alleadging how advantagious it would be to me. He granted my requeſt, upon my earneſt importunity; and being diſmiſt from his ſervice, we were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an Engliſh Prieſt, ſhe renouncing her Paganiſm. What money was got by my wifes Trade, I laid out in ſuch Commodities the Country afforded, as Callico's, Pepper, Indico, Green-Ginger, *&c.* and ſold them immediately to the Ships lying in the Harbour, doubling what I laid out: ſo that in ſhort time I found my ſtock to increaſe beyond expectation: ſuch ſatisfaction my Black received from me, that ſhe thought ſhe could not do enough to pleaſe me. I was an abſolute Monarch in my family; ſhe and her ſervants willingly condeſcended to be my vaſſals: yet though I thus enjoy'd the prerogative of an husband, yet I did not Lord it too much; which won ſo much upon my wifes affection, and thoſe that were concern'd with her, that as ſoon as I deſired any thing, it was immediately performed, with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancy'd my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of every thing, & not control'd by the fooliſh ſelf-will of an obſtinate woman. I confeſs it was at firſt a great regret to my ſpirit, to lie by a woman ſo contrary to my own complexion: but Cuſtom made her become in proceſs of time as lovely in my eye, as if ſhe had been the compleateſt European beauty. I now again conſidered how he muſt live, that intends to live well; & upon that conſideration, concluded upon this reſolution, Not to neglect my duty to Heaven, my Self, or

Neighbors: for he that fails in any of theſe, falls ſhort in making his life commendable. For our Selves, we need Order; for our Neighbor, Charity; and for the Deity, Reverence and Humility. Theſe three duties are ſo concatenated, that he which liveth orderly, cannot but he acceptable to his Maker and the World. Nothing jars the Worlds harmony more, than men that break their ranks; and nothing renders Man more contemned and hated, than he whoſe actions onely tend to irregularity. One turbulent ſpirit will even diſſentiate the calmeſt Kingdom: ſo did my paſt unruly and diſorderly life ruine my ſelf, as well as many families. I have ſeen an Orthodox Miniſter in his Pulpit with his congregation about him; and ſince revolving in my minde the comelineſs of that well-ordered ſight, I have thought within my ſelf how mad he would appear, that ſhould wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he ſpurns at the Law he liveth under; and ſuch was I, that could not be contain'd within due limits, living like the Drone on others labors; taking no pains, but onely making a humming noiſe in the world, till Juſtice feiz'd me for a wandring, idle, and hurtful vagabond, (an *ignavum pecus*) and ſo had like to thruſt me out of the world, the Hive of induſtrious Bees.

Ill company at firſt miſled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been miſled. For he that giveth himſelf leave to tranſgreſs, he muſt needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to underſtand, that he which firſt diſorders himſelf, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in Muſick would every family be! It ſhall be my own endeavor to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like.

Doubtleſs he that perfometh his duty to Heaven, ſhall finde ſuch a peace within, that ſhall fit him for whatſoever falls. He ſhall not fear himſelf, becauſe he knoweth his courſe is order: he ſhall not fear the World, becauſe he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd it: he ſhall not be afraid of Heaven, for he knoweth he ſhall there finde the favour of a ſervant, nay more, a Son, and be protected againſt the malice of Hell.

I know I ſhall be lookt on no otherwiſe than an Hypocrite; neither will the world believe my reformation real, ſince I have lived ſo notoriouſly and looſly. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he ſhall for a ſhort time be remembred and applauded; whereas if he doth evilly but once, he ſhall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and I care not though the world ſhould flout my innocence, and call me diſſembler: it is no matter if I ſuffer the worſt of cenſorious reproaches, ſo that I get to Heaven at laſt: to the attaining of which, the beſt counſel I can give my ſelf and others is, *Bene vive, ordinabiliter tibi, ſociabiliter Proximo, & humiliter Deo*: Live well, orderly to thy ſelf, ſociably to thy Neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as wholeſome advice, though from an ill liver, which hath been in part diſcovered in the foregoing Diſcourſe; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a Liſt of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commiſſion of the like. For as there is no company ſo favagely bad, but a wiſe man may from it learn ſomething to make himſelf better: ſo there is no Book ſo poorly furniſhed, out of which a man may not gather ſomething for his benefit. Herein I have not minded ſo much words, as the matter; aiming at nothing more then how I might

compleatly limn Vice in her proper ugly ſhape: having done that, I have done what I intended, The reformation of others by my wicked example. For Vice is of ſuch a Toady complexion, ſo ill ſhap'd & deform'd, that ſhe cannot chuſe but teach the ſoul to hate; ſo loathſome when ſhe is ſeen in her own naſty dreſs, that we cannot look upon her but with deteſtation and horrour. Vice was cunning and curiouſly painted when I fell into her ſcabbed embraces; neither could I have ever known her foulneſs and rottenneſs, had I not tried whether her (ſeeming) fairneſs and ſoundneſs were real. Believe me, ſhe is no ways that ſhe appears to be; therefore be not deluded by her: but let my Life be to the Reader, as a friend fal'n into a pit, that gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirably hath Providence diſpoſed of the ways of man, that even the ſight of Vice in others, is like a Warning-arrow ſhot for us to take heed. Vice uſually in her greateſt bravery, publiſheth her ſelf fooliſhly, thinking thereby to procure a Train; and then it is, that the ſecret working of Conſcience makes her turn her weapons againſt her ſelf, and ſtrongly plead for her implacable adverſary Vertue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries; and foul acts keep Vertue from the charms of Vice. An ancient Poet writ well to this purpoſe, thus:

..... Inſuevit Pater optimus hoc me,
Ut fugerem exemplis vitiorum quæq; notando.
Quum me hortaretur parce, frugaliter, atq;
Viverem uti contentus ea, quod mi ipſe paraſſet:
Nonne vides Albi ut male vivat filius? utq;
Barrus inops? Magnum documentum ne patriam rem
Perdere quis vellit. A turpi Meretricis amore

Quum deterreret, Sectani diſſimilis ſis.
..... *Sic me*
Formabat puerum dictis.....

..... Thus my beſt father taught
Me to flee Vice, by noting thoſe were naught.
When he would charge me, Thrive, & ſparing be,
Content with what he had prepar'd for me;
Seeſt not how ill young *Albus* lives? how low
Poor *Barrus?* Sure, a weighty *Item* how
One ſpent his means. And when he meant to ſtrike
A hate to Whores, To *Sectan* be not like.
.....Thus me a childe
He with his precepts faſhion'd.....

There is no better way to correct faults in our ſelves, than by obſerving how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkenneſs, my conſcience would uſually accuſe me, & many times, after conviction, would paſs ſo ſevere a ſentence of condemnation on me, that my own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my Executioners. Conſidering within my ſelf what ſhould be the cauſe of this trouble and ſelf-loathing, I found it proceeded from no other reaſon than the obſervation of others in the like beaſtly condition, & how noiſom it hath rendred them to all. The firſt thing that made me abhor a Cholerick paſſion, and a ſawcy pride in my ſelf, (of which I was too guilty) was the ſeeing how ridiculous and contemptible they rendred thoſe that are infeſted with them. Beſides, thoſe that are thorowly experienc'd in navigation, do as well know the coaſts as the Ocean; as well the ſands, the ſhallows, & the rocks, as the ſecured depth in the moſt dangerleſs channel: ſo I think thoſe that would arrive to as much perfection as they are capable of enjoying

here, muſt as well know bad, that they may abtrude or ſhun it; as the good, that they may embrace it. And this knowledge we can neither have ſo cheap, nor ſo certain, as by ſeeing it in others: for under a Crown you may buy the whole experience of a mans Life, (as of mine) which coſt ſome thouſands; though me no more hundreds than what I borrowed of the world, having of mine own nothing originally. If we could paſs the world without meeting *Vice*, then the knowledge of Vertue onely were ſufficient: but it is impoſſible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a god in this world: for as ſhe ruleth almoſt incontrollably, ſo ſhe aſſumes to her ſelf ubiquity; we cannot go any where, but that ſhe preſents her ſelf to the eye, *&c.* If any be unwittingly caſt thereon, let him obſerve for his own more ſafe direction. He is happy, that makes another mans vices ſteps for him to climb to his eternal reſt by. The wiſe Phyſitians make poyſon medicinable; and even the Mud of the world, by the induſtrious (yet ingrateful) *Hollander*, is turned to an uſeful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightſt here on any thing that is bad, by conſidering the ſorded ſtains, either correct thoſe faults thou haſt, or ſhun thoſe thou mighteſt have. That Mariner which hath Sea-room, can make any wind almoſt ſerve to ſet him forwards in his wiſhed voyage: ſo may a wiſe man take any advantage to ſet himſelf forward to the haven of Vertue. Man, aſſoon as created, had two great ſuiters for his life and ſoul; the one Vertue, and the other Vice: Vertue came in this manner, and thus attended; Truth ran before her naked, yet couragious; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, Care and Vigilance; theſe poorly arrayed, as looking upon it unſeemly to go finer than their

Miſtriſs, who was plainly & meanly clad, yet cleanly, & her countenance ſhew'd ſuch a ſelf-perfection, that ſhe might very well emblem whatſoever Omnipotency could make moſt rare. Modeſt ſhe was, and ſo lovely, that whoſoever lookt on her ſtedfaſtly, could not but inſoul himſelf in her. After her followed Content, enricht with Jewels, and overſpread with Perfumes, carrying with her all the treaſure and maſſie riches of the world. Then came Joy, with all eſſential pleaſures: Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility, Scepters, Thrones, and Crowns Imperial. Laſtly, Glory, whoſe brightneſs was ſuch, (which ſhe ſhook from her Sunny treſſes) that it dazled the eyes of her beholders, ſo that they could never truly deſcribe her. In the rear came Eternity caſting a ring about them, which like a ſtrong Inchantment made them ever the ſame. Vice ſtrove not to be behind-hand with Vertue; wherefore ſhe ſets out too, and in this form: Her precurſor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted houſwife, of a ſmooth, inſinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable: but under her veſtments ſhe was full of ſcabs and loathſome ulcers. Her words ſeem'd exceeding pleaſant, promiſing to all ſhe met whatſoever could be wiſht for, in the behalf of her Miſtreſs Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited: next him, a Conceited fellow, and one that over-ſwayed the Fancie of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed theſe, ſo full, that they were even ready to be choaked with their own fat. After theſe, followed ſome Impoſtors, to perſonate Content, Joy, and Honour, in all their wealth and Royal dignities. Cloſe after theſe, Vice came her ſelf,

ſumptuouſly apparel'd, but yet a naſty ſurfeited ſlut; her breath being ſo infectious that he which kiſs'd her was ſure to periſh. After her followed ſuddenly Guilt, Horror, Shame, Loſs, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and theſe were charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the former. And thus they wooed fond Man, who taken with the ſubtile cozenages of Vice, yielded to lie with her; whereby he had his Nature ſo empoyſoned, that his ſeed was all vitiated and contaminated; and his corruption even to this day is ſtill convey'd to his undone poſterity. It is mans folly, onely to look on the fore-runners of Vertue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, *&c.* but not to conſider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honor, and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outſide, not imagining what ſhe is when ſtript of all her Gauderies.

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion a Kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice; for ſhe will ſoon perſwade you to be an unthrift, to ſell your Inheritance whileſt it is but in Reverſion. But hearken to Vertue's counſel; ſhe will teach you how to husband all things well, ſo as to become a purchaſer of no leſs than Joys eternal.

Fortunes favors oft do fade,
To thoſe that in her arms do ſleep:
Shelter your ſelves in Vertue's ſhade;
She crowneth thoſe that do her reap.
For though darkned, you may ſay,
When Friends fail, and Fortunes frown,
Though Virtue is the roughеſt way,
Yet proves at night a bed of Down.

THus have I given you a ſummary account of my life, from the Non-age to the Meridian of my days. If there be any expreſſions either ſcurrilous or obſcene, my onely deſign was to make Vice appear as ſhe is, foul, ugly, and deformed: and I hope, he that hath ſenſe will grow wiſer by the folly that is prefented him; as Drunkards are often cured by the beaſtlineſs of others that are ſo. The ſubject would not permit to be ſerious, neither would it have been ſuitable to our merry age, being generally of *Tully's* minde, when he ſaid, *Lectionem ſine ulla delectatione negligo*: He hated reading where no pleaſure dwelt.

As the day-light is pureſt, ſo have I endeavored to make my ſlender Wit appear terſe and ſpruce, without the fulſomneſs of wanton language. If I have in any place tranſgreſt the bounds of modeſty by looſe expreſſions, you need not fear to be offended with their unſavoury breath, for I have perfumed it: but if it ſhould chance to ſtink, it is only to drive you from my former inclination and converſation. It is probable I may be a little guilty, being not fully cured of that malady I lately laboured under. For as the breaking out of itch and blains ſhews the body is not clear, ſo foul and unrinſed expreſſions are the parulent exhalations of a corrupted minde, ſtained with the unſeaſonednes of the fleſh.

If any looſe word have dropt from (the Mindes beſt Interpreter) my Pen, I would have the Reader to paſs it over regardleſs, and not like a Toad, only gather up the venom of a Garden; or like a Goldfinder, make it his buſineſs to dive in ſtench and excrements. However, very cautious I was

in offending any modeſt ear, (though ſometimes it could hardly be avoided, the matter in a manner requiring it) becauſe I look upon obſcene expreſſions as the Plague on Paper; and he that comes between the ſheets, is in danger of being infected. I ſhall aſſure you, had I not more reſpected a general good, by diſplaying Vice in general, to put men out of conceit with it, I ſhould not have taken ſo much pains, to be both blam'd and laught at, but ſhould have wrapt up in ſilence my ſhame and infamy. For in truth, this Book may bear a ſimilitude with the *Amphiſbena*, a Serpent headed at either end: one biteth the vicious temper of him that reads it, and the other ſtings him that wrote it. To conclude, I care not though my wickednefs and folly be ſet up as a Monument to make my infamy eternal, ſo that the reading of my Life may be any ways inſtrumental for the reformation of licentious perſons.

FINIS.

WELLCOME LIBRARY INSTITUTE

